HOUGH
PANY
SUBSCRIPTION DEPARTMENT
CAMBRIDGE, MASS.

REFERENCE LIBRARY * HOUGHTON MIFFLIN CO. * BOSTON, MASS.
Archive
Collection

This book may not leave the Offices
and if borrowed must be returned within 7 days

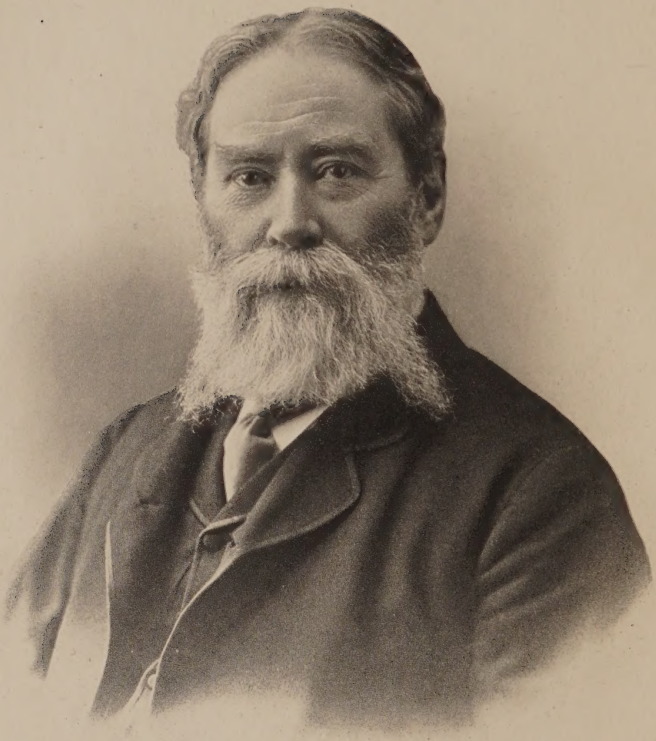
Elmwood Edition

THE COMPLETE WRITINGS OF JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL

WITH PORTRAITS, ILLUSTRATIONS, AND FACSIMILES

IN SIXTEEN VOLUMES

VOLUME VIII



J. M. Lowell.

Mr. Lowell in 1889

LATEST LITERARY ESSAYS

THE OLD ENGLISH DRAMATISTS

BY

JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL

13617

BOSTON AND NEW YORK
HOUGHTON, MIFFLIN AND COMPANY
The Riverside Press, Cambridge

COPYRIGHT 1891 BY MABEL LOWELL BURNETT
COPYRIGHT 1892 BY CHARLES ELIOT NORTON
COPYRIGHT 1904 BY HOUGHTON MIFFLIN AND COMPANY
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

NOTE

THE publication, in a volume, of the following Essays and Addresses is in accordance with the intention of their author. Most of them had been revised by him with this end in view. The only one of them concerning which there is a doubt, whether he would have published it in its present form, is the paper on "Richard III." With this he was not satisfied, and he hesitated in regard to printing it. It has seemed to me of interest enough to warrant its publication.[1]

The Essay on Gray was in large part written more than ten years before it was printed in the "New Princeton Review," in 1886. The Essay on the "Areopagitica" was written at the request of the Grolier Club, of New York, for an introduction to an edition of the work specially printed for the Club. I am indebted to the Club for permission to include it in this volume.

CHARLES ELIOT NORTON.

CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS,
16 NOVEMBER, 1891.

[1] See volume vii. of this Edition.

CONTENTS

GRAY 1
SOME LETTERS OF WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR 51
WALTON 69
MILTON'S "AREOPAGITICA" 113
THE PROGRESS OF THE WORLD 135
THE OLD ENGLISH DRAMATISTS . . . 165
I. INTRODUCTORY 167
II. MARLOWE 197
III. WEBSTER 228
IV. CHAPMAN 253
V. BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER 278
VI. MASSINGER AND FORD 293
GENERAL INDEX 317

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL IN 1889 Frontispiece
From a photograph

THOMAS GRAY 2
From a painting by John G. Eccardt in the National Portrait Gallery

WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR 52
From the painting by William Fisher in the National Gallery, London

ISAAK WALTON 70
From the painting by Jacob Huysman in the National Portrait Gallery

FRANCIS BEAUMONT 166
From the engraving by H. Robinson

JOHN FLETCHER 278
From the painting by Cornelis Janssens van Keulen in the collection of the Earl of Portland

GRAY

Thomas Gray

GRAY

1886

THE eighteenth century, judged by the literature it produced everywhere in Europe outside of Germany and France, is generally counted inferior to that which preceded and to that which followed it. A judgment of especial severity has been passed upon its poetry by critics who lost somewhat of their judicial equipoise in that enthusiasm of the romantic reaction which replaced the goddess of good taste by her of liberty, and crowned the judicial wig with the Phrygian cap. The poetry of the period fell under a general condemnation as altogether wanting in the imaginative quality, and as being rather the conclusions of the understanding put into verse than an attempt to express, however inadequately, the eternal longings and intuitions and experiences of human nature. These find their vent, it was thought, in those vivid flashes of phrase, the instantaneous bolts of passionate conception, whose furrow of splendor across the eyeballs of the mind leaves them momentarily dark to the outward universe, only to quicken their vision of inward and incommunicable

things. There was some truth in this criticism, as there commonly is in the harsh judgments of imperfect sympathy, but it was far from being the whole truth.

If poesy be, as the highest authority has defined it, a divine madness, no English poet and no French one between 1700 and 1800 need have feared a writ *de lunatico inquirendo*. They talk, to be sure, of "sacred rages," but in so decorous a tone that we do not even glance towards the tongs. They invoke fire from heaven in such frozen verse as would have set it at defiance had their prayer been answered. Cowper was really mad at intervals, but his poetry, admirable as it is in its own middle-aged way, is in need of anything rather than of a strait-waistcoat. A certain blight of propriety seems to have fallen on all the verse of that age. The thoughts, wived with words above their own level, are always on their good behavior, and we feel that they would have been happier in the homelier unconstraint of prose. Diction was expected to do for imagination what only imagination could do for it, and the magic which was personal to the magician was supposed to reside in the formula.

Dryden died with his century; and nothing can be more striking than the contrast between him, the last of the ancient line, and the new race which succeeded him. In him, too, there is an

element of prose, an alloy of that good sense so admirable in itself, so incapable of those indiscretions which make the charm of poetry. His power of continuous thinking shows his mind of a different quality from those whose thought comes as lightning, intermittently it may be, but lightning, mysterious, incalculable, the more unexpected that we watch for it, and generated by forces we do not comprehend. Yet Dryden at his best is wonderfully impressive. He reminds one of a boiling spring. There is tumult, concussion, and no little vapor; but there is force, there is abundance, there is reverberation, and we feel that elemental fire is at work, though it be of the earth earthy. But what strikes us most in him, considered intellectually, is his modernness. Only twenty-three years younger than Milton, he belongs to another world. Milton is in many respects an ancient. Wordsworth says of him that

> "His soul was like a star and dwelt apart."

But I should rather be inclined to say that it was his mind that was alienated from the present. Intensely and even vehemently engaged in the question of the day, his politics were abstract and theoretic, and a quotation from Sophocles has as much weight with him as a constitutional precedent. His intellectual sympathies were Greek. His language even has caught the ac-

cent of the ancient world. When he makes our English search her coffers round, it is not for any home-made ornaments, and his commentators are fain to unravel some of his syntax by the help of the Greek or Latin grammar.

Dryden knew Latin literature very well, but that innate scepticism of his mind, which made him an admirable critic, would not allow him to be subjugated by antiquity. His æsthetical training was essentially French; and if this sometimes had an ill effect on his poetry, it was greatly to the advantage of his prose, wherein ease and dignity are combined in that happy congruity of proportion which we call *style*, and the scholar's fulness of mind is mercifully tempered by the man of the world's dread of being too fiercely in earnest. It is a gentlemanlike style, thoroughbred in every fibre. As it was without example, so, I think, it has remained without a parallel in English. Swift has the ease, but lacks the lift; and Burke, who plainly formed himself on Dryden, has matched him in splendor, but has not caught his artistic skill in gradation, nor that perfection of tone which can be eloquent without being declamatory.

When I try to penetrate the secret of Dryden's manner, I seem to discover that the new quality in it is a certain air of good society, an urbanity, in the original meaning of the word. By this I mean that his turn of thought (I am

speaking of his maturer works) is that of the capital, of the great world, as it is somewhat presumptuously called, and that his diction is, in consequence, more conversational than that which had been traditional with any of the more considerable poets who had preceded him. It is hard to justify a general impression by conclusive examples. Two instances will serve to point my meaning, if not wholly to justify my generalization. His ode on the death of Mrs. Killigrew begins thus,

> "Thou youngest virgin-daughter of the skies,
> Made in *the last promotion* of the blest."

And in his translation of the third book of the "Æneid," he describes Achæmenides, the Greek rescued by the Trojans from the island of the Cyclops, as "bolting" from the woods.

Dryden, in making verse the vehicle of good sense and argument rather than of passion and intuition, affords but an indication of the tendency of the time in which he lived,—a tendency quickened by the influence which could not fail to be exerted by his really splendid powers as a poet, especially by the copious felicity of his language and his fine instinct for the energies and harmonies of rhythm. But the fact that a great deal of his work was job-work, that most of it was done in a hurry, led him often to fill up a gap with the first sonorous epithet that came to hand, and his indolence was thus partly

to blame for that poetic diction which brought poetry to a deadlock in the next century. Dryden knew very well that sound makes part of the sense and a large part of the sentiment of a verse, and, where he is in the vein, few poets have known better than he how to conjure with vowels, or to beguile the mind into acquiescence through the ear. Addison said truly, though in verses whose see-saw cadence and lack of musical instinct would have vexed the master's ear,

> "Great Dryden next, whose tuneful Muse affords
> The sweetest numbers and the fittest words."

But Dryden never made the discovery that ten syllables arranged in a proper accentual order were all that was needful to make a ten-syllable verse. He is *great* Dryden, after all, and between him and Wordsworth there was no poet with enough energy of imagination to deserve that epithet. But he had taught the trick of cadences that made the manufacture of verses more easy, and he had brought the language of poetry nearer, not to the language of real life as Wordsworth understood it, that is, to the speech of the people, but to the language of the educated and polite. He himself tells us at the end of the "Religio Laici,"

> "And this unpolished, rugged verse I chose
> As fittest for discourse, and nearest prose."

Unpolished and rugged the verse certainly was

not, nor in his hands could ever be. It is the *thought* that has an irresistible attraction for prosaic phrase, and coalesces with it in a stubborn precipitate which will not become ductile to the poetic form.

Dryden perfected the English rhymed heroic verse by giving it a variety of cadence and pomp of movement which it had never had before. Pope's epigrammatic cast of thought led him to spend his skill on bringing to a nicer adjustment the balance of the couplet, in which he succeeded only too wearisomely well. Between them they reduced versification in their favorite measure to the precision of a mechanical art, and then came the mob of gentlemen who wrote with ease. Through the whole eighteenth century the artificial school of poetry reigned by a kind of undivine right over a public which admired — and yawned. This public seems to have listened to its poets as it did to its preachers, satisfied that all was orthodox if only they heard the same thing over again every time, and believing the pentameter couplet a part of the British Constitution. And yet it is to the credit of that age to have kept alive the wholesome tradition that Writing, whether in prose or verse, *was* an Art that required training, at least, if nothing more, in those who assumed to practise it.

Burke thought it impossible to draw an indictment against a whole people, and the remark

is equally just if we apply it to a century. It is true that with the eighteenth a season of common sense set in with uncommon severity, and such a season acts like a drought upon the springs of poesy. To be sure, an unsentimental person might say that the world can get on much better without the finest verses that ever were written than without common sense, and I am willing to admit that the question is a debatable one, and to compromise upon *un*common sense whenever it is to be had. Let us admit that the eighteenth century was, on the whole, prosaic, yet it may have been a pretty fair one as centuries go. "'T is hard to find a whole age to imitate, or what century to propose for example," says wise Sir Thomas Browne. Every age is as good as the people who live in it choose or can contrive to make it, and, if good enough for them, perhaps we, who had no hand in the making of it, can complain of it only so far as it had a hand in the making of us. Perhaps even our own age, with its marvels of applied science that have made the world more prosily comfortable, will loom less gigantic than now through the prospective of the future. Perhaps it will even be found that the telephone, of which we are so proud, cannot carry human speech so far as Homer and Plato have contrived to carry it with their simpler appliances.

As one grows older, one finds more points

of half-reluctant sympathy with that undyspeptic and rather worldly period, much in the same way as one grows to find a keener savor in Horace and Montaigne. In the first three quarters of it, at least, there was a cheerfulness and contentment with things as they were, which is no unsound philosophy for the mass of mankind, and which has been impossible since the first French Revolution. For our own War of Independence, though it gave the first impulse to that awful riot of human nature turned loose among first principles, was but the reassertion of established precedents and traditions, and essentially conservative in its aim, however deflected in its course. It is true that, to a certain extent, the theories of the French doctrinaires gave a tinge to the rhetoric of our patriots, but it is equally true that they did not perceptibly affect the conclusions of our Constitution-makers. Nor had those doctrinaires themselves any suspicion of the explosive mixture that can be made by the conjunction of abstract theory with brutal human instinct. Before 1789 there was a delightful period of universal confidence, during which a belief in the perfectibility of man was insensibly merging into a conviction that he could be perfected by some formula of words, just as a man is knighted. He kneels down a simple man like ourselves, is told to rise up a Perfect Being, and rises accordingly. It

certainly was a comfortable time. If there was discontent, it was in the individual, and not in the air; sporadic, not epidemic. The discomfort of Cowper was not concerning this world but the world to come. Men sate as roomily in their consciences as in the broad-bottomed chairs which suggest such solidity of repose. Responsibility for the Universe had not yet been invented. A few solitary persons saw a swarm of ominous question-marks wherever they turned their eyes; but sensible people pronounced them the mere *muscae volitantes* of indigestion which an honest dose of rhubarb would disperse. Men read Rousseau for amusement, and never dreamed that those flowers of rhetoric were ripening the seed of the guillotine. Post and telegraph were not so importunate as now. People were not compelled to know what all the fools in the world were saying or doing yesterday. It is impossible to conceive of a man's enjoying now the unconcerned seclusion of White at Selborne, who, a century ago, recorded the important fact that "the old tortoise at Lewes in Sussex awakened and came forth out of his dormitory," but does not seem to have heard of Burgoyne's surrender, the news of which ought to have reached him about the time he was writing. It may argue pusillanimity, but I can hardly help envying the remorseless indifference of such men to the burning questions

of the hour, at the first alarm of which we are all expected to run with our buckets, or it may be with our can of kerosene, snatched by mistake in the hurry and confusion. They devoted themselves to leisure with as much assiduity as we employ to render it impossible. The art of being elegantly and strenuously idle is lost. There was no hurry then, and armies still went into winter quarters punctually as musquashes. Certainly manners occupied more time and were allowed more space. Whenever one sees a picture of that age, with its broad skirts, its rapiers standing out almost at a right angle, and demanding a wide periphery to turn about, one has a feeling of spaciousness that suggests mental as well as bodily elbow-room. Now all the ologies follow us to our burrows in our newspaper, and crowd upon us with the pertinacious benevolence of subscription-books. Even the right of sanctuary is denied. The horns of the altar, which we fain would grasp, have become those of a dilemma in the attempt to combine science with theology.

This, no doubt, is the view of a special mood, but it is a mood that grows upon us the longer we have stood upon our lees. Enough if we feel a faint thrill or reminiscence of ferment in the spring, as old wine is said to do when the grapes are in blossom. Then we are sure that we are neither dead nor turned to vinegar, and

repeat softly to ourselves, in Dryden's delightful paraphrase of Horace:

"Happy the man, and happy he alone,
He who can call to-day his own;
He who, secure within, can say,
'To-morrow, do thy worst, for I have lived to-day;
Be fair or foul, or rain or shine,
The joys I have possessed in spite of Fate are mine;
Not heaven itself upon the past has power,
But what has been, has been, and I have had my hour.'"

One has a notion that in those old times the days were longer than now; that a man called to-day his own by a securer title, and held his hours with a sense of divine right now obsolete. It is an absurd fancy, I know, and would be sent to the right-about by the first physicist or historian you happened to meet. But one thing I am sure of, that the private person was of more importance both to himself and others then than now, and that self-consciousness was, accordingly, a vast deal more comfortable because it had less need of conscious self-assertion.

But the Past always has the advantage of us in the secret it has learned of holding its tongue, which may perhaps account in part for its reputed wisdom. Whatever the eighteenth century was, there was a great deal of stout fighting and work done in it, both physical and intellectual, and we owe it a great debt. Its very inefficacy for the higher reaches of poetry, its

very good breeding that made it shy of the raised voice and flushed features of enthusiasm, enabled it to give us the model of a domestic and drawing-room prose as distinguished from that of the pulpit, the forum, or the closet. In Germany it gave us Lessing and that half century of Goethe which made him what he was. In France it gave us Voltaire, who, if he used ridicule too often for the satisfaction of personal spite, employed it also for sixty years in the service of truth and justice, and to him more than to any other one man we owe it that we can now think and speak as we choose. Contemptible he may have been in more ways than one, but at any rate we owe him that, and it is surely something. In what is called the elegant literature of our own tongue (to speak only of the most eminent), it gave us Addison and Steele, who together made a man of genius; Pope, whose vivid genius almost persuaded wit to renounce its proper nature and become poetry; Thomson, who sought inspiration in Nature, though in her least imaginative side;[1] Fielding, still in some respects our greatest

[1] That Thomson was a man of true poetic sensibility is shown, I think, more agreeably in *The Castle of Indolence* than in *The Seasons*. In these, when he buckles the buskins of Milton on the feet of his natural *sermo pedestris*, the effect too often suggests the unwieldy gait of a dismounted trooper in his jack-boots.

novelist; Richardson, the only author who ever made long-windedness seem a benefaction; Sterne, the most subtle humorist since Shakespeare; Goldsmith, in whom the sweet humanity of Chaucer finds its nearest parallel; Cowper, the poet of Nature in her more domestic and familiar moods; Johnson, whose brawny rectitude of mind more than atones for coarseness of fibre. Toward the middle of the century, also, two books were published which made an epoch in æsthetics, Dodsley's "Old Plays" (1744) and Percy's "Ballads" (1765). These gave the first impulse to the romantic reaction against a miscalled classicism, and were the seed of the literary renaissance.

The temper of the times and the comfortable conditions on which life was held by the educated class were sure to produce a large crop of dilettantism, of delight in art and the things belonging to it as an elegant occupation of the mind without taxing its faculties too severely. If the dilettante in his eagerness to escape ennui sometimes become a bore himself, especially to the professional artist, he is not without his use in keeping alive the traditions of good taste and transmitting the counsels of experience. In proportion as his critical faculty grows sensitive, he becomes incapable of production himself. For indeed his eye is too often trained rather to detect faults than excellences, and he

can tell you where and how a thing differs for the worse from established precedent, but not where it differs for the better. This habit of mind would make him distrustful of himself and sterile in original production, for his consciousness of how much can be said against whatever is done and even well done reacts upon him and makes him timid. It is the rarest thing to find genius and dilettantism united in the same person (as for a time they were in Goethe), for genius implies always a certain fanaticism of temperament, which, if sometimes it seem fitful, is yet capable of intense energy on occasion, while the main characteristic of the dilettante is that sort of impartiality which springs from inertia of mind, admirable for observation, incapable of turning it to practical account. Yet we have, I think, an example of this rare combination of qualities in Gray, and it accounts both for the kind of excellence to which he attained, and for the way in which he disappointed expectation, his own, I suspect, first of all. He is especially interesting as an artist in words and phrases, a literary type far less common among writers of English, than it is in France or Italy, where perhaps the traditions of Latin culture were never wholly lost, or, even if they were, continued to be operative by inheritance through the form they had impressed upon the mind. Born in 1716, he died in his fifty-fifth year,

leaving behind him hardly fourteen hundred verses. Dante was one year older, Shakespeare three years younger when he died. It seems a slender monument, yet it has endured and is likely to endure, so close-grained is the material and so perfect the workmanship. When so many have written too much, we shall the more readily pardon the rare man who has written too little or just enough.

The incidents of Gray's life are few and unimportant. Educated at Eton and diseducated, as he seemed to think, at Cambridge, in his twenty-third year he was invited by Horace Walpole to be his companion in a journey to Italy. At the end of two years they quarrelled, and Gray returned to England. Dr. Johnson has explained the causes of this rupture, with his usual sturdy good sense and knowledge of human nature: "Mr. Walpole," he says, "is now content to have it told that it was by his fault. If we look, however, without prejudice on the world, we shall find that men whose consciousness of their own merit sets them above the compliances of servility, are apt enough in their association with superiors to watch their own dignity with troublesome and punctilious jealousy, and in the fervor of independence to exact that attention which they refuse to pay." Johnson was obeying Sidney's prescription of looking into his own heart when he wrote that.

Walpole's explanation is of the same purport: "I was young, too fond of my own diversion; nay, I do not doubt too much intoxicated by indulgence, vanity, and the insolences of my situation as a Prime Minister's son. . . . I treated him insolently. . . . Forgive me if I say that his temper was not conciliating." They were reconciled a few years later and continued courteously friendly till Gray's death. A meaner explanation of their quarrel has been given by gossip; that a letter which Gray had written home was opened and read by Walpole, who found in it something not to his own advantage. But the reconciliation sufficiently refutes this, for if Gray could have consented to overlook the baseness, Walpole could never have forgiven its detection.

Gray was a conscientious traveller, as the notes he has left behind him prove. One of these, on the Borghese Gallery at Rome, is so characteristic as to be worth citing: "Several [Madonnas] of Rafael, Titian, Andrea del Sarto, etc., but in none of them all that heavenly grace and beauty that Guido gave, and that Carlo Maratt has so well imitated in subjects of this nature." This points to an admission which those who admire Gray, as I do, are forced to make, sooner or later, that there was a tint of effeminacy in his nature. That he should have admired Norse poetry, Ossian, and the Scottish

ballads is not inconsistent with this, but may be explained by what is called the attraction of opposites, which means merely that we are wont to overvalue qualities or aptitudes which we feel to be wanting in ourselves. Moreover these anti-classical yearnings of Gray began after he had ceased producing, and it was not unnatural that he should admire men who did without thinking what he could not do by taking thought. Elegance, sweetness, pathos, or even majesty he could achieve, but never that force which vibrates in every verse of larger-moulded men.

Bonstetten tells us that "every sensation in Gray was passionate," but I very much doubt whether he was capable of that sustained passion of the mind which is fed by a prevailing imagination acting on the consciousness of great powers. That was something he could never feel, though he knew what it meant by his observation of others, and longed to feel it. In him imagination was passive; it could divine and select, but not create. Bonstetten, after seeing the best society in Europe on equal terms, also tells us that Gray was the most finished gentleman he had ever seen. Is it over-fine to see something ominous in that word *finished?* It seems to imply limitations; to imply a consciousness that sees everything between it and the goal rather than the goal itself, that undermines enthusiasm through the haunting doubt

of being undermined. We cannot help feeling in the poetry of Gray that it too is finished, perhaps I should rather say limited, as the greatest things never are, as it is one of their merits that they never can be. They suggest more than they bestow, and enlarge our apprehension beyond their own boundaries. Gray shuts us in his own contentment like a cathedral close or college quadrangle. He is all the more interesting, perhaps, that he was a true child of his century, in which decorum was religion. He could not, as Dryden calls it in his generous way, give his soul a loose, although he would. He is of the eagle brood, but unfledged. His eye shares the æther which shall never be cloven by his wing.

But it is one of the schoolboy blunders in criticism to deny one kind of perfection because it is not another. Gray, more than any of our poets, has shown what a depth of sentiment, how much pleasurable emotion, mere words are capable of stirring through the magic of association, and of artful arrangement in conjunction with agreeable and familiar images. For Gray is pictorial in the highest sense of the term, much more than imaginative. Some passages in his letters give us a hint that he might have been. For example, he asks his friend Stonehewer, in 1760, " Did you never observe (*while rocking winds are piping loud*) that pause as the

gust is re-collecting itself?" But in his verse there is none of that intuitive phrase where the imagination at a touch precipitates thought, feeling, and image in an imperishable crystal. He knew imagination when he saw it; no man better; he could have scientifically defined it; but it would not root in the artificial soil of his own garden, though he transplanted a bit now and then. Here is an instance: Dryden in his "Annus Mirabilis," hinting that Louis XIV. would fain have joined Holland against England, if he dared, says:

> "And threatening France, placed like a painted Jove,
> Held idle thunder in his lifted hand."

Gray felt how fine this was, and makes his Agrippina say that it was she

> "That armed
> This painted Jove and taught his novice hand
> To aim the forked bolt, while he stood trembling,
> Scared at the sound and dazzled with its brightness."

Pretty well, one would say, for a "*painted* Jove"! The imagination is sometimes *super grammaticam*, like the Emperor Sigismund, but it is coherent by the very law of its being.[1]

Gray brought home from France and Italy a

[1] It is always interesting to trace the germs of lucky phrases. Dryden was familiar with the works of Beaumont and Fletcher, and it may be suspected that this noble image was suggested by a verse in *The Double Marriage* — "Thou wovén Worthy in a piece of arras."

familiar knowledge of their languages, and that enlarged culture of the eye which is one of the insensible, as it is one of the greatest gains of travel. The adventures he details in his letters are generally such as occur to all the world, but there is a passage in one of them in which he describes a scene at Rheims in 1739, so curious and so characteristic of the time as to be worth citing:

"The other evening we happened to be got together in a company of eighteen people, men and women of the best fashion here, at a garden in the town to walk; when one of the ladies bethought herself of asking, 'Why should not we sup here?' Immediately the cloth was laid by the side of a fountain under the trees, and a very elegant supper served up; after which another said, 'Come, let us sing,' and directly began herself; from singing we insensibly fell to dancing and singing in a round, when somebody mentioned the violins, and immediately a company of them was ordered. Minuets were begun in the open air, and then came country dances which held till four o'clock in the morning, at which hour the gayest lady there proposed that such as were weary should get into their coaches, and the rest . . . should dance before them with the music in the van; and in this manner we paraded through the principal streets of the city and waked everybody in it."

This recalls the garden of Boccaccio, and if it be hard to fancy the "melancholy Gray" leading off such a jig of Comus, it is almost harder to conceive that this was only fifty years before the French Revolution. And yet it was precisely this gay *insouciance*, this forgetfulness that the world existed for any but a single class in it, and this carelessness of the comfort of others that made the catastrophe possible.

Immediately on his return he went back to Cambridge, where he spent (with occasional absences) the rest of his days, first at Peter House and then at Pembroke College. In 1768, three years before his death, he was appointed professor of Modern Literature and Languages, but he never performed any of its functions except that of receiving the salary — "so did the Muse defend her son." Johnson describes him as "always designing lectures, but never reading them; uneasy at his neglect of duty and appeasing his uneasiness with designs of reformation and with a resolution, which he believed himself to have made, of resigning the office, if he found himself unable to discharge it." This is excellently well divined, for nobody knew better than Johnson what a master of casuistry is indolence, but I find no trace of any such feeling in Gray's correspondence. After the easy-going fashion of his day he was more likely to consider his salary as another form of pension.

The first poem of Gray that was printed was the "Ode on the Distant Prospect of Eton College," and this when he was already thirty-one. The "Elegy" followed in 1750, the other lesser odes in 1753, the "Progress of Poesy" and the "Bard" in 1757. Collins had preceded him in this latter species of composition, a man of more original imagination and more fervent nature, but inferior in artistic instinct. Mason gives a droll reason for the success of the "Elegy": "It spread at first on account of the affecting and pensive cast of the subject — just like Hervey's 'Meditations on the Tombs.'" What Walpole called Gray's flowering period ended with his fortieth year. From that time forward he wrote no more. Twelve years later, it is true, he writes to Walpole: "What has one to do, when turned of fifty, but really to think of finishing? . . . However, I will be candid . . . and avow to you that, till fourscore and ten, whenever the humor takes me, I will write because I like it, and because I like myself better when I do so. If I do not write much it is because I cannot."

Chaucer was growing plumper over his "Canterbury Tales," and the "Divina Commedia" was still making Dante leaner, when both those poets were "turned of fifty." Had Milton pleaded the same discharge, we should not have had "Paradise Lost" and "Samson Agonistes."

No doubt Gray could have written more "if he had set himself doggedly about it," as Johnson had recommended in such cases, but he never did, and I suspect that it was this neglect rather than that of his lectures that irked him. The words "*because I like myself better when I do*" seem to point in that direction. Bonstetten, who knew him a year later than the date of this letter, says: "The poetical genius of Gray was so extinguished in the gloomy residence of Cambridge that the recollection of his poems was hateful to him. He never permitted me to speak to him about them. When I quoted some of his verses to him, he held his tongue like an obstinate child. I said to him sometimes, 'Will you not answer me, then?' but no word came from his lips. I saw him every evening from five o'clock till midnight. We read Shakespeare, whom he adored, Dryden, Pope, Milton, etc., and our conversations, like those of friendship, knew no end. I told Gray about my life and my country, but all his own life was shut from me. Never did he speak of himself. There was in Gray between the present and the past an impassable abyss. When I would have approached it, gloomy clouds began to cover it. I believe that Gray had never loved; this was the key to the riddle."

One cannot help wishing that Bonstetten had Boswellized some of these endless conversations,

for the talk of Gray was, on the testimony of all who heard it, admirable for fulness of knowledge, point, and originality of thought. Sainte-Beuve, commenting on the words of Bonstetten, says, with his usual quick insight and graceful cleverness: "Je ne sais si Bonstetten avait deviné juste et si le secret de la mélancolie de Gray était dans ce manque d'amour ; je le chercherais plutôt dans la stérilité d'un talent poétique si distingué, si rare, mais si avare. Oh ! comme je le comprends mieux, dans ce sens-là, le silence obstiné et boudeur des poëtes profonds, arrivés à un certain âge et taris, cette rancune encore aimante envers ce qu'on a tant aimé et qui ne reviendra plus, cette douleur d'une âme orphéline de poésie et qui ne veut pas être consolée !"

But Sainte-Beuve was thinking rather of the author of a certain volume of French poetry published under the pseudonym of Joseph Delorme than of Gray. Gray had been a successful poet, if ever there was one, for he had pleased both the few and the many. There is a great difference between I could if I would and I would if I could in their effect on the mind. Sainte-Beuve is perhaps partly right, but it may be fairly surmised that the remorse for intellectual indolence should have had some share in making Gray unwilling to recall the time when he was better employed than in filling in

coats-of-arms on the margin of Dugdale and correcting the Latin of Linnæus. I suspect that his botany, his heraldry, and his weather-calendars were mere expedients to make himself believe he was doing something, and that he might have an excuse ready when conscience reproached him with *not* doing something he could do better. He speaks of "his natural indolence and indisposition to act," in a letter to Wharton. Temple tells us that he wished rather to be looked on as a gentleman than as a man of letters, and this may have been partly true at a time when authorship was still lodged in Grub Street and in many cases deserved no better. Gray had the admirable art of making himself respected by beginning first himself. He always treated Thomas Gray with the distinguished consideration he deserved. Perhaps neither Bonstetten nor Sainte-Beuve was precisely the man to understand the more than English reserve of Gray, the reserve of a man as proud as he was sensitive. And Gray's pride was not, as it sometimes is, allied to vanity; it was personal rather than social, if I may attempt a distinction which I feel but can hardly define. After he became famous, one of the several Lords Gray claimed kindred with him, perhaps I should say was willing that *he* should claim it, on the ground of a similarity of arms. Gray preferred his own private distinction, and would not admit their

lordships to any partnership in it. Michael Angelo, who fancied himself a proud man, was in haste to believe a purely imaginary pedigree that derived him from the Counts of Canossa.

That I am right in saying that Gray's melancholy was in part remorse at (if I may not say the waste) the abeyance of his powers, may be read between the lines (I think) in more than one of his letters. His constant endeavor was to occupy himself in whatever would save him from the reflection of how he might occupy himself better. "To find one's self business," he says, "(I am persuaded), is the great art of life. . . . Some spirit, some genius (more than common) is required to teach a man how to employ himself." And elsewhere, "to be employed is to be happy," which was a saying he borrowed of Swift, another self-dissatisfied man. Bonstetten says in French that "his mind was gay and his character melancholy." In German he substitutes "soul" for "character." He was cheerful, that is, in any company but his own, and this, it may be guessed, because faculties were called into play which he had not the innate force to rouse into more profitable activity. Gray's melancholy was that of Richard II. :—

> "I wasted time, and now doth time waste me,
> For now hath time made me his numbering-clock."

Whatever the cause, it began about the time when he had finally got his two great odes off

his hands. At first it took the form of resignation, as when he writes to Mason in 1757: "I can only tell you that one who has far more reason than you, I hope, will ever have to look on life with something worse than indifference, is yet no enemy to it, but can look backward on many bitter moments, partly with satisfaction, and partly with patience, and forward, too, on a scene not very promising, with some hope and some expectation of a better day."

But it is only fair to give his own explanation of his unproductiveness. He writes to Wharton, who had asked him for an epitaph on a child just lost: "I by no means pretend to inspiration, but yet I affirm that the faculty in question is by no means voluntary. It is the result, I suppose, of a certain disposition of mind which does not depend on one's self, and which I have not felt this long time."

In spite of this, however, it should be remembered that the motive power always becomes sluggish in men who too easily admit the supremacy of moods. But an age of common sense would very greatly help such a man as Gray to distrust himself.

If Gray ceased to write poetry, let us be thankful that he continued to write letters. Cowper, the poet, a competent judge, for he wrote excellent letters himself, and therefore had studied the art, says, writing to Hill in 1777: "I once

thought Swift's letters the best that could be written; but I like Gray's better. His humor, or his wit, or whatever it is to be called, is never ill-natured or offensive, and yet, I think, equally poignant with the Dean's."

I think the word that Cowper was at a loss for was *playfulness*, the most delightful ingredient in letters, for Gray can hardly be said to have had humor in the deeper sense of the word. The nearest approach to it I remember is where he writes (as Lamb would have written) to Walpole suffering with the gout: "The pain in your feet I can bear." He has the knack of saying droll things in an off-hand way, and as if they cost him nothing. It is only the most delicately trained hand that can venture on this playful style, easy as it seems, without danger of a catastrophe, and Gray's perfect elegance could nowhere have found a more admirable foil than in the vulgar jauntiness and clumsy drollery of his correspondent, Mason. Let me cite an example or two.

He writes to Wharton, in 1753: "I take it ill you should say anything against the Mole. It is a reflection, I see, cast at the Thames. Do you think that rivers which have lived in London and its neighbourhood all their days will run roaring and tumbling about like your tramontane torrents in the North?"

To Brown, in 1767: "Pray that the Trent

may not intercept us at Newark, for we have had infinite rain here, and they say every brook sets up for a river."

Of the French, he writes to Walpole, in Paris: "I was much entertained with your account of our neighbours. As an Englishman and an anti-Gallican, I rejoice at their dulness and their nastiness, though I fear we shall come to imitate them in both. Their atheism is a little too much, too shocking to be rejoiced at. I have long been sick at it in their authors and hated them for it; but I pity their poor innocent people of fashion. They were bad enough when they believed everything."

Of course it is difficult to give instances of a thing in its nature so evanescent, yet so subtly pervasive, as what we call *tone*. I think it is in this, if in anything, that Gray's letters are on the whole superior to Swift's. This playfulness of Gray very easily becomes tenderness on occasion, and even pathos.

Writing to his friend Nicholls in 1765, he says: "It is long since I heard you were gone in haste into Yorkshire on account of your mother's illness, and the same letter informed me she was recovered. Otherwise I had then wrote to you only to beg you would take care of her, and to inform you that I had discovered a thing very little known, which is, that in one's whole life one can never have any more than

a single mother. You may think this obvious and (what you call) a trite observation. . . . You are a green gosling! I was at the same age (very near) as wise as you, and yet I never discovered this (with full evidence and conviction, I mean) till it was too late. It is thirteen years ago and it seems but as yesterday, and every day I live it sinks deeper into my heart."

In his letters of condolence, perhaps the most arduous species of all composition, Gray shows the same exquisite tact which is his distinguishing characteristic as a poet. And he shows it by never attempting to console. Perhaps his notions on this matter may be divined in what he writes to Walpole about Lyttelton's "Elegy on his Wife": "I am not totally of your mind as to Mr. Lyttelton's elegy, though I love kids and fawns as little as you do. If it were all like the fourth stanza I should be excessively pleased. Nature and sorrow and tenderness are the true genius of such things; and something of these I find in several parts of it (not in the orange-tree); poetical ornaments are foreign to the purpose, for they only show a man is not sorry; and devotion worse, for it teaches him that he ought not to be sorry, which is all the pleasure of the thing."

And to Mason he writes in September, 1753: "I know what it is to lose a person that one's eyes and heart have long been used to, and I

never desire to part with the remembrance of that loss." (His mother died in the March of that year.)

Gray's letters also are a mine of acute observation and sharply-edged criticism upon style, especially those to Mason and Beattie. His *obiter dicta* have the weight of wide reading and much reflection by a man of delicate apprehension and tenacious memory for principles. "Mr. Gray used to say," Mason tells us, "that good writing not only required great parts, but the very best of those parts."[1] I quote a few of his sayings almost at random:

"Have you read Clarendon's book? Do you remember Mr. Cambridge's account of it before it came out? How well he recollected all the faults, and how utterly he forgot all the beauties? Surely the grossest taste is better than such a sort of delicacy."

"I think even a bad verse as good a thing or better than the best observation that ever was made upon it."

"Half a word fixed upon or near the spot is worth a cart-load of recollection." (He is speak-

[1] This, perhaps, suggested to Coleridge his admirable definition of the distinction between the language of poetry and of prose. It is almost certain that Coleridge learned from Gray his nicety in the use of vowel-sounds and the secret that in a verse it is the letter that giveth life quite as often as the spirit. Many poets have been intuitively lucky in the practice of this art, but Gray had formulated it.

ing of descriptions of scenery, but what he says is of wider application.)

"Froissart is the Herodotus of a barbarous age."

"Jeremy Taylor is the Shakespeare of divines."

"I rejoice when I see Macchiavel defended or illustrated, who to me appears one of the wisest men that any nation in any age has produced."

"In truth, Shakespeare's language is one of his principal beauties, and he has no less advantage over your Addisons and Rowes in this than in those other great excellencies you mention. Every word in him is a picture."

Of Dryden he said to Beattie: "That if there was any excellence in his own numbers he had learned it wholly from that great poet, and pressed him with great earnestness to study, as his choice of words and [his] versification were singularly happy and harmonious."

And again he says in a postscript to Beattie: "Remember Dryden, and be blind to all his faults."

To Mason he writes: "All I can say is that your 'Elegy' must not end with the worst line in it; it is flat, it is prose; whereas that, above all, ought to sparkle, or at least to shine. If the sentiment must stand, twirl it a little into an apothegm, stick a flower in it, gild it with a

costly expression; let it strike the fancy, the ear, or the heart, and I am satisfied."

Gray and Mason together, however, could not make the latter a poet!

"Now I insist that sense is nothing in poetry, but according to the dress she wears and the scene she appears in."

"I have got the old Scotch ballad on which 'Douglas' [Home's] was founded; it is divine, and as long as from hence to Ashton. Have you never seen it? Aristotle's best rules are observed in it in a manner that shows the author never had heard of Aristotle."

"This latter [speaking of a passage in "Caractacus"] is exemplary for the expression (always the great point with me); I do not mean by expression the mere choice of words, but the whole dress, fashion, and arrangement of a thought."

"Extreme conciseness of expression, yet pure, perspicuous, and musical, is one of the grand beauties of lyric poetry; this I have always aimed at and never could attain."

Of his own Agrippina he says: "She seemed to me to talk like an old boy all in figures and mere poetry, instead of nature and the language of real passion."

Of the minuteness of his care in matters of expression an example or two will suffice. Writing to Mason he says: "Sure 'seers' comes over too often; besides, it sounds ill." "Plann'd is

a nasty stiff word." "I cannot give up 'lost' for it begins with an *l*."

Yet Gray's nice ear objected to "*v*ain *v*ision" as hard.

It may be asked if those minutiæ of alliteration and of close or open vowel-sounds are consistent with anything like that ecstasy of mind, from which the highest poetry is supposed to spring, and which it is its function to reproduce in the mind of the reader. But whoever would write well must *learn* to write. Shelley was almost as great a corrector of his own verses as Pope. Even in Shakespeare we can trace the steps and even the models by which he arrived at that fatality of phrase which seems like immediate inspiration. One at least of the objects of writing is (or was) to be read, and, other things being equal, the best writers are those who make themselves most easily readable. Gray's great claim to the rank he holds is derived from his almost unrivalled skill as an artist, in words and sounds; as an artist, too, who knew how to compose his thoughts and images with a thorough knowledge of perspective. This explains why he is so easy to remember; why, though he wrote so little, so much of what he wrote is familiar on men's tongues. There are certain plants that have seeds with hooks by which they cling to any passing animal and impress his legs into the service of their locomotion and distribution.

Gray's phrases have the same gift of hooking themselves into the memory, and it was due to the exquisite artifice of their construction. His "Elegy," certainly not through any originality of thought, but far more through originality of sound, has charmed all ears from the day it was published; and the measure in which it is written, though borrowed by Gray of Dryden, by Dryden of Davenant, by Davenant of Davies, and by him of Raleigh, is ever since associated with that poem as if by some exclusive right of property. Perhaps the great charm of the "Elegy" is to be found in its embodying that pensively stingless pessimism which comes with the first gray hair; that vague sympathy with ourselves, which is so much cheaper than sympathy with others; that placid melancholy which satisfies the general appetite for an emotion which titillates rather than wounds.

The "Progress of Poesy" and the "Bard" made their way more slowly, though the judgment of the elect (the δυνατοὶ to whom Gray proudly appealed) placed them at the head of English lyric poetry. By the majority they were looked on as divine in the sense that they were past all understanding. Goldsmith criticised them in the "Monthly Review," and a few passages of his article are worth quoting as coming from him: "We cannot, however, without some regret, behold those talents so capable of giving

pleasure to all, exerted in efforts that, at best, can amuse only the few; we cannot behold this rising poet seeking fame among the learned, without hinting to him the same advice that Isocrates used to give his pupils, 'Study the people.' . . . He speaks to a people not easily impressed with new ideas; extremely tenacious of the old; with difficulty warmed and as slowly cooling again. How unsuited, then, to our national character is that species of poetry which rises on us with unexpected flights; where we must hastily catch the thought or it flies from us; and in short, where the reader must largely partake of the poet's enthusiasm in order to taste his beauties! . . . These two odes, it must be confessed, breathe much of the spirit of Pindar; but then they have caught the seeming obscurity, the sudden transition and hazardous epithet of the mighty master, all which, though evidently intended for beauties, will probably be regarded as blemishes by the generality of readers. In short, they are in some measure a representation of what Pindar now appears to be, though perhaps not what he appeared to the States of Greece."

Goldsmith preferred the "Bard" to the "Progress of Poesy." We seem to see him willing to praise and yet afraid to like. He is possessed by the true spirit of his age. For my part I think I see as much influence of the Italian "Canzone" as of Pindar in these odes. Nor

would they be better for being more like Pindar. Ought not a thing once thoroughly well done to be left conscientiously alone? And was it not Gray's object that these odes should have something of the same inspiring effect on English-speaking men as those others on Greek-speaking men? To give the same lift to the fancy and feeling? Goldsmith unconsciously gave them the right praise when he said they had "caught the spirit" of the elder poet. I remember hearing Emerson say some thirty years ago, that he valued Gray chiefly as a comment on Pindar.

Gray himself seems to have kept his balance very well; indeed, it may be conjectured that he knew the shortcomings of his work better than any one else could have told him of them. He writes to Hurd: "As your acquaintance in the University (you say) do me the honour to admire, it would be ungenerous in me not to give them notice that they are doing a very unfashionable thing, for all People of Condition are agreed not to admire, nor even to understand. One very great man, writing to an acquaintance of his and mine, says that he had read them seven or eight times, and that now, when he next sees him, he shall not have above thirty questions to ask. Another, a peer, believes that the last stanza of the second Ode relates to King Charles the First and Oliver Cromwell. Even my friends tell me they do not succeed, and write me moving

topics of consolation on that head. In short, I have heard of nobody but an actor and a Doctor of Divinity that profess their esteem for them. Oh yes, a lady of quality (a friend of Mason's), who is a great reader. She knew there was a compliment to Dryden, but never suspected there was anything said about Shakespeare and Milton, till it was explained to her ; and wishes that there had been titles prefixed to tell what they were about."

If the success of the Odes was not such as to encourage Gray to write more, they certainly added to his fame and made their way to admiration in France and Italy.

The fate of Gray since his death has been a singular one. He has been underrated both by the Apostles of Common Sense and of Imagination, by Johnson, and Wordsworth. Johnson was in an uncommonly surly mood even for him when he wrote his life of Gray. He blames and praises him for the same thing. He makes it a fault in the " Ode on the Distant Prospect of Eton College," that " the prospect . . . suggests nothing to Gray which every beholder does not equally think and feel " ; and a merit of the " Elegy," that " it abounds with images which find a mirror in every mind, and with sentiments to which every bosom returns an echo." This no doubt is one of the chief praises of Gray, as of other poets, that he is the voice of emotions

common to all mankind. "Tell me what I feel," is what everybody asks of the poet. But surely it makes some difference *how* we are told. It is one proof how good a thing is that it looks so easy after it is done. Johnson growls also at Mr. Walpole's cat, as if he were one of the race which is the hereditary foe of that animal. He hits a blot when he criticises "the azure flowers that blow," but is blind to the easy fancy, the almost feline grace of the whole, with its playful claws of satire sheathed in velvet.

Wordsworth in his famous Preface attacks Gray as "the head of those who by their reasonings have attempted to widen the space of separation betwixt prose and metrical composition [he means betwixt the language of the two], and was more than any other man curiously elaborate in the structure of his own poetic diction." He then quotes Gray's sonnet on the death of his friend West.

"In vain to me the smiling mornings shine,
And reddening Phœbus lifts his golden fire;
The birds in vain their amorous descant join,
Or cheerful fields resume their green attire;
These ears, alas, for other notes repine,
A different object do these eyes require:
My lonely anguish melts no heart but mine;
And in my breast the imperfect joys expire.
Yet morning smiles the busy race to cheer,
And newborn pleasure springs to happier men;
The fields to all their wonted tribute bear;
To warm their little loves the birds complain;

I fruitless mourn to him that cannot hear,
And weep the more because I weep in vain."

"It will easily be perceived that the only part of this sonnet which is of any value is the lines printed in italics; it is equally obvious that except in the rhyme and in the use of the single word 'fruitless' for 'fruitlessly,' which is so far a defect, the language of these lines does in no respect differ from that of prose." I think this criticism a little ungracious, for it would not be easy to find many sonnets (even of Wordsworth's own) with five first-rate verses out of the fourteen. But what is most curious is that Wordsworth should not have seen that this very sonnet disapproves the theory of diction with which he charges him. I cannot find that he had any such theory. He does, indeed, say somewhere that the language of the age is never the language of poetry, which if taken as he understood it is true, but I know not where Wordsworth found his "reasonings." Gray by the language of the age meant the language of conversation, for he goes on to say, "Except among the French, whose verse, where the thought or image does not support it, differs in nothing from prose." Gray's correspondence with Mason proves that he had no such theory. Let a pair of instances suffice.

"There is an affectation in so often using the old phrase 'or ere' for 'before.'" "*Intellect* is

a word of science and therefore inferior to any more common word." Wordsworth should have had more sympathy with a man who loved mountains as well as he, and not wholly in the eighteenth-century fashion either. "Not a precipice, not a torrent, not a cliff," writes Gray from the Grande Chartreuse, "but is pregnant with religion and poetry." That was Wordsworth's own very view, his ownty-downty view one is sometimes tempted to call it, when he won't let anybody else have a share in it.

After a journey in Scotland:

"The Lowlands are worth seeing once, but the mountains are ecstatic and ought to be visited in pilgrimage once a year. None but those monstrous creatures of God know how to join so much beauty with so much horror. A fig for your poets, painters, gardeners, and clergymen that have not been among them; their imagination can be made up of nothing but bowling-greens, flowering-shrubs, horse-ponds, Fleet-ditches, shell-grottoes, and Chinese rails."

Sir James Mackintosh says that Gray first traced out every picturesque tour in Britain, and Gray was a perpetual invalid. He discovered the Wye before Wordsworth, and floated down it in a boat, "near forty miles, surrounded with ever-new delights"; nay, it was he who made known the Lake region to the Lakers themselves. Wordsworth, I can't help thinking, had

a little unconscious jealousy of Gray, whose fame as the last great poet was perhaps somewhat obtrusive when Wordsworth was at the University. His last word about him is in a letter to Gillies in 1816.

"Gray failed as a poet not because he took too much pains and so extinguished his animation, but because he had very little of that fiery quality to begin with, and his pains were of the wrong sort. He wrote English verses as his brother Eton schoolboys wrote Latin, filching a phrase now from one author and now from another. I do not profess to be a person of very various reading; nevertheless, if I were to pluck out of Gray's tail all of the feathers which I know belong to other birds, he would be left very bare indeed. Do not let anybody persuade you that any quantity of good verses can be produced by mere felicity; or that an immortal style can be the growth of mere genius. '*Multa tulit fecitque*' must be the motto of all those who are to last." [1]

[1] I need not point out that Wordsworth is a little confused, if not self-contradictory in this criticism. I will add only two quotations to show that accidents will happen to the best-regulated poets:

"At distance heard the murmur of many waterfalls not audible in the daytime." (Gray to Wharton, 1769.)

"A soft and lulling sound is heard
Of streams inaudible by day." (*White Doe.*)

Gray probably guided Wordsworth to the vein of gold in Dyer.

What would be left to Gray after this plucking would be his genius, for genius he certainly had, or he could not have produced the effect of it. The gentle Cowper, no bad critic also he, was kinder.

"I have been reading Gray's works," he says, "and think him the only poet since Shakespeare entitled to the character of sublime. Perhaps you will remember that I once had a different opinion of him. I was prejudiced."

In spite of unjust depreciation and misapplied criticism, Gray holds his own and bids fair to last as long as the language which he knew how to write so well and of which he is one of the glories. Wordsworth is justified in saying that he helped himself from everybody and everywhere — and yet he made such admirable use of what he stole (if theft there was) that we should as soon think of finding fault with a man for pillaging the dictionary. He mixed himself with whatever he took — an incalculable increment. In the editions of his poems, the thin line of text stands at the top of the page like cream, and below it is the skim-milk drawn from many milky mothers of the herd out of which it has risen. But the thing to be considered is that, no matter where the material came from, the result is Gray's own. Whether original or not, he knew how to make a poem, a very rare knowledge among men. The thought in Gray

is neither uncommon nor profound, and you may call it beatified commonplace if you choose. I shall not contradict you. I have lived long enough to know that there is a vast deal of commonplace in the world of no particular use to anybody, and am thankful to the man who has the divine gift to idealize it for me. Nor am I offended with this odor of the library that hangs about Gray, for it recalls none but delightful associations. It was in the very best literature that Gray was steeped, and I am glad that both he and we should profit by it. If he appropriated a fine phrase wherever he found it, it was by right of eminent domain, for surely he was one of the masters of language. His praise is that what he touched was idealized, and kindled with some virtue that was not there before, but came from him.

And he was the most conscientious of artists. Some of the verses which he discards in deference to this conscientiousness of form which sacrifices the poet to the poem, the parts to the whole, and regards nothing but the effect to be produced, would have made the fortune of another poet. Take for example this stanza omitted from the "Elegy" (just before the Epitaph), because, says Mason, "he thought it was too long a parenthesis in this place."

> "There scattered oft, the earliest of the year,
> By hands unseen are showers of violets found;

> The redbreast loves to build and warble there,
> And little footsteps lightly print the ground."

Gray might run his pen through this, but he could not obliterate it from the memory of men. Surely Wordsworth himself never achieved a simplicity of language so pathetic in suggestion, so musical in movement as this.

Any slave of the mine may find the rough gem, but it is the cutting and polishing that reveal its heart of fire; it is the setting that makes of it a jewel to hang at the ear of Time. If Gray cull his words and phrases here, there, and everywhere, it is he who charges them with the imaginative or picturesque touch which only he could give and which makes them magnetic. For example, in these two verses of the "Bard":

> "Amazement in his van with Flight combined,
> And Sorrow's faded form and Solitude behind!

The suggestion (we are informed by the notes) came from Cowper and Oldham, and the amazement *combined* with flight sticks fast in prose. But the personification of Sorrow and the fine generalization of Solitude in the last verse which gives an imaginative reach to the whole passage are Gray's own. The owners of what Gray "conveyed" would have found it hard to identify their property and prove title to it after it had once suffered the Gray-change by steeping in his mind and memory.

When the example in our Latin Grammar

tells us that *Mors communis est omnibus*, it states a truism of considerable interest, indeed, to the person in whose particular case it is to be illustrated, but neither new nor startling. No one would think of citing it, whether to produce conviction or to heighten discourse. Yet mankind are agreed in finding something more poignant in the same reflection when Horace tells us that the palace as well as the hovel shudders at the indiscriminating foot of Death. Here is something more than the dry statement of a truism. The difference between the two is that between a lower and a higher; it is, in short, the difference between prose and poetry. The oyster has begun, at least, to secrete its pearl, something identical with its shell in substance, but in sentiment and association how unlike! Malherbe takes the same image and makes it a little more picturesque, though, at the same time, I fear, a little more Parisian, too, when he says that the sentinel pacing before the gate of the Louvre cannot forbid Death an entrance to the King. And how long had not that comparison between the rose's life and that of the maiden dying untimely been a commonplace when the same Malherbe made it irreclaimably his own by mere felicity of phrase? We do not ask where people got their hints, but what they made out of them. The commonplace is unhappily within reach of us all, and unhappily,

too, they are rare who can give it novelty and even invest it with a kind of grandeur as Gray knew how to do. If his poetry be a mosaic, the design is always his own. He, if any, had certainly "the last and greatest art," the art to please. Shall we call everything mediocre that is not great? Shall we deny ourselves to the charm of sentiment because we prefer the electric shudder that imagination gives us? Even were Gray's claims to being a great poet rejected, he can never be classed with the many, so great and uniform are the efficacy of his phrase and the music to which he sets it. This unique distinction, at least, may be claimed for him without dispute, that he is the one English poet who has written less and pleased more than any other. Above all it is as a teacher of the art of writing that he is to be valued. If there be any well of English undefiled, it is to be found in him and his master, Dryden. They are still standards of what may be called classical English, neither archaic nor modern, and as far removed from pedantry as from vulgarity. They were

> "Tous deux disciples d'une escole
> Où l'on forcene doucement,"

a school in which have been enrolled the Great Masters of literature.

SOME LETTERS OF WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR

Walter Savage Landor

SOME LETTERS OF WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR[1]

1888

I WAS first directed to Landor's works by hearing how much store Emerson set by them. I grew acquainted with them fifty years ago in one of those arched alcoves in the old college library in Harvard Hall, which so pleasantly secluded without wholly isolating the student. That footsteps should pass across the mouth of his Aladdin's Cave, or even enter it in search of treasure, so far from disturbing only deepened his sense of possession. These faint rumors of the world he had left served but as a pleasant reminder that he was the privileged denizen of another, beyond "the flaming bounds of place and time." There, with my book lying at ease and in the expansion of intimacy on the broad window-shelf, shifting my cell from north to south with the season, I made friendships, that have lasted me for life, with Dodsley's "Old Plays," with Cotton's "Montaigne," with Hakluyt's "Voyages," among others that were not

[1] Written to introduce Landor's letters to the readers of *The Century Magazine*, in which they were first published.

in my father's library. It was the merest browsing, no doubt, as Johnson called it, but how delightful it was! All the more, I fear, because it added the stolen sweetness of truancy to that of study, for I should have been buckling to my allotted task of the day. I do not regret that diversion of time to other than legitimate expenses, yet shall I not gravely warn my grandsons to beware of doing the like?

I was far from understanding all I heard in this society of my elders into which I had smuggled myself, and perhaps it was as well for me; but those who formed it condescended to me at odd moments with the tolerant complacency of greatness, and I did not go empty away. Landor was in many ways beyond me, but I loved the company he brought, making persons for me of what before had been futile names, and letting me hear the discourse of men about whom Plutarch had so often told me such delightful stories. He charmed me, sometimes perhaps he imposed on me, with the stately eloquence that moved to measure always, often to music, and never enfeebled itself by undue emphasis, or raised its tone above the level of good breeding. In those ebullient years of my adolescence it was a wholesome sedative. His sententiousness, too, had its charm, equally persuasive in the carefully draped folds of the chlamys or the succinct tunic of epigram. If Plato had written in English, I

thought, it is thus that he would have written. Here was a man who knew what literature was, who had assimilated what was best in it, and himself produced or reproduced it.

Three years later, while I was trying to persuade myself that I was reading law, a friend[1] who knew better gave me the first series of the "Imaginary Conversations," in three volumes, to which I presently added the second series, and by degrees all Landor's other books as I could pick them up, or as they were successively published. Thus I grew intimate with him, and, as my own judgment gradually affirmed itself, was driven to some abatement of my hitherto unqualified admiration. I began to be not quite sure whether the balance of his sentences, each

[1] Let me please myself by laying a sprig of rosemary ("that 's for remembrance") on his grave. This friend was John Francis Heath, of Virginia, who took his degree in 1840. He was the handsomest man I have ever seen, and in every manly exercise the most accomplished. His body was as exquisitely moulded as his face was beautiful. I seem to see him now taking that famous standing-jump of his, the brown curls blowing backward, or laying his hand on his horse's neck and vaulting into the saddle. After leaving college he went to Germany and dreamed away nine years at Heidelberg. We used to call him Hamlet, he could have done so much and did so absolutely nothing. He died in the Confederate service, in 1862. He was a good swordsman (we used to fence in those days), and the rumor of his German duels and of his intimacy with Prussian princes reached us when some fellow student came home.

so admirable by itself, did not grow wearisome in continuous reading, — whether it did not hamper his freedom of movement, as when a man poises a pole upon his chin. Surely he has not the swinging stride of Dryden, which could slacken to a lounge at will, nor the impassioned rush of Burke. Here was something of that cadenced stalk which is the attribute of theatrical kings. And sometimes did not his thunders also remind us of the property-room? Though the flash failed, did the long reverberation ever forget to follow? But there is always something over-passionate in the recoil of the young man from the idols of the boy. Even now when I am more temperate, however, I cannot help feeling that his humor is horse-play; that he is often trivial and not seldom slow; that he now and again misses the true mean that can be grave without heaviness and light without levity, though he would have dilated on that virtue of our composite tongue which enabled it to make the distinction, and would have believed himself the first to discover it. He cannot be familiar unless at the cost of his own dignity and our respect. I sometimes question whether even that quality in him which we cannot but recognize and admire, his loftiness of mind, should not sometimes rather be called uppishness, so often is the one caricatured into the other by a blusterous self-confidence and self-assertion.

He says of himself,

"Nature I loved, and, next to Nature, Art";

but I am inclined to think that it was Art he loved most. His perennial and abiding happiness was in composition, in fitting word to word, and these into periods, like a master-workman in mosaic. This, perhaps, is why he preferred writing Latin verse, because in doing that the joy of composing was a more conscious joy. Certainly we miss in him that quality of spontaneousness, that element of luck, which so delights us in some of the lesser and all the greater poets. By his own account the most audacious of men, his thought and phrase have seldom the happy audacity of what Montaigne calls the first jump. Father Thames could never have come upon *his* stage with both his banks on the same side, refreshing as that innovation might have been to an audience familiar with the humdrum habits of the river. Yet he is often content to think himself original when he has lashed himself into extravagance; and the reserve of his better style is the more remarkable that he made spoiled children of all his defects of character. It might almost seem that he sought and found an equipoise for his hasty violence of conduct in the artistic equanimity of his literary manner. I think he had little dramatic faculty. The creations of his brain do not detach themselves from

it and become objective. He lived almost wholly in his own mind and in a world of his own making which his imagination peopled with casts after the antique.

His "Conversations" were imaginary in a truer sense than he intended, for it is images rather than persons that converse with each other in them. Pericles and Phocion speak as we might fancy their statues to speak, — nobly indeed, but with the cold nobleness of marble. He had fire enough in himself, but his pen seems to have been a non-conductor between it and his personages. So little could he conceive the real world as something outside him, that nobody but himself was astonished when he was cast in damages at the suit of a lady to whom he had addressed verses that would have blackened Canidia. But he had done it merely as an exercise in verse; it was of that he was thinking, more than of her, and I doubt if she was so near his consciousness, or so actual to him, as the vile creatures of ancient Rome whose vices and crimes he laid at her door. Even his in every way admirable apothegms seem to be made out of the substance of his mind, and not of his experience or observation. And yet, with all his remoteness, I can think of no author who has oftener brimmed my eyes with tears of admiration or sympathy.

When we have made all deductions, he re-

mains great and, above all, individual. There is nothing in him at second-hand. The least wise of men, he has uttered through the mask of his interlocutors (if I cannot trust myself to call them characters) more wisdom on such topics of life and thought as interested or occurred to him than is to be found outside of Shakespeare ; and that in an English so pure, so harmonious, and so stirringly sonorous that he might almost seem to have added new stops to the organ which Milton found sufficient for his needs. Though not a critic in the larger sense, — he was too rash for that, too much at the mercy of his own talent for epigram and seemingly conclusive statement, — no man has said better things about books than he. So well said are they, indeed, that it seems ungrateful to ask if they are always just. One would scruple to call him a great thinker, yet surely he was a man who had great thoughts, and when he was in the right mood these seam the ample heaven of his discourse like meteoric showers. He was hardly a great poet, yet he has written some of the most simply and conclusively perfect lines that our own or any other language can show. They float stately as swans on the tamer level of his ordinary verse. Some of his shorter poems are perfect as crystals. His metaphors are nobly original ; they stand out in their bare grandeur like statues against a background of sky ; his similes are fresh, and from nature ;

he plucks them as he goes, like wild flowers, nor interrupts his talk. An intellectual likeness between him and Ben Jonson constantly suggests itself to me. Both had burly minds with much apparent coarseness of fibre, yet with singular delicacy of temperament.

In politics he was generally extravagant, yet so long ago as 1812 he was wise enough (in a letter to Southey) to call war between England and America civil war, though he would not have been himself if he had not added, "I detest the Americans as much as you do." In 1826 he proposed a plan that would have pacified Ireland and saved England sixty years of odious mistake.

Ten or twelve years ago I tried to condense my judgment of him into a pair of quatrains, written in a copy of his works given to a dear young friend on her marriage. As they were written in a happier mood than is habitual with me now, I may be pardoned for citing them here with her permission, and through her kindness in sending me a copy: —

> A villa fair, with many a devious walk
> Darkened with deathless laurels from the sun,
> Ample for troops of friends in mutual talk,
> Green Chartreuse for the reverie of one:
> Fixed here in marble, Rome and Athens gleam;
> Here is Arcadia, here Elysium too;
> Anon an English voice disturbs our dream,
> And Landor's self can Landor's spell undo.

His books, as I seem to have hinted here, are especially good for reading aloud in fitly sifted company, and I am sure that so often as the experiment is tried this company will say, with Francesca:

> "Per più fiate gli occhi ci sospinse
> Quella lettura, e scolorocci il viso."

Landor was fond of saying that he should sup late, but that the hall would be well lighted, and the company, if few, of the choicest. The table, indeed, has been long spread, but will he sit down till the number of the guests is in nearer proportion to that of the covers? It is now forty years since the collected edition of his works was published, probably, as was usual in his case, a small one. Only one re-impression has yet been called for. Mr. Forster's biography of him is a long plea for a new trial. It is a strange fate for a man who has written so much to interest, to instruct, to delight, and to inspire his fellow men. Perhaps it is useless to seek any other solution of the riddle than the old *habent sua fata libelli*. But I envy the man who has before him the reading of those books for the first time. He will have a sensation as profound as that of the peasant who wandered in to where Kaiser Rothbart sits stately with his knights in the mountain cavern biding his appointed time.

I saw Landor but once — when I went down from London, by his invitation, to spend a day

with him at Bath in the late summer of 1852. His friend, the late Mr. Kenyon, went with me, — his friend and that of whoever deserved or needed friendship, the divinely appointed *amicus curiae* of mankind in general. For me it was and is a memorable day, for Landor was to me an ancient, and it seemed a meeting in Elysium. I had looked forward to it, nevertheless, with a twinge of doubt, for three years before I had written a review of the new edition of his works, in which I had discriminated more than had been altogether pleasing to him. But a guest was as sacred to Landor as to an Arab, and the unaffected heartiness of his greeting at once reassured me. I have little to tell of our few hours' converse, for the stream of memory, when it has been flowing so long as mine, gathers an ooze in its bed like that of Lethe, and in this the weightier things embed themselves past recovery, while the lighter, lying nearer the surface, may be fished up again. What I can recollect, therefore, illustrates rather the manner of the man than his matter. His personal appearance has been sufficiently described by others. I will only add, that the suffused and uniform ruddiness of his face, in which the forehead, already heightened by baldness, shared, and something in the bearing of his head, reminded me vividly of the late President Quincy, as did also a certain hearty resonance of speech. You felt yourself in the

presence of one who was emphatically a Man, not the image of a man; so emphatically, indeed, that even Carlyle thought the journey to Bath not too dear a price to pay for seeing him, and found something royal in him. When I saw him he was in his seventy-eighth year, but erect and vigorous as in middle life. There was something of challenge even in the alertness of his pose, and the head was often thrown back like that of a boxer who awaits a blow. He had the air of the arena. I do not remember that his head was large, or his eyes in any way remarkable.

After the first greetings were over, I thought it might please him to know that I had made a pilgrimage to his Fiesolan villa. I spoke of the beauty of its site. I could not have been more clumsy, had I tried. "Yes," he almost screamed, "and I might have been there now, but for that in-tol-e-rrr-a-ble woman!" pausing on each syllable of the adjective as one who would leave an imprecation there, and making the *r* grate as if it were grinding its teeth at the disabilities which distance imposes on resentment. I was a little embarrassed by this sudden confidence, which I should not here betray had not Mr. Forster laid Landor's domestic relations sufficiently bare. I am not sure whether he told me the story of his throwing his cook out of a window of this villa. I think he did, but it may have been Mr. Kenyon who told it me on the

way back to London. The legend was, that after he had performed this summary act of justice, Mrs. Landor remonstrated with a "There, Walter! I always told you that one day you would do something to be sorry for in these furies of yours." Few men can be serene under an "I always told you so" — least of all men could Landor. But he saw that here was an occasion where calm is more effective than tempest, and where a soft answer is more provoking than a hard. So he replied mildly: "Well, my dear, I *am* sorry, if that will do you any good. If I had remembered that our best tulip-bed was under that window, I 'd have flung the dog out of t' other."

He spoke with his wonted extravagance (he was always in extremes) of Prince Louis Napoleon: "I have seen all the great men that have appeared in Europe during the last half century, and he is the ablest of them all. Had his uncle had but a tithe of his ability, he would never have died at St. Helena. The last time I saw the Prince before he went over to France, he said to me, 'Good-bye, Mr. Landor; I go to a dungeon or a throne.' 'Good-bye, Prince,' I answered. 'If you go to a dungeon, you may see me again; if to a throne, never!'" He told me a long story of some Merino sheep that had been sent him from Spain, and which George III. had "stolen." He seemed to

imply that this was a greater crime than throwing away the American colonies, and a perfidy of which only kings could be capable. I confess that I thought the sheep as shadowy as those of Hans in Luck, for I was not long in discovering that Landor's memory had a great deal of imagination mixed with it, especially when the subject was anything that related to himself. It was not a memory, however, that was malignly treacherous to others.

I mentioned his brother Robert's "Fountain of Arethusa"; told him how much it had interested me, and how particularly I had been struck with the family likeness to himself in it. He assented; said it *was* family likeness, not imitation, and added: "Yes, when it came out many people, even some of my friends, thought it was mine, and told me so. My answer always was, 'I wish to God I *could* have written it!'" He spoke of it with unfeigned enthusiasm, though then, I believe, he was not on speaking terms with his brother. Whenever, indeed, his talk turned, as it often would, to the books or men he liked, it rose to a passionate appreciation of them. Even upon indifferent matters he commonly spoke with heat, as if he had been contradicted, or hoped he might be. There was no prophesying his weather by reading the barometer of his face. Though the index might point never so steadily to *Fair*, the storm might

burst at any moment. His quiet was that of the cyclone's pivot, a conspiracy of whirlwind. Of Wordsworth he spoke with a certain alienated respect, and made many abatements, not as if jealous, but somewhat in the mood of that Athenian who helped ostracize Aristides. Of what he said I recollect only something which he has since said in print, but with less point. Its felicity stamped it on my memory. "I once said to Mr. Wordsworth, 'One may mix as much poetry with prose as one likes, it will exhilarate the whole; but the moment one mixes a drop of prose with poetry, it precipitates the whole.' He never forgave me!" Then followed that ringing and reduplicated laugh of his, so like the joyous bark of a dog when he starts for a ramble with his master. Of course he did not fail to mention that exquisite sea-shell which Wordsworth had conveyed from *Gebir* to ornament his own mantelpiece.

After lunch, he led us into a room the whole available wall-space of which was hung with pictures, nearly all early Italian. As I was already a lover of Botticelli, I think I may trust the judgment I then inwardly pronounced upon them, that they were nearly all aggressively bad. They were small, so that the offence of each was trifling, but in the aggregate they were hard to bear. I waited doggedly to hear him begin his

celebration of them, dumfounded between my moral obligation to be as truthful as I dishonestly could and my social duty not to give offence to my host. However, I was soon partially relieved. The picture he wished to show was the head of a man, an ancestor, he told me, whose style of hair and falling collar were of the second quarter of the seventeenth century. Turning sharply on me, he asked: "Does it remind you of anybody?" Of course this was a simple riddle; so, after a diplomatic pause of deliberation, I replied, cheerfully enough: "I think I see a likeness to you in it." There was an appreciable amount of fib in this, but I trust it may be pardoned me as under duress. "Right!" he exploded, with the condensed emphasis of a rifle. "Does it remind you of anybody else?" For an instant I thought my retribution had overtaken me, but in a flash of inspiration I asked myself, "Whom would Landor like best to resemble?" The answer was easy, and I gave it forthwith: "I think I see a likeness to Milton." "Right again!" he cried triumphantly. "It *does* look like me, and it *does* look like Milton. That is the portrait of my ancestor, Walter Noble, Speaker of one of Charles First's parliaments. I was showing this portrait one day to a friend, when he said to me, 'Landor, how can you pride yourself on your descent from this sturdy old cavalier —

you who would have cut off Charles's head with the worst of 'em?' '*I* cut off his head? Never!' 'You would n't? I 'm astonished to hear you say that. What would you have done with him?' 'What would I have done? Why, *hanged* him, like any other malefactor!'" This he trumpeted with such a blare of victory as almost made his progenitor rattle on the wall where he hung. Whether the portrait was that of an ancestor, or whether he had bought it as one suitable for his story, I cannot say. If an ancestor, it could only have been Michael (not Walter) Noble, Member of Parliament (not Speaker) during the Civil War and siding with the Commons against the King. Landor had confounded him with Sir Arnold Savage (a Speaker in Henry Seventh's time), whom he had adopted as an ancestor, though there was no probable, certainly no provable, community of blood between them. This makes the anecdote only the more characteristic as an illustration of the freaks of his innocently fantastic and creative memory. I could almost wish my own had the same happy faculty, when I see how little it has preserved of my conversation, so largely monologue on his part, with a man so memorable.

WALTON

Isaak Walton

WALTON[1]

1889

BIOGRAPHY in these communicative days has become so voluminous that it might seem calculated rather for the ninefold vitality of another domestic animal than for the less lavish allotment of man. Only such renewed leases of life could justify the writing or suffice for the reading of these too often supererogatory confidences. Only a man like the great Julius, who new-moulded the world and stamped his effigy on the coinage of political thought still current, has a right to so much of our curiosity as we are now expected to put at the service of an average general or bishop. "Nothing human is foreign to me" was said long ago, chiefly by the Latin Grammar, and has been received as the pit and gallery receive a moral sentiment which does not inconvenience themselves, but which they think likely to give the boxes an uneasy qualm. But biography has found out a process by which what is human

[1] This paper was originally printed as an introduction to an edition of Walton's *Angler*, edited by Mr. John Bartlett, and published in 1889 by Messrs. Little, Brown & Co., through whose courtesy it is included in this collection.

may be so thrust upon us as to become *in*human, and one is often tempted to wish that a great deal of it might not only be made foreign to us, but firmly kept so. Plutarch, a man of the most many-sided moral and intellectual interests, had a truer sense of proportion, and tempers his amiable discursiveness with an eye to his neighbor's dial. And in his case the very names of his heroes are mostly so trumpet-like as both to waken attention and to warrant it, ushering in the bearers of them like that *flourish* on the Elizabethan stage which told that a king was coming. How should Brown or Smith or any other dingy monosyllable of Saxon indistinction compete for conjuration with Pelopidas or Timoleon? Even within living memory Napoleon had a prodigious purchase in his name alone, and prettily confirmed the theory of Mr. Shandy.

The modern biographer has become so indiscriminate, so unconscious of the relative importance of a single life to the Universe, so careless of the just limits whether of human interest or endurance, so communistic in assuming that all men are entitled to an equal share of what little time there is left in the world, that many a worthy, whom a paragraph from the right pen might have immortalized, is suffocated in the trackless swamps of two octavos. Meditating over these grievances with the near prospect of

a biography to write, I am inclined to apply what was said of states to men also, and call him happiest who has left fewest materials for history. It is at least doubtful whether gossip gain body by bottling. In these chattering days when nobody who really *is* nobody can stir forth without the volunteer accompaniment of a brass band, when there is a certificated eye at every keyhole, and when the Public Informer has become so essential a minister to the general comfort that the world cannot go about its business of a morning till its intellectual appetite is appeased with the latest doings and sayings of John Doe and Richard Roe, there is healing in the gentlemanlike reserves of the past, a benign sense of seclusion, a comfort such as loved hands bring to fevered brows, in the thought of one who, like Walton, has been safe for two hundred years in the impregnable stronghold of the grave. Malice domestic, treason, interviews, nothing can touch him further. The sanctities of *his* life, at least, cannot be hawked about the streets or capitalized in posters as a whet to the latest edition of the Peeping Tom. If it be the triumph of an historian to make the great highways of the olden time populous and noisy, or even vulgar, with their old life again, it is nevertheless a consolation that we may still find by-paths there, dumb as those through a pine forest, sacred to meditation and to grateful thoughts.

Such a by-path is the life of Walton. Though it lead us through nearly a hundred years of history, many of them stormy with civil or anxious with foreign war, the clamor of events is seldom importunate, and the petulant drums are muffled with a dreamy remoteness. So far as he himself could shape its course, it leads us under the shadow of honeysuckle hedges, or along the rushy banks of silence-loving streams, or through the claustral hush of cathedral closes, or where the shadow of the village church-tower creeps round its dial of green graves below, or to the company of thoughtful and godly men. He realized the maxim which Voltaire preached, but so assiduously avoided practising, — *bene vixit qui bene latuit*. He did his best to fulfil the apostle's injunction in studying to be quiet. Whether such fugitive and cloistered virtue as his come within the sweep of Milton's gravely cadenced lash or not, whether a man do not owe himself more to the distasteful publicity of active citizenship than to the petting of his own private tastes or talents, as Walton thought it right and found it sweet to do, may be a question. There can be none that the contemplation of such a life both soothes and charms, and we sigh to think that the like of it is possible no longer. Where now would the fugitive from the espials of our modern life find a sanctuary which telegraph or telephone had not

deflowered? I do not mean that Walton was an idle man, who, as time was given him for nothing, thought that he might part with it for nothing too. If he had been, I should not be writing this. He left behind him two books, each a masterpiece in its own simple and sincere way, and only the contemplative leisure of a life like his could have secreted the precious qualities that assure them against decay.

But Walton's life touches the imagination at more points than this of its quietude and inwardness. It opens many windows to the fancy. Its opportunities were as remarkable as its length. Twenty-two years old when Shakespeare died, he lived long enough to have read Dryden's "Absalom and Achitophel." He had known Ben Jonson and Chillingworth and Drayton and Fuller; he had exchanged gossip with Antony à Wood; he was the friend of Donne and Wotton and King; he had seen George Herbert; and how many more sons of Memory must he not have known or seen in all those years so populous with men justly famous! Of the outward husk of this life of his we know comfortably little, but of the kernel much, and that chiefly from such unconscious glimpses as he himself has given us.

Isaac, or (as he preferred to spell the name) Izaak, Walton was born at Stafford, on the 9th of August, 1593, of a family in the rank of

substantial yeomen long established in Staffordshire. Of his mother not even the name is known, and of his father we know only that his baptismal name was Jervis, and that he was buried on the 11th of February, 1596–97. Surely the short and simple annals of the poor have been seldom more laconic than this. Sir Harris Nicolas, author of the first trustworthy Life of Walton, yielding for once to the biographer's weakness for appearances, says that he "received a good, though not, strictly speaking, classical education." Considering that absolutely nothing is known of Walton's schooling, the concession to historical conscientiousness made in the parenthetic "strictly speaking" is amusing. We have the witness of documents in Walton's own handwriting that he could never have been taught even the rudiments of Latin; for he spells the third person singular of the perfect tense of *obire*, *obiet*, *separate*, *seperate*, and *divided*, *devided*. And these documents are printed by Sir Harris himself. After this one finds it hard to conceive what a classical education, loosely speaking, would be. In the list of Walton's books there is none that is not in English. It is enough for us that he contrived to pick up somewhere and somehow a competent mastery of his mother tongue (far harder because seeming easier than Latin), and a diction of persuasive simplicity, capable of dignity where

that was natural and becoming, such as not even the universities can bestow.

It is not known in what year he went to London. It has been conjectured, and with much probability, that he was sent thither to serve his apprenticeship with a relative, Henry Walton, a haberdasher. Of this Henry Walton nothing is known beyond what we are told by his will, and this shows us that he had connections with Staffordshire. That Izaak Walton gave the name of Henry to two sons in succession seems to show some kind of close relation between them and some earlier Henry. But Mr. Nicholls discovered in the records of the Ironmongers' Company for 1617–18 the following entry: "Isaac Walton was made one of the Ironmongers' Company by Thomas Grinsell, citizen and ironmonger." That Walton had relatives of this name appears from a legacy in his will to the widow of his "Cosen Grinsell." On the whole, whatever light is let in by this chink serves only to make the abundant darkness more visible. May there not have been another Isaac, perhaps a cousin, to distinguish himself from whom ours gave to his surname its fantastic spelling? What is certain is that he was already in London in 1619. In that year was published the second edition of a poem, "The Love of Amos and Laura," which, to judge by all that I know of it, the dedication, must happily have been very

soon gathered to its fathers; but it has two points of interest. It is dedicated to Walton by a certain S. P., who may have been the Samuel Purchas of the "Pilgrims;" and in this dedication there are expressions which show that Walton's character was already, in his twenty-sixth year, marked by the same attractiveness and purity and the same aptness for friendship which endeared him in later life to so many good and eminent men. S. P., after calling him his "more than thrice-beloved friend," tells him that he is the cause that the poem "is now as it is," and that it might have been called his had it been better, but that "No ill thing can be clothed with thy verse." We should infer that Walton had done much in the way of revision, and not only this, but that he was already known, among his friends at least, as a writer of verse himself. It is puzzling, however, that the first edition was published in 1613, when Walton was barely twenty, and that the second differs from the first in a single word only. In the only known copy of this earlier edition (which, to be sure, is otherwise imperfect) the dedication is not to be found. Sir Harris Nicolas suggests that Walton may have revised the poem in manuscript, but it seems altogether unlikely that he should have been called in as a consulting physician at so early an age. More than twenty years later, in the preface to his "Life of Donne," he

speaks of his "artless pencil," and several times elsewhere alludes to his literary inadequacy. But this deprecation may have been merely a shiver of his habitual modesty, or, as is more likely, a device of his literary adroitness. He certainly must have had considerable practice in the making of verse before he wrote his "Elegy on Donne" (1633), his first published essay in authorship. The versification of this, if sometimes rather stiff, is for the most part firm and not inharmonious. It is easier in its gait than that of Donne in his Satires, and shows the manly influence of Jonson.

Walton, at any rate, in course of time, attained, at least in prose, to something which, if it may not be called style, was a very charming way of writing, all the more so that he has an innocent air of not knowing how it is done. Natural endowment and predisposition may count for nine in ten of the chances of success in this competition; but no man ever achieved, as Walton sometimes did, a simplicity which leaves criticism helpless, by the mere light of nature alone. Nor am I speaking without book. In his "Life of Herbert" he prints a poem of Donne's addressed to Herbert's mother, in which there is allusion to certain hymns. Walton adds a few words which seem to follow each other with as little forethought as the notes of a thrush's song: "These hymns are now lost to us, but doubt-

less they were such as they two now sing in Heaven." Now on the inside cover of his Eusebius Walton has written three attempts at this sentence, each of them very far from the concise beauty to which he at last constrained himself. Simplicity, when it is not a careless gift of the Muse, is the last and most painful achievement of conscientious self-denial. He seems also to have had the true literary memory, which stores up the apt or pleasing word for use on occasion. I have noticed more than one instance of it, but one must suffice. In Donne's beautiful poem, "A Valediction Forbidding Mourning," is this stanza:

> "Dull sublunary lovers' love,
> Whose soul is sense, cannot admit
> Absence, because that doth remove
> Those things that elemented it."

Walton felt the efficacy of the word "elemented," and laid it by for employment at the first vacancy. I find it more than once in his writings.

Of the personal history of Walton during his life in London we know very little more than that he was living in Fleet Street in 1624, that from 1628 to 1644 he lived in Chancery Lane, and that he was twice married. Perhaps the most important event during all these years in its value to his mind and character was his making the acquaintance of Donne, to whose preaching he was a sedulous listener. This acquaintance

became a friendship by which he profited till Donne's death in 1631. There needs no further witness to his intelligence or to his worth.

Walton's first wife, to whom he was married in 1624, was Rachel Floud, daughter of Susannah Cranmer, who was the daughter of Thomas, grandnephew of the martyr. By her, who died in 1640, he had six sons and one daughter, all of whom died in infancy or early childhood. Six years after his first wife's death, Walton married Anne Ken, a sister by the half blood of Bishop Ken. Of this marriage there were three children, — one son, Izaak, who lived but a short time; a daughter Anne; and another Izaak, who survived his father, and died in 1719, a canon of Salisbury.

In the third edition of the "Complete Angler" (1664) appear for the first time some verses by Walton called the "Angler's Wish." Among other blisses is mentioned that of hearing "my Chlora sing a song." In the fifth edition (1676) "Kenna" is substituted for "Chlora," and the reference to Walton's second wife is obvious. It has been supposed that "Chlora" was an imperfect anagram for "Rachel"; and that Walton, like some better poets, Poe notably, had economized his inspiration by serving up the same verses cold to a second or even third mistress; but he was incapable of such amatory double-dealing. Sir Harris Nicolas, by calling attention

to the dates, at least makes it very unlikely that he was guilty of it. The verses were first published twenty years after the death of his first wife, and the name "Kenna" does not appear till his second had been fourteen years in her grave. Sir Harris failed to remark that Walton uses "Chlora" as the name of a shepherdess in an eclogue on the restoration of Charles II. Confronted with this fact, the supposed anagram turns out to be a mare's-nest, like the "Lutero" Rossetti found in Dante's "Veltro." Anne Walton herself died in 1662.

There is no certainty as to what Walton's occupation may have been further than that he was a tradesman of some sort, and probably, since he was thirty years in amassing the modest competence that sufficed him, in a small way. Whether large or small is of little interest to us, for his real business in this world was to write the Lives and the "Complete Angler," and to leave the example of a useful and unspotted life behind him. But it is amusing to find Mr. Major, with that West-End view of the realities of life which Englishmen of a certain class feel it proper to take, arguing that Walton's business must have been of a wholesale character because the place in which it was carried on was cramped, and moreover shared by a certain John Mason, hosier. One is irresistibly tempted to parody the notorious verse, and say,

"His trade was great because his shop was small."

"What room would there have been for the display of goods?" asks Mr. Major, with triumphant conviction, forgetting that in those days the space for that purpose was found in the street. Walton's removal to Chancery Lane may imply an enlargement of business; and this, so far as it goes, must suffice to console whoever values a man not for what he is, but by the round of the social ladder on which he happens to be standing. If the humbleness of Walton's station helped him toward that unaffected modesty which is so gracious in him and so dignified, we may well be thankful for it.

Walton seems to have done his duty as a citizen with exemplary fidelity. Between 1632 and 1644, when he moved out of the parish, the register of St. Dunstan's in the West shows him to have been successively scavenger (which Sir Harris Nicolas prudently deodorizes by calling it vaguely "a parish office"), juryman, constable, grand-juryman, overseer of the poor, and vestryman, — enough, one might say, to satisfy any reasonable ambition for civic honors at a time when they meant honest work done for honest wages.

Walton's first appearance as an author was in an elegy, which, after the fashion of the day, accompanied the first edition of Donne's poems (1633). This species of verse, whether in the

writing or the reading, is generally the most dreary compulsory labor to which man can be doomed. The poet climbs the doleful treadmill without getting an inch the higher; and as we watch him we are wearied with the reality of a toil which seems to have no real object. Once in my life I have heard a funeral elegy which was wholly adequate. It was the long quavering howl of a dog under a window of the chamber in which his master had at that moment died. It was Nature's cry of grief and terror at first sight of Death. That faithful creature was not trying to say something; so far from it, that even the little skill in articulation which his race has acquired was choked in the gripe of such disaster. Consolation would shrink away abashed from the presence of so helpless a grief. With elegiac poets it is otherwise, for it is of themselves and of their verses that they are thinking. They distil a precious cordial from their tears. They console themselves by playing variations on their inconsolability. Their triumphs are won over our artistic sense, not over our human fellow feeling. Yet now and then in the far inferior verse of far inferior men there will be some difficult word with a sob in it that moves as no artifice can move, and brings back to each of us his private loss with a strange sense of comfort in feeling that somewhere, no matter how far away in the past, there was one who had

suffered like ourselves and would not be appeased by setting his pain to music. There is something of this in Walton's "Elegy on Donne." I do not believe that he was thinking of his poetical paces as he wrote it; or, if he was, he forgets them from time to time and falls into his natural gait. What he said ten years later in writing of Cartwright seems true of this,

> "Muses, I need you not, for Grief and I
> Can in your absence weave an elegy."

I should be yielding to my partiality for Walton if I called these verses poetry; but there is at least, in the eloquence of their honest sorrow, a tendency to become so which stops little short of it, and which is too often missed in the carefully cadenced ululation of similar efforts. Here, indeed, there seems no effort at all, and that surely is a crowning mercy. There is one phrase whose laconic pathos I find it hard to match elsewhere. It is where he bids his thoughts "forget he loved me." This is the true good breeding of sorrow. It may as well be said here, once for all, that Walton was no poet, so far as rhythm is an essential element of expression. His lyrics are mechanical and club-footed. He succeeded best in that measure, the rhymed couplet of ten syllables, which detaches itself least irreconcilably from prose. The nearer an author comes to being a poet, so much the worse

for him should he persist in making verse the interpreter of his thought; so much the better for him should he wisely abandon it for something closer to the habitual dialect of men. I think that Walton's prose owes much of its charm to the poetic sentiment in him which was denied a refuge in verse, and that his practice in metres may have given to his happier periods a measure and a music they would otherwise have wanted. That he had this practice has a direct bearing on the question of the authorship of "Thealma and Clearchus," of which I must say something at the proper time. Walton had not the strong passions which poets break to the light harness of verse, and indeed they and longevity such as his are foaled by dams of very different race. But he loved poetry, and the poetry he loved was generally good. He had also some critical judgment in it. Speaking of Marlowe's "Come live with me," and Raleigh's answer to it, he says, "They were old-fashioned poetry, but choicely good; I think much better than the strong lines that are now in fashion in this critical age." His simplicity, it should seem, was not only a gift, but a choice as well.

Not long before the publication of a volume of Donne's sermons (1640), Walton wrote a life of the author, which was prefixed to them. This piety was not volunteered, but devolved

on him by the death of their common friend, Sir Henry Wotton (December, 1639), for whom he had been collecting the material. Donne lost nothing, and the world gained much, by this substitution; for Walton thus learned by accident where his true talent lay, and was encouraged to write those other Lives which, with this, make the volume that has endeared him to all who choose that their souls should keep good company. In a preface, beautiful alike for its form and the sentiment embodied in it, after a pretty apology for his own deficiencies, he says, "But be this to the disadvantage of the person represented, certain I am it is to the advantage of the beholder who shall here see the author's [Donne] picture *in a natural dress*, which ought to beget faith in what is spoken." And not only that, but Walton's picture too! In this preference of the homely and familiar, and in an artlessness which is not quite so artless as it would fain appear, lies the charm that never stales of Walton's manner. He would have applied his friend Wotton's verse to himself, and affirmed "simple truth his utmost skill," but he was also a painstaking artist in his own way.

As illustrations, take this sentence from the "Life of Donne," describing him after the death of his wife:

"Thus, as the Israelites sat mourning by the rivers of Babylon when they remembered Zion,

so he gave some ease to his oppressed heart by thus venting his sorrows; thus he began the day and ended the night; ended the restless night and began the weary day in lamentations."

Or this, of the nightingale, worthy to compete with Crashawe's, or with Jeremy Taylor's lark:

"But the nightingale, another of my airy creatures, breathes such sweet loud music out of her little instrumental throat, that it might make mankind to think miracles are not ceased. He that at midnight, when the very laborer sleeps securely, should hear, as I have very often, the clear airs, the sweet descants, the natural rising and falling, the doubling and redoubling of her voice, might well be lifted above earth, and say, 'Lord, what music hast Thou provided for the saints in heaven, when Thou affordest bad men such music on earth?'"

He had learned of his great contemporaries also to turn and wind those many-membered periods which in unskilful hands become otherwise-minded as a herd of swine. The passage in the Introduction to his revised "Life of Donne" where he compares himself to Pompey's bondman, and that in the Preface to the "Life of Herbert" in which he speaks of Mary Magdalene, may serve as examples; and in these neither are the words caught at random, nor do they fall into those noble modulations by chance. And he could be succinct at need, as

where he says: "He that praises Richard Hooker praises God, who hath given such gifts to men."

Walton tells us that he saw the Scotch Covenanters, when in 1644 they "came marching with it [the Covenant] gloriously upon their pikes and in their hats. . . . This I saw and suffered by it," whether in mind or purse he leaves doubtful. In this year he ceased to be an inhabitant of the Parish of St. Dunstan; and from that time till 1650, when he took a house in Clerkenwell, he for the most part vanishes. We know incidentally that he was in London once in the course of the year 1645, and once again in that of 1647. But these may have been flying visits, for there is no evidence that his second marriage (1646) took place there; and the statement of Antony à Wood, who knew him well, makes it probable that he may have spent at Stafford, where he had a small property, the years during which he cannot be shown to have lived anywhere else. To a man with his opinions, London could not have been more amiable during the Long Parliament and the Protectorate than during the reign of Charles II. to a man of his morals.

The solitude of Stafford, where, to cite his own words, he could

> "Linger long days by Swaynham brook,"

seems more suitable to the conception and gesta-

tion of such a book as the "Complete Angler" than London could have been to a man whose companionable instincts were so strong that even fishing was not perfect happiness without a friend to share it.

That the "Angler" was begun some years before it was published is rendered more probable by Walton's saying of Marlowe's song which he quotes, that it "was made at least fifty years ago." He was likely to know something about Marlowe through his own friendship with Drayton, who was the first adequately to signalize the poet's merit. Marlowe died in 1593, and the "at least fifty years" would bring us down to the Stafford period. There are passages in Walton which lead me to think he may have spent abroad some part of the time during which he is invisible to us. He set great store by the advantages of foreign travel, and gave his son the benefit of them.

It seems likely that he gave up business in 1644, and it may have been at Stafford that he saw some foraging party from Leslie's army which would not have spared his uncovenanted chickens. Internal evidence makes it likely that in 1646 he wrote the preface to Quarles's "Shepherd's Eclogues," and that he was on terms of friendly acquaintance with him as a brother of the angle. He may have borrowed the name "Clora" from Quarles.. It is true that he has

put an *h* into it, but his spelling is always according to his own lights (mostly will-o'-the-wisps); and there are people who think crystals less lustrous without that letter which may be picked up anywhere in the land of Cokayne, where it is dropped so often. In 1650 he published the "Reliquiae Wottonianae," prefixing to them a life of the author, printed in haste, he tells us, but corrected in later editions. The "Angler" appeared in 1653, and a second edition came out two years later. It was while he was in London during this latter year, probably to correct his proof-sheets, that he met Sanderson, who was there to perform the same function for the preface to a volume of sermons. Walton's account of this meeting is so characteristic that I shall quote it:

"About the time of his printing this excellent Preface, I met him accidentally in *London* in sad-coloured clothes, and, God knows, far from being costly. The place of our meeting was near to *Little Britain*, where he had been to buy a book which he then had in his hand. We had no inclination to part presently, and therefore turned to stand in a corner under a pent-house, for it began to rain, and immediately the wind rose and the rain increased so much that both became so inconvenient as to force us into a cleanly house, where we had bread, cheese, ale, and a fire for our money. This rain and wind were so

obliging to me as to force our stay there for at least an hour, to my great content and advantage. . . . And I gladly remember and mention it as an argument of my happiness and his great humility and condescension."

It is exactly as if he were telling us of it, and this sweet persuasiveness of the living and naturally cadenced voice is never wanting in Walton. It is indeed his distinction, and it is a very rare quality in writers, upon most of whom, if they ever happily forget themselves and fall into the tone of talk, the pen too soon comes sputtering in. The passage is interesting too because it illustrates both Walton's love of good company and his Boswellian sensitiveness to the attraction of superior men. Much as he loved fishing, it was in the minds of such men that he loved best to fish. And what a memory was his! The place, the sad-colored clothes, the book just bought, the rain and then the wind, the penthouse, the tavern, the bread, the ale, the fire, — everything is there that makes a picture. Then he reports Sanderson's discourse; and having done that, is reminded that this is a good time to give us a description of his person. In reading Walton's Lives (and no wonder Johnson loved them so[1]), I have a feeling that I have

[1] Gray must have loved them too, and his *Ode on a Distant Prospect of Eton College* was suggested by a passage in the *Life of Wotton*.

met him in the street and am hearing them from his own lips. I ask him about Donne, let us say. He begins, but catching sight of some one who passes, gives me in parenthesis an account of him, comes back to Donne, and keeps on with him till somebody else goes by about whom he has an anecdote to tell; and so we get a leash of biographies in one. It is very delightful, and though more rambling than Plutarch, comes nearer to him than any other life-writing I can think of. Indeed, I should be inclined to say that Walton had a genius for rambling rather than that it was his foible. The comfortable feeling he gives us that we have a definite purpose, mitigated with the license to forget it at the first temptation and take it up again as if nothing had happened, thus satisfying at once the conscientious and the natural man, is one of Walton's most prevailing charms. What vast balances of leisure does he not put to our credit! To read him is to go a-fishing with all its bewitching charms and contingencies. If there be many a dull reach in the stream of his discourse, where contemplation might innocently lapse into slumber, it is full also of nooks and eddies where nothing but our own incompetence will balk us of landing a fine fish. In this story of his meeting with Sanderson there is another point to be noticed. Walton's memory is always discreet, always well-bred. It never blabs.

I think that one little fact is purposely omitted here, namely, who paid for the good cheer at the tavern. The scot was paid, to be sure, with "our money," but I doubt very much whether the poor country parson's purse were the lighter for it.

In 1658 Walton published separately the second and revised edition of his "Life of Donne," with a preface engagingly full of himself. I say "engagingly full," because when he speaks of himself he never seems to usurp on other people, but only to share with all mankind a confidence to which they had as good a right as he. In 1660 he prefixed a congratulatory eclogue on the Restoration to a volume of Alexander Brome's Songs. In this he contrives to bring in the praise of his friend's verses, and combines the tediousness of the Commendatory and the Birthday styles with entire success. Never inspired in verse, he becomes laborious unless where his feelings are stirred to the roots, as in the "Elegy on Donne."

In 1662 he was at Worcester, the guest, probably, of his friend Bishop Morley. Here his second wife died and lies buried in the cathedral, with an inscription by him, simple and affectionate. In that year he removed with Morley (on his translation) to Winchester, and there spent the rest of his vigorous old age. From time to time he must have visited Charles Cotton, whose

father he had known. We have no record of these visits (spent in fishing) further than that one of them is spoken of in a letter of Walton as proposed in 1676. This was in his eighty-third year, and implies in him that longevity of the taste for out-of-door sports and of the muscle to endure their fatigues which are almost peculiar to Englishmen. Cotton was a Royalist country gentleman with a handsome estate, which, after sidling safely through the intricacies of the Civil War, trickled pleasantly away through the chinks of its master's profusion. He was an excellent poet and a thorough master of succulently idiomatic English, which he treated with a country-gentlemanlike familiarity, as his master, Montaigne, had treated French. The two men loved one another, and this speaks well for the social charity of both. There must have been delicately understood and mutually respectful conventions of silence in an intimacy between the placidly believing author of the Lives and the translator of him who invented the Essay. Walton loved a gentleman of blue blood as honestly as Johnson did, and was, I am sure, as sturdily independent withal. He could condone almost anything, that had no taint of personal dishonor, in a gentleman and a Cavalier. His nature was incapable of envy, and, himself of obscurest lineage, there was nothing he relished more keenly than the long pedigrees of other

people. While he enjoyed, he had also, I fancy, not merely a sense of joint ownership, but perhaps of something like over-lordship, as in that winsome passage of the "Angler" he makes Venator say, after describing the landscape he has been looking on: "As I thus sat joying in my own happy condition and pitying the poor rich man that owns this and many other pleasant groves and meadows about me, I did thankfully remember what my Saviour said, that the meek possess the earth." But with him the more noble the ancestry, the worse for their degenerous representative. A pedigree had not the right flavor for Walton unless newly spiced with achievement from generation to generation. In his "Life of Sanderson," after proclaiming with heraldic satisfaction that he was of ancient family, he blows this trumpet-blast against the recreant: "For titles not acquired, but derived only, do but show us who of our ancestors have and how they have achieved that honour which their descendants claim and may not be worthy to enjoy. For if those titles descend to persons that degenerate into vice and break off the continued line of learning or valour or that virtue that acquired them, they destroy the very foundation upon which that honour was built, and all the rubbish of their vices ought to fall heavy on such dishonourable heads; ought to fall so heavy as to degrade them of their titles

and blast their memories with reproach and shame."

It is plain that Walton, had he lived now, would have made short work with an unsavory Peer. It is noticeable too that he gives Learning precedence over Valor.

Walton had a genius for friendships and an amiability of nature ample for the comfortable housing of many at a time; he had even a special genius for bishops, and seems to have known nearly the whole Episcopal bench of his day; but his friendship, like Lamb's, did not slink away from a fortune out at elbows, and he had, I more than suspect, a curiosity hospitable enough to entertain a broken gentleman (like the Carey whom he speaks of having known) if he had good talk or narrative or honest mirth in him and producible on demand. His friend Alexander Brome was surely no precisian. But these less reputable intimates he made welcome in a back-parlor of his mind, away from the street and with the curtains drawn, as if he would fain hide them even from himself.[1] His habitual temper sought serious and thoughtful company, and he valued re-

[1] In his *Life of Hooker*, having to speak of George Sandys, he mentions his Travels, and his translations in verse from the Psalms and Job. He is silent about his version of Ovid's *Metamorphoses* (done in Virginia), though the book was in his own library.

spectability as a wise man must, his own self-respect as a good man ought. But Cotton was a man of genius,[1] whose life was cleanlier than his Muse always cared to be. If he wrote the Virgil Travesty, he also wrote verses which the difficult Wordsworth could praise, and a poem of gravely noble mood addressed to Walton on his Lives, in which he shows a knowledge of what goodness is that no bad man could have acquired. Let one line of it at least shine in my page, not as a sample but for its own dear sake :

> "For in a virtuous act all good men share."

Those must have been delightful evenings which the two friends spent together after the day's fishing. Well into the night they must have lingered, with much excellent discourse of books and men, now serious, now playful, much personal anecdote and reminiscence. Perhaps it was as well that Dr. Morley should be at Winchester, with all respect be it said, and not forgetting that Walton has told us he "loved such mirth as did not make friends ashamed to look upon one another next morning."

At Walton's request, Cotton wrote in ten days the treatise on fly-fishing which was added

[1] Not yet extinct among his descendants. The late Lady Marian Alford, besides her social talents, had every gift that Fortune bestows on the artist save that of poverty.

to the fifth edition of the "Complete Angler" in 1676. What he says of Walton in it is interesting, and the reverence he expresses for his character especially so as coming from a man of the world. "My father Walton," he makes Piscator say, "will be seen twice in no man's company he does not like, and likes none but such as he believes to be very honest men." It should be remembered that in those days the word "honest" had to the initiated ear a political and ecclesiastical as well as a moral meaning. Cotton was a far better poet than Walton, and had a more practised hand; yet his supplement to the "Angler" wants that charm of inadvertency with which Walton knew how to make his most careful sentences waylay the ear, and his truly poetic sympathy with the sights and sounds of every-day Nature. Its chief value, I think, lies in this illustrative contrast.

In 1665 Walton wrote his "Life of Hooker," less a labor of love than the others, but containing that homely picture of him reading Horace as he tended his scanty sheep, and called away by his wife to rock the cradle. In 1670 came the "Life of Herbert," written, he tells us, chiefly to please himself. Some time before 1678, it is uncertain when, his daughter Anne became the wife of the Reverend William Hawkins, one of the prebends of Winchester, and with them he seems to have spent his latter years. In that

year he wrote the " Life of Sanderson," which, as showing no sign of mental disrepair, is surely an almost unparalleled feat for a man of eighty-five. Length of days is one of the blessings of the Old Testament, and surely it might be added to the Beatitudes of the New, when, as with Walton, it means only a longer ripening, a more abundant leisure to look backwards without self-reproach, and forwards with an assured gratitude to God for a future goodness like the past. There is, perhaps, if we condescend to a purely utilitarian view, no stronger argument for belief in a personal Deity than that it makes possible this ennobling sense of gratitude ; and in a time when such possibility has been so largely analyzed and refined away, Walton's habitual recognition of so direct and conscious an obligation that he cannot resist the interjectional expression of it is a chief cause of the solace and refreshment we feel in reading him. As we read we inhale an odor from the leaves as if flowers from the garden of childhood had been pressed between them, and for a moment, by the sweet sophistry of association, we stand again among them where they grew. Here is incontaminate piety, wholesome as bread. It is a gush of involuntary emotion like that first sincere and precious juice which their own weight forces from the grapes. A fine morning, a meadow flushed with primroses, are not only

good in themselves, but sweeter and better because they give him occasion to be thankful for them. We may be wiser, but it may be doubted whether we are so happy, in our self-reliant orphanhood. He had two pleasures where we have but one, and that one doubtingly now that the shadow of the metaphysic cloud has darkened Nature.

In 1683 Walton published "Thealma and Clearchus, a pastoral history in smooth and easie verse written long since by John Chalkhill, Esq., an acquaintant and friend of Edmund Spencer" [*sic*]. The preface is dated five years earlier. The poem is incomplete, with this quaint note by Walton at the end: "And here the author died, and I hope the reader will be sorry." When Mr. S. W. Singer reprinted it in 1820 he expressed his doubts whether such a person as John Chalkhill had ever existed, and his strong suspicion that it might be a youthful production of Walton himself. But several John (or Jon) Chalkhills have since been unearthed; one of them (who died in 1615) being remotely connected with Walton through the marriage of his daughter with one of the Kens. Sir Harris Nicolas, who rejects Mr. Singer's suspicion as implying a duplicity of which honest Izaak would have been incapable, drolly enough fixes upon another John Chalkhill, Fellow of Winchester College, as the

probable author of the poem. This he does with Walton's statement that the author was "an acquaintant and friend" of Spenser, and that of John Chalkhill's monument in Winchester Cathedral that he died in 1679, *octogenarius*, both before him. Now Spenser died in 1599; and *this* Chalkhill, at least, could not have known him. But if the other, who died in 1615, wrote "Thealma and Clearchus," he certainly did not write it as it was printed by Walton. The language is altogether too modern for that, unless, indeed, he was endowed with a spirit of prophecy that both foresaw and forestalled the changes in his mother tongue. The invariable use of the possessive *its* and the elision of the *e* in the past participle would be conclusive. The tone is also too modern, though this is more easily to be felt than defined in words. While there is nothing that compels us to accept Mr. Singer's suggestion as to the authorship, it is certain that the poem has been largely rewritten by somebody, and this must have been Walton. It has many of the characteristics of his style, — his discursiveness, his habit of leaving the direct track of narrative on the suggestion of the first inviting by-path, his commonplaceness of invention, and, what is even more suspicious, the same imperfect rhymes, sometimes mere assonances, which are found in verses admittedly his own. I find also,

or think I find, unmistakable (though veiled) allusions to the Civil War consonant with some that Walton could not refrain in his acknowledged writings. There is almost nothing in it that suggests poetry. Indeed, I remember but a single happy phrase:

> "In the proud deep
> She and her bold Clearchus sweetly sleep
> In those soft beds of darkness."

There is another passage worth quoting as applicable to Walton himself in his old age:

> "And he was almost grown a child again,
> Yet sound in judgment, not impaired in mind,
> For age had rather the soul's parts refined
> Than any way infirmed, his wit no less
> Than 't was in youth, his memory as fresh;
> He failed in nothing but his earthly part
> That tended to its centre, yet his heart
> Was still the same and beat as lustily."

And in his preface Walton perfectly describes himself in describing the real or imaginary author: "He was in his time a man generally known and as well beloved; for he was humble and obliging in his behaviour, a gentleman, a scholar, very innocent and prudent; and indeed his whole life was useful, quiet, and virtuous."

I am convinced that "Thealma and Clearchus," whoever may have sketched it, is mainly Walton's as it now stands, and I believe it to be the work of his middle or later life. The

gap of five years between the date of the preface and that of publication is hard to explain if we suppose him to have been merely the editor. The hesitation of an author venturing himself, even under an alias, in a new direction, seems a more natural explanation. If he was the author, I cannot agree with Archdeacon Nares and Sir Harris Nicolas that the artifice was very culpable, or that Walton would have thought it so. The evidence internal and external that he was author of the two letters from "a quiet and comfortable [conformable?] citizen in London to two busy and factious shopkeepers in Coventry," published in 1680, and signed R. W., seems to me conclusive. Had he attributed to Chalkhill a poem as bad in its morals as "Thealma and Clearchus" in its verse, it would have been quite another matter. Walton thought the poem good, or he would not have published it; and the worst harm that could come to Chalkhill would be the reputation of being a bad poet, — not very hard to bear with so many to keep him in countenance, and he safe under the sod for sixty-eight years.

Whether author or editor, Walton did not live long to enjoy the mystification or share the success, if any there were. He wrote his own will in October, 1683; and on the 15th December of that year, to borrow the words of his granddaughter's epitaph, written no doubt by

himself, he died in the ninetieth year "of his innocency."

In his will there is this remarkable passage: "My worldly estate, which I have nether got by falsehood or flattery, or the extreme crewelty of the law of this nation." This cruelty, I have no doubt, was the power which the law put into the hands of evil landlords. On this subject Walton held opinions which, if put in practice, would have prevented the social miseries of Ireland and the consequent political retribution which England is compelled to suffer for them. This is all the more creditable to him because he was by temperament and principle conservative, and not only a friend to that order of the Universe which was by law established in Church and State, but a lover of it. He tells of a pitiless landlord who was a parishioner of Sanderson, and of Sanderson's successful dealing with him, and adds: "It may be noted that in this age there are a sort of people so unlike the God of Mercy, so void of the bowels of pity, that they love only themselves and children, love them so as not to be concerned whether the rest of mankind waste their days in sorrow and shame, — people that are cursed with riches and a mistake that nothing but riches can make them and theirs happy."

The character of Walton's friendships and his fidelity to them when prorogued by death bear ample witness to the fine quality of his nature.

How amiably human it was he betrays at every turn, yet with all his *bonhomie* there is a dignity which never forgets itself or permits us to forget it. We may apply to him what he says of Sir Henry Wotton's father; that he was "a man of great modesty, of a most plain and single heart, of an ancient freedom and integrity of mind," and may say of him, as he says of Sir Henry himself, that he had "a most persuasive behavior." His friends loved to call him "honest Izaak." He speaks of his own "simplicity and harmlessness," and tells us that his humor was "to be free and pleasant and civilly merry," and that he "hated harsh censures." He makes it a prime quality of the gentleman to be "communicable." He had no love of money, and compassionates those who are "condemned to be rich." He was a stanch royalist and churchman, loved music, painting, good ale, and a pipe, and takes care to tell us that a certain artificial fly "was made by a handsome woman and with a fine hand." But what justifies and ennobles these lower loves, what gives him a special and native aroma like that of Alexander, is that above all he loved the beauty of holiness and those ways of taking and of spending life that make it wholesome for ourselves and our fellows. His view of the world is not of the widest, but it is the Delectable Mountains that bound the prospect. Never surely was there a more lovable

man, nor one to whom love found access by more avenues of sympathy.

There are two books which have a place by themselves and side by side in our literature, — Walton's "Complete Angler" and White's "Natural History of Selborne"; and they are books, too, which have secured immortality without showing any tincture of imagination or of constructive faculty, in the gift of one or the other of which that distinction commonly lies. They neither stimulate thought nor stir any passionate emotion. If they make us wiser, it is indirectly and without attempting it, by making us more cheerful. The purely literary charm of neither of them will alone authorize the place they hold so securely, though, as respects the "Angler," this charm must be taken more largely into account. They cannot be called popular, because they attract only a limited number of readers, but that number is kept full by new recruits in every generation; and they have survived every peril to which editing could expose them, even the crowning one of illustration. They have this in common, that those who love them find themselves growing more and more to love the authors of them too. Theirs is an immortality of affection, perhaps the most desirable, as it is the rarest, of all. I do not mean that there are no books in other languages, and no other books in our own, that

invite to a similar intimacy and inspire the same enthusiasm of regard. "Don Quixote" and "Elia" appeal to the memory at once. But in both of these there is also the sorcery of genius, there is the touch of the master, as well as the shy personal attractiveness of the writer. In the two books of which I have been speaking, what primarily interests us is the unconscious revelation of the authors' character; and it is through the kindly charm of this and a certain homely inspiration drawn from the sources of every-day experience that they tighten their hold upon us. Nature had endowed these men with the simple skill to make happiness out of the cheap material that is within the means of the poorest of us. The good fairy gave them to weave cloth of gold out of straw. They did not waste their time or strive to show their cleverness in discussing whether life were worth living, but found every precious moment of it so without seeking, or made it so without grimace, and with no thought that they were doing anything worth remark. Both these books are preëminently cheerful books, and have the invaluable secret of distilling sunshine out of leaden skies. They are companionable books, that tempt us out of doors and keep us there. The reader of the "Angler" especially finds himself growing conscious of one meaning in the sixth Beatitude too often overlooked, — that the pure in heart shall

see God, not only in some future and far-off sense, but wherever they turn their eyes.

I have hesitated to say that Walton had style, because, though that quality, the handmaid of talent and the helpmeet of genius, have left the unobtrusive traces of its deft hand in certain choicer parts of Walton's writing, — his guest-chambers as it were, — yet it does by no means pervade and regulate the whole. For in a book we feel the influence of style everywhere, though we never catch it at its work, as in a house we divine the neat-handed ministry of woman. Walton too often leaves his sentences in a clutter. But there are other qualities which, if they do not satisfy like style, are yet even more agreeable, draw us nearer to an author, and make us happier in him. Why try to discover what the charm of a book is, if only it charm? If I must seek a word that more than any other explains the pleasure which Walton's way of writing gives us, I should say it was its innocency. It refreshes like the society of children. I do not know whether he had humor, but there are passages that suggest it, as where, after quoting Montaigne's delightful description of how he played with his cat, he goes on: "Thus freely speaks Montaigne concerning cats," as if he had taken an undue liberty with them; or where he makes a meteorologist of the crab, that "at a certain age gets into a dead fish's shell, and like a her-

mit dwells there alone studying the wind and weather"; or where he tells us of the palmer-worm, that "he will boldly and disorderly wander up and down, and not endure to be kept to a diet or fixed to a particular place." And what he says of Sanderson — that "he did put on some faint purposes to marry" — would have arrided Lamb. These, if he meant to be droll, have that seeming inadvertence which gives its highest zest to humor and makes the eye twinkle with furtive connivance. Walton's weaknesses, too, must be reckoned among his other attractions. He praises a meditative life, and with evident sincerity; but we feel that he liked nothing so well as good talk. His credulity leaves front and back door invitingly open. For this I rather praise than censure him, since it brought him the chance of a miracle at any odd moment, and this complacency of belief was but a lower form of the same quality of mind that in more serious questions gave him his equanimity of faith. And how persuasively beautiful that equanimity is! Heaven was always as real to him as to us are countries we have seen only in the map, and so near that he caught wafts of the singing there when the wind was in the right quarter. I must not forget Walton's singular and genuine love of Nature and his poetical sympathy with it, less common then than now when "all have got the seed." This love was not in the Ercles vein

such as is now in fashion, but tender and true, and expresses itself not deliberately but in caressing ejaculations, as where he speaks of "the little living creatures with which the sun and summer adorn and beautify the river-banks and meadows . . . whose life, they say, Nature intended not to exceed an hour, and yet that life is made shorter by other flies or by accident." What far-reaching pity in this concluding sigh, and how keen a sense of the sweetness of life, too! In one respect, I think, he is peculiar, — his sensitiveness to odors. In enumerating the recreations of man, he reckons sweet smells among them. It is Venator who says this, to be sure; but in the "Angler" there is absolutely no dramatic sense, and it is always Walton who speaks. A part of our entertainment, indeed, is to see him doubling so many parts and all the while so unmistakably himself.

Walton certainly cannot be called original in the sense that he opened new paths to thought or new vistas to imagination. Such men are rare, but almost as rare are those who have force enough of nature to suffuse whatever they write with their own individuality and to make a thought fresh again and their own by the addition of this indefinable supplement. This constitutes literary originality, and this Walton had. Whatever entered his mind or memory came forth again *plus* Izaak Walton. We have bor-

rowed of the Latin mythology the word "genius" to express certain intellectual powers or aptitudes which we are puzzled to define, so elusive are they. I have already admitted that this term in its ordinary acceptation cannot be applied to Walton. This would imply larger "draughts of intellectual day" than his ever were or could be. For we ordinarily confine it to a single species of power, which seems sometimes (as in Villon, Marlowe, and Poe) wholly dissociated from the rest of the man, and continues to haunt the ruins of him with its superior presence as if it were rather a *genius loci* than the *natale comes qui temperat astrum.* In Walton's case, since a Daimon or a Genius would be too lofty for the business, might we not take the Brownie of our own Northern mythology for the type of such superior endowment as he clearly had? We can fancy him ministered to by such a homely and helpful creature, — not a genius exactly, but answering the purpose sufficiently well, and marking a certain natural distinction in those it singles out for its innocent and sportful companionship. And it brings a blessing also to those who treat it kindly, as Walton did.

Fortunate senex, ergo tua rura manebunt.

MILTON'S "AREOPAGITICA"

MILTON'S "AREOPAGITICA"

1890

DURING the hurly-burly of the English Civil War, which made the bee in every man's bonnet buzz all the more persistently to be let forth, whoever would now write to his newspaper was driven, for want of that safety-valve, to indite a pamphlet, and, as he believed that the fate of what for the moment was deemed the Universe hung on his opinion, was eager to make it public ere the opportune moment should be gone by forever. Every one of these enthusiasts felt as Robert Owen did when he said to Wilberforce, "What, Sir, would you put off the happiness of Mankind till the next session of Parliament?" Every crotchet and whimsey, too, became the nucleus of a sect, and, as if Old England could not furnish enough otherwise-mindedness of her own, New England sent over Rogers and Gorton to help in the confusion of tongues. All these sects, since each singly was in a helpless and often hateful minority, were united in the assertion of their right to freedom of opinion and to the uncurtailed utterance of whatever they fancied that opinion to

be. Many of them, it should seem, could hardly fail in their mental vagabondage to stumble upon the principle of universal toleration, but none discovered anything more novel than that Liberty of Prophesying is good for Me and very bad for Thee. It is remarkable how beautiful the countenance of Toleration always looks in this partial view of it, but it is conceivable that any one of these heterodoxies, once in power and therefore orthodox, would have buckled round all dissenters the strait-waistcoat yet warm from the constraint of more precious limbs. Indeed, this inconsistency, so concise a proof of the consistency of human nature, was illustrated when the General Court of Massachusetts suppressed the first attempt at a newspaper in 1690, and forbade the printing of anything "without licence first obtained from those appointed by the Government to grant the same." Williams, as was natural in one of his amiable temper, was more generous than the rest, but even he lived long enough to learn that there were politico-theological bores in Rhode Island so sedulous and so irritating that they made him doubt the efficacy of his own nostrum, just as the activity of certain domestic insects might make a Brahmin waver as to the sacredness of life in some of its lower organisms.

The prevailing Party had also its jangling minorities whose criticisms and arguments and

complaints it was convenient to suppress, and accordingly Parliament, in June, 1643, passed an Ordinance to restrain unlicensed printing. They had so little learned how to use their newly acquired freedom as to be certain that they could compel other men to the right use of theirs. This is not to be wondered at, for even democracies are a great while in finding out that everything may be left to the instincts of a free people save those instincts themselves, and that these, docile if guided gently, grow mutinous under unskilful driving. Parliament was trying no new experiment, for the press, as if it were an animal likely to run mad and bite somebody at any moment, had been muzzled since Queen Mary's day, but they were trying over again, as men are wont, an experiment that had always failed, and in the nature of things always must fail.

Unwise repression made evasion only the more actively ingenious, and gave it that color of righteousness which is the most dangerous consequence of ill-considered legislation. Counsel was darkened by a swarm of pamphlets surreptitiously brooded in cellars and cocklofts. Fancy sees their authors fluttering round the New Light on dingy quarto wings and learning that Truth incautiously approached can singe as well as shine. Every doctrine inconceivable by instructed men was preached, and the ghost of

every dead and buried heresy did squeak and gibber in the London streets. The right of private misjudgment had been exercised so fantastically on the Scriptures that thoughtful persons were beginning to surmise whether there were not enough explosive material between their covers to shatter any system of government or of society that ever was or will be contrived by man. All this was the natural result of circumstances wholly novel, of a universal ferment of thought or of its many plausible substitutes, enthusiasm, fanaticism, monomania, and every form of mental and moral bewilderment suddenly loosed from the unconscious restraints of traditional order. Those who watched the strange intellectual and ethico-political upheaval in New England fifty years ago will be at no loss for parallels to these phenomena. It was a state of things that should have been left to subside, as it had arisen, through natural causes; but the powers that be always think themselves wiser than the laws of Nature or the axioms of experience.

Two formalities were necessary for the lawful publication of any printed sheet. These were the long-established entry at Stationers' Hall and the license required by the new Ordinance. Men in a hurry to save the world before night, dissident as they might be in other respects, were agreed in resenting these impediments and

delays, and this the more, doubtless, because of the fees they exacted. Milton, who had nothing in common with such men except the belief in a divine mission, had in publishing his controversial tracts quietly ignored both the rights of the Stationers and the injunctions of the Ordinance. As respects the Stationers' Company, he should have complied with the law, since entry in their register was the only security for copyright, and he believed, as he tells us in his "Iconoclastes," that "every author should have the property in his work reserved to him after death as well as living." It was the infringement of their copyrights by piratical printers during the general confusion, which seems first to have moved the Stationers' Company to protest against the general violation of the laws controlling the press. Milton's tract on Divorce, published, like others of his before, without license or registry, had made a scandal even among those who regarded a breach of the Seventh Commandment as the only effective liniment for the sprains and bruises of matrimony. And indeed Milton had ventured very far in that dangerous direction where liberty is apt to shade imperceptibly into the warmer hues of license, though not so cynically far as Lady Mary Wortley Montagu afterwards went in her proposed septennial rearrangement. The Stationers seized the opportunity to denounce him

twice by name, first to a committee of the Commons, and then to a committee of the Lords. Nothing seems to have come of their complaints, and indeed the attention of both houses must have been too much absorbed by more serious warfare to find time for engaging in this Battle of the Books. Nothing came of them, that is to say, on the part of Parliament, but on Milton's came the "Areopagitica."

We are indebted to the painstaking and fruitful researches of Mr. Masson for a more precise knowledge of the particulars which bring this tract into closer and clearer relations with the personal interests of Milton, and some such nearer concern was always needed as a motive to give his prose, in which, as he says, he worked only with his left hand, its fullest energy and vivacity. Nor is this the case with his prose only. It is true also of his verse in those passages which are the most characteristically his own. Perhaps he himself was dimly conscious of this, for in his "Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce" he says that "when points of difficulty are to be discussed, appertaining to the removal of unreasonable wrong and burthen from the perplexed life of our brothers, it is incredible how cold, how dull, and how far from all fellow feeling we are without the spur of self-concernment." In the "Areopagitica," he was not only advocating certain general principles, but plead-

ing his own cause. The largeness of the theme absolves the egotism of the motive, while this again adds fervor to the argument and penetration to the voice of the advocate. The "Areopagitica" is the best known and most generally liked of Milton's prose writings, because it is the only one concerning whose subject the world has more nearly come to an agreement. In all the others except the tract concerning Education, and the "History of Britain" in its first edition, there are embers of controversy which the ashes of two centuries cover but have not cooled.

There is a passage in his "Second Defence" where Milton speaks of the "Areopagitica" as one section of a tripartite scheme which he had thought out "to the promotion of real and substantial liberty." After giving a list of his writings on matters ecclesiastic, he says, "When, therefore, I perceived that there were three species of liberty without which scarcely any life can be completely led, religious, domestic or private, and civil, as I had already written concerning the first, and the magistrates were strenuously active concerning the third, I took to myself the second or domestic. And, as this seemed tripartite, if marriage, if the education of children were to be as they should, if there should be liberty of philosophizing, I set forth my opinion not only concerning the rightful contracting of marriage, but also the dissolving

thereof, if it should be necessary. . . . I then treated more briefly of the education of children in a single small work. . . . And lastly concerning the freeing of the press, lest the judgment of true and false, of what should be published, what suppressed, should be in the power of a few men of little learning and of vulgar judgment, . . . I wrote in the proper style of an oration the 'Areopagitica.'"

The sub-title of this work accordingly is "a speech for the liberty of unlicenced printing," but it is much more than this. It is a plea in behalf of freedom of research in all directions (*libertas philosophandi*), and there is in it implicitly the doctrine of universal toleration. But Milton's intention had no such scope as that, for it is plain from what he says elsewhere that he would have drawn the line on this side of Popery, of atheism, and most probably of whatever was immediately inconvenient to so firm a believer as he was in the infallibility of John Milton. Such was the irony of Fate that he himself a few years later became a censor of the press. It was perhaps with an eye to this comic property of the whirligig of Time that he wrote the passage just quoted from the "Second Defence," in which it is implied that some things should be suppressed. But Milton was not inconsistent with himself, however he might be so with the principles advocated in the "Areopa-

gitica," as those who have studied his character know. He is never weary of insisting on the Tacitean distinction between liberty and license, and in his "History of Britain" says admirably well "that liberty hath a sharp and double edge fit only to be handled by just and virtuous men: to bad and dissolute it becomes a mischief unwieldy in their own hands." And if consistency be a jewel, as the proverb affirms, yet it can only show its best lustre in a suitable setting of circumstances. Milton was always a champion of freedom as he understood it, a freedom "not to be won from without, but from within, in the right conduct and administration of life." Toland speaks of him as favoring "the erection of a perfect Democracy," but in truth no man was ever farther from being a democrat in the modern sense than he. The government that he preferred would have been that of a Council chosen by a strictly limited body of constituents and this indirectly, their function being only to choose electors who again should make choice of a smaller body, and so on through "a third or fourth sifting and refining of exactest choice." His scheme aimed at the establishment of something like a Venetian Republic without a doge, his experience of Cromwell apparently having made any monocratic devices distasteful to him. For the "rude multitude," as he calls it, he had an unqualified contempt, and had no more belief

in the divine right of majorities than in that of tyrants. Undoubtedly when a man of Milton's temperament advocated free speech it was with the unconscious mental reservation that it should be on the right side, or, at any rate, that it should be speech and not jargon.

There is no trustworthy evidence that the "Areopagitica" produced any immediate effect, unless it may have been indirectly by leavening some small fraction of the sluggish lump of what we should now call public opinion. Interests more immediate and pressing must soon have crowded it out of mind, and in a few years the returning flood of royalism covered it, with the other prose works of Milton, in a deepening ooze of oblivion. So utterly must it have been forgotten that in 1693 Charles Blount boldly plagiarized it under the new title of "A Just Vindication of Learning and the Liberty of the Press by Philopatris," in which he had the impudence to quote a passage from the very book he was rifling with the condescending remark, "Herein I agree with Mr. Milton," as if it were an exception to his general way of thinking. Whether the tract in this vulgarized form helped forward the cause in behalf of which it was written is matter of conjecture. None of Blount's pamphlets could have had any considerable vent, for when Gildon published the "Miscellaneous Works of Charles

Blount, Esq.," it is evident that he merely bound together the several pieces which made up the volume, putting new title-pages to all save one of them, but leaving the old pagination of each. There must therefore have been enough unsold copies to serve the needs of this edition. Be this as it may, Blount, by means of a scurvy trick played on the licenser, Bohun, — a trick one is half inclined to forgive because of its genuine humor and its beneficent results, — was the immediate cause of events which led to the final abandonment of the licensing system. A full account of the affair may be found in Macaulay's "History," where the facts were for the first time unearthed. Macaulay, as is his wont in dealing with men whom he dislikes, blackens the character of Blount more than it deserves, and underrates his ability. He was not an atheist, though, for the point of the historian's antithesis, he ought to have been, and he certainly had more than the talents of a third-rate pamphleteer. He did not live to see the triumph of his cause. It would be pleasant to associate Milton even indirectly with that triumph, as we might if we could suppose that the "Areopagitica" had first awakened Blount's interest in the freedom of the press. But in point of fact his quarrel with the licensers was an old one, and he merely picked up Milton's tract as he would a handy stone to throw at the

dog he was pelting. After an interval of forty years the "Areopagitica" was reprinted with a preface by Thomson the poet, when it was proposed once more to put a bridle on the press.

It cannot be said that the prose works of Milton have ever been in any sense popular, or read by any public much more numerous than the proof-reader. So far as they are concerned, Milton has had his wish and his audience has only been too few, whether fit or not. They do not appear to have tempted even the omnivorous Coleridge in his maturer years, though traces of their influence may be surmised in his earlier prose. It is curious that no notes upon them are to be found in his "Literary Remains," and but a single brief remark in his "Table-Talk," to the effect that Milton's style was better in Latin than in English. I find no evident signs of contagion from them in any great writers of English except Burke, who has caught both their qualities and their defects, unless, indeed, the likeness spring from their both having modelled themselves on Cicero. Since 1698, when Toland published the first edition of them in Holland, they have been only four times reprinted. Nor is this want of interest to be explained by the fact that their matter is mainly contentious and polemical, for they discuss questions whose roots strike deeply into the bedrock of politics and morals, and where they find a

crevice widen it into an irreconcilable cleavage of opinion. The reason must be sought, then, not so much in their substance as in their method and manner. They are indeed for the most part the impassioned harangues of a supremely eloquent man, full of matter, but careless of the form in which he utters it; rich in learning, but too intent on the constant display of it with the cumbrous prodigality of one to whom such wealth is new. He had no doubt a manner of his own, and boasts that by means of it the authorship of his treatise on Divorce was detected when printed anonymously. And in his "Reason of Church-Government urged against Prelaty" he says, "Whether aught was imposed me by them that had the overlooking, or betaken to of mine own choice in English or other tongue, prosing or versing, but chiefly by this latter, the style, by certain vital signs it had, was likely to live." Time has proved this to be true of his verse, but not so of his prose. For in truth his prose has no style in the higher sense, as, for instance, the "Religio Medici" has. There are passages, to be sure, which for richness of texture, harmony of tone, and artistic distribution of parts, can hardly be matched in our language, but that equable distinction which is the constant note of his verse is wanting. A sentence builded majestically with every help of art and imagination too often thrusts

heavenward from a huddle of vulgar pentices such as used to cluster about mediæval cathedrals. Never was such inequality. It is as if some transcendent voice in mid soar of the Kyrie Eleison should drop into a comic song. His sentences are often loutish and difficult, in controversy he is brutal, and at any the most inopportune moment capable of an incredible coarseness. Let a single instance from his "Reformation in England" suffice, where he speaks of "that queasy temper of lukewarmness that gives a vomit to God himself." Jeremy Taylor is often coarse, but never to the degree of disgust. Strangely enough, too, Milton is careless of euphony, seeming to prefer words not only low but harsh, and such cacophonous superlatives as "virtuousest," "viciousest," "sheepishest," even making the last two hiss in the same sentence. Perhaps he is at his worst when he fancies that he is being playful and humorous (dangerous tight-ropes for an insupportable foot like his), and, as he says in his "Animadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence," "mixes here and there a grim laughter such as may appear at the same time in an austere visage." Grim laughter it is indeed. Too often also he blusters, and we are forced to condone in him, as he in Luther, "how far he gave way to his own fervent mind." It does not satisfy us to excuse these faults as common to the time, for

Milton himself has taught us to expect of him that choice of language and that faultless marshalling of it which is of all time, and sometimes even in his prose there are periods which have all the splendor, all the dignity, and all the grave exhilaration of his verse. Some virtue of his singing-robes seems left, as if they had not long been doffed.

As a master of harmony and of easily maintained elevation in English blank verse Milton has no rival. He was skilled in many tongues and many literatures; he had weighed the value of words, whether for sound or sense, or where the two may be of mutual help. He surely, if any, was what he calls "a mint-master of language." He must have known, if any ever knew, that even in the "sermo pedestris" there are yet great differences in gait, that prose is governed by laws of modulation as exact if not so exacting as those of verse, and that it may conjure with words as prevailingly. The music is secreted in it, yet often more potent in suggestion than that of any verse which is not of utmost mastery. We hearken after it as to a choir in the side chapel of some cathedral heard faintly and fitfully across the long desert of the nave, now pursuing and overtaking the cadences, only to have them grow doubtful again and elude the ear before it has ceased to throb with them. A prose sentence, then, only fulfils

its entire function when, as in some passages of the English version of the Old Testament, its rhythm so keeps time and tune with the thought or feeling that the reader is guided to the accentuation of the writer as securely as if in listening to his very voice. The fifth chapter of the Book of Judges is crowded with these triumphs of well-measured words. Are we not made to see as with our eyes the slow collapse of Sisera's body, as life and will forsake it, and then to hear his sudden fall at last in the dull thud of "he fell down dead," where every word sinks lower and lower, to stop short with the last? There are many noble periods in Milton's prose, and they are noble in a way where he is without competitors, for surely he is the most eloquent of Englishmen. But there are a half-dozen men, either his contemporaries, or nearly so, whose prose is far more evenly good than his and above all moves with a practised ease in which his is wholly wanting. He prevails even with the ear less often than Browne, and almost never stirs the imagination through the ear as Browne has the art to do. He is too eagerly intent on his argument to linger over the artifices by which it might be more winningly set forth. He has been taxed with Latinism, and oddly enough by Dr. Johnson, who I feel sure could not have read any one of his tracts, unless it were the "Areopagitica," for very wrath. He has, it

is true, some Latin constructions and uses a few words (like "assert," "prevaricator," "disoblige") in their radical rather than in their derivative meaning, but on the whole his language is less vitiated with verbs taken directly from the Latin than that of most of the writers coeval with him. The much overrated Feltham, for instance, "formicates" with them, as he would have called it, and one might almost learn Latin by reading the "Vulgar Errors." It is Milton's English words rather that seem foreign to us, such as "disgospel," "disworship," "disalleige," "lossless," "natureless;" or "underfoot" and "lifeblood" used as adjectives. Sometimes he ventures on what would now be called an Americanism, as where he tells us of a "loud stench." But the most obvious defect of his prose is, as I have hinted, its want of equanimity.

He is not so truly a writer of great prose as a great man writing in prose, and it is really Milton that we seek there more than anything else. He is great enough when we find him to repay a thousandfold what the search may have cost us. And when we meet him at his best, there is something in his commerce that fortifies the mind as only contact with a great character can. He is then a perpetual fountain of high-mindedness. In contest with an adversary he is brutally willing to strike below the belt, and shows

as little magnanimity or fairness as the average editor of an American newspaper in dealing with a political opponent. Even Voltaire, hardened as were his own controversial nerves, was shocked by the nature of the weapons which Milton was eager to employ against Morus. But when he recovers possession of his true self, he is so at home among those things that endure, so amply conversant with whatever is of good report, so intimately conscious of a divine presence in a world of doubt and failure and disillusion, and of those spiritual ministrations symbolized by the prophet in the wilderness, that we listen to him as Adam to the angel, and the voice lingers not only in the ear but in the life. Mr. James Grant in his "Newspaper Press" says, drolly enough, of Coleridge, that "there was to the latest hour of his life a tendency, which could not be sufficiently deplored, to soar into regions of unrevealed truth." It is this lift in Milton, rare enough among men, this undying instinct to soar and tempt us to venture our weaker wing, that gives an incomparable efficacy to those parts of his writing in prose that are best inspired. Here we breathe a mountain air in which, as Rousseau says, "à mesure qu'on approche des régions éthérées l'âme contracte quelque chose de leur inaltérable pureté." Nay, even while we are trudging wearily over the low and marish stretches of his discourse, there rises suddenly from before

our feet a winged phrase that mounts and carols like a lark, luring the mind with it to ampler spaces and a serener atmosphere. It is no small education for the nobler part of us to consort with one of such temper that he could say of himself with truth, "God intended to prove me, whether I durst take up alone a rightful cause against a world of disesteem, and found I durst." And it is the breath of this spirit that pours through the "Areopagitica" as through a trumpet, sounding the charge against whatever is base and recreant, whether in the world about us or in the ambush of our own natures.

THE PROGRESS OF THE WORLD

THE PROGRESS OF THE WORLD[1]

1886

AS at noon every day the captain of a ship tries to learn his whereabouts of the sun, that he may know how much nearer he is to his destined port, and how far he may have been pushed away from his course by the last gale or drifted from it by unsuspected currents, so on board this ship of ours, the Earth, in which that abstract entity we call the World is a passenger, we strive to ascertain, from time to time, with such rude instruments as we possess, what progress we have made and in what direction. It is rather by a kind of dead-reckoning than by taking the height of the Sun of Righteousness, which should be our sea-mark, that we accomplish this, for such celestial computations are gone somewhat out of fashion. It is only a few scholars and moralists in their silent and solitary observatories that any longer

[1] This paper was written for an introduction to a work entitled *The World's Progress* (published by Messrs. Gately & O'Gorman, Boston), in which the advance in various departments of intellectual and material activity was described and illustrated.

make account of them. We mostly put faith in our statisticians, and the longer they make their columns of figures, the bigger their sums of population, of exports and imports, and of the general output of fairy-gold, the more stupidly are we content. Nor are we over-nice in considering the direction of our progress, if only we be satisfied that to-day we are no longer where we were yesterday. Yet the course of this moral thing we call the World is controlled by laws as certain and immutable and by influences as subtle as those which govern with such exquisite precision that of the physical thing we call the Earth, could we only find them out. It has ever been the business of wise men to trace and to illustrate them, of prudent men to allow for and to seek an alliance with them, of good men to conform their lives with them.

Between those observations taken on shipboard and ours there is also this other difference, that those refer always to a fixed, external standard, while for these the standard is internal and fluctuating, so that the point toward which the World is making progress shall seem very different according to the temperament, the fortunes, nay, even the very mood or age of the observer. It may be remarked that Mr. Gladstone and Lord Tennyson are very far from being at one in their judgment of it. Old men in general love not change, and are suspicious of

it; while young men are impatient of present conditions and of the slowness of movement to escape from them. Yet change is the very condition of our being and thriving, deliberation and choice that of all secure foothold on the shaky stepping-stones by which we cross the torrent of Circumstances. Is it in the power of any man, whatever his age, to arrive at that equilibrium of temper and judgment without which no even probable estimate of where we are and whither we are tending is possible? Certainly no such trustworthy estimate can be deduced from our inward consciousness or from our outward environments; nor can we, with all our statistics, make ourselves independent of the inextinguishable lamps of heaven. We pile our figures one upon another, even as the builders of Babel their bricks, and the heaven we hope to attain is as far away as ever. It is moral forces that, more than all others, govern the direction and regulate the advance of our affairs, and these forces are as calculable as the Trade-Winds or the Gulf-Stream.

And yet, though this be so, one of the greatest lessons taught by History is the close relation between the moral and the physical well-being of man. The case of the Ascetics makes but a seeming exception to this law, for they voluntarily denied themselves that bodily comfort which is the chief object of human endeavor,

and renunciation is the wholesomest regimen of the soul. If we cannot strike a precise balance and say that the World is better because it is richer now than it was three centuries, or even half a century, ago, we may at least comfort ourselves with the belief that this, if not demonstrably true, is more than probable, and that there is less curable unhappiness, less physical suffering, and therefore less crime, than heretofore. Yet there is no gain without corresponding loss. If the sum of happiness be greater, yet the amount falling to each of us in the division of it seems to be less. It is noteworthy that literature, as it becomes more modern, becomes also more melancholy, and that he who keeps most constantly to the minor key of hopelessness, or strikes the deepest note of despair, is surest of at least momentary acclaim. Nay, do not some sources of happiness flow less full or cease to flow as settlement and sanitation advance, even as the feeders of our streams are dried by the massacre of our forests? We cannot have a new boulevard in Florence unless at sacrifice of those ancient city walls in which inspiring memories had for so many ages built their nests and reared their broods of song. Did not the plague, brooded and hatched in those smotherers of fresh air, the slits that thoroughfared the older town, give us the "Decameron"? And was the price too high? We cannot widen and ventilate the

streets of Rome without grievous wrong to the city that we loved, and yet it is well to remember that this city too had built itself out of and upon the ruins of that nobler Rome which gave it all the wizard hold it had on our imagination. The Social Science Congress rejoices in changes that bring tears to the eyes of the painter and the poet. Alas! we cannot have a world made expressly for Mr. Ruskin, nor keep it if we could, more 's the pity! Are we to confess, then, that the World grows less lovable as it grows more convenient and comfortable? that beauty flees before the step of the Social Reformer as the wild pensioners of Nature before the pioneers? that the lion will lie down with the lamb sooner than picturesqueness with health and prosperity? Morally, no doubt, we are bound to consider the Greatest Good of the Greatest Number, but there is something in us, *vagula*, *blandula*, that refuses, and rightly refuses, to be Benthamized; that asks itself in a timid whisper, "Is it so certain, then, that the Greatest Good is also the Highest? and has it been to the Greatest or to the Smallest Number that man has been most indebted?" For myself, while I admit, because I cannot help it, certain great and manifest improvements in the general well-being, I cannot stifle a suspicion that the Modern Spirit, to whose tune we are marching so cheerily, may have borrowed of the Pied Piper of

Hamelin the instrument whence he draws such bewitching music. Having made this confession, I shall do my best to write in a becoming spirit the Introduction that is asked of me, and to make my antiquated portico as little unharmonious as I can with the modern building to which it leads.

But, before we enter upon a consideration of the Progress of the World, we must take a glance at that of the Globe on whose surface what we call the World came into being, rests, and has grown to what we see. This Globe is not, as we are informed, a perfect sphere, but slightly flattened at the poles; and in like manner this World is by no means a perfect world, though it be not quite so easy, as in the other case, to say where or why it is not. For it there is no moon-mirror in which to study its own profile. Perhaps it would be wise to ask ourselves now and then whether the fault may not be in the nature of man, after all, rather than anywhere else. So far as he is a social animal, that is, an animal liable in various ways to make his neighbor uncomfortable, it is certainly prudent to remember always that, though his natural impulses may be restrained, or guided, or even improved, yet that they are always there and ready to take the bit in their teeth at the first chance which offers. This might save us a pretty long bill for quack nostrums, since, though no astronomer has ever

volunteered to rectify the Earth's outline, there is hardly a man who does not fancy that the World would become and continue just what it should be, if only his patent specific could once be fairly tried. Quacks of genius like Rousseau have sometimes persuaded to the experiment of their panaceas, but always with detriment to the patient's constitution. We are long in learning the lesson of Medea's cauldron.

The Earth, fortunately, is beyond the reach of our wisdom, and, like the other shining creatures of God, whirls her sphere and brings about her appointed seasons in happy obedience to laws for which she is not responsible and which she cannot tinker. Beginning as a nebulous nucleus of fiery gases, a luminous thistle-down blown about the barren wastes of space, then slowly shrinking, compacting, growing solid, and cooling at the rind, our planet was forced into a system with others like it, some smaller, some vastly greater than itself, and, in its struggle with overmastering forces, having the Moon wrenched from it to be its night-lamp and the timer of its tides. Then slowly, slowly, it became capable of sustaining living organisms, rising by long and infinitesimal gradations, symbolically rehearsed again, it is said, by the child in embryo, from the simplest to the more complex, from merely animated matter to matter informed with Soul, and, in Man, sometimes controlled by reason. The

imagination grows giddy as it looks downwards along the rounds of the ladder lost, save a short stretch of it, in distance below, by which life has climbed from the zoöphyte to Plato, to Newton, to Michael Angelo, to Shakespeare. During the inconceivable æons implied in these processes, the Earth has gone through many vicissitudes, unrecorded save in the gigantic runes of Geology, the *graffiti* of Pluto and Neptune, which man, having painfully fashioned a key to them, is spelling out letter by letter, arranging as syllables, as words, as sentences, and at last reading as coherent narrative. Every one of these records is the mortuary inscription of an Epoch or a Cycle, but the last word of every one is *Resurgam*. They point backwards to such endless files of centuries that the poor six thousand years of our hieratic reckoning are dwindled to a hair-breadth, and our students of the rocks and stars, like the drunken man of Esdras, disdain the smaller change of temporal computation, and rattle off their millions as carelessly as Congress in dealing with our national strongbox. Nor has this sudden accession of secular wealth made them any more careful of the humbler interests of their neighbors than it is wont to make other *nouveaux riches*. A malignant astronomer has lately done his best to prove that the sun's stock of fuel cannot hold out more than seventeen millions of years. Is, then, that assurance of an

earthly immortality which has hitherto sustained poets through cold and hunger and Philistine indifference, to be fobbed off at last with so beggarly a pittance as this? Let us hope for better things.

Though these memories of the rocks and mountains and ocean-beds seem to belittle and abbreviate man, yet it is nothing so; for, till he came, the universe, so far as we can explore and know it, had neither eyes, nor ears, nor tongue, nor any dimmest consciousness of its own being. This antiquity has been the gift of modern science; and the brain of man has been the hour-glass that gave to these regardless sands of Time, running to waste through the dreaming fingers of idle Oblivion, the measure and standard of their own duration. It is the cunning of man that has delineated the great dial-plate of the heavens; his mind that looks before and after, and can tell the unwitting stars where they were at any moment of the unmeasured past, where they will be at any moment of the unmeasurable future. Though he cannot loose the bands of Orion, he can weigh them to the uttermost scruple; though he cannot bind the sweet influences of the Pleiades, he knows upon what eyes of mortal men they are shed, and at what moment, though by himself unseen. Shut in his study, he can look at the New Moon with lovers at the Antipodes.

If Science have made men seem ephemeral as midges, she has conferred a great benefit on humanity by endowing collective Man with something of that longæval dignity which she has compelled the individual to renounce. He is no longer the creature of yesterday, but the crowning product and heir of ages so countless as to make Time a sharer in the grandeur of that immensity to which Astronomy has dilated the bounds of Space. And who shall reproach her with having put far away from us the homely and neighborly heaven of unlettered faith, when she has opened such a playground for the outings of speculation, and noted in her guide-book so many spacious inns for the refreshment of the disembodied spirit on its travels, so many and so wondrous *magnalia* for its curiosity and instruction? To me it seems not unreasonable to find a reinforcement of optimism, a renewal of courage and hope, in the modern theory that man has mounted to what he is from the lowest step of potentiality, through toilsome grades of ever-expanding existence, even though it have been by a spiral stairway, mainly dark or dusty, with loopholes at long intervals only, and these granting but a narrow and one-sided view. The protoplasmic germ to which it was incalculable promotion to become a stomach, has it not, out of the resources with which God had endowed it, been

able to develop the brain of Darwin, who should write its biography? Even Theology is showing signs that she is getting ready to exchange a man who fell in Adam for a man risen out of nonentity and still rising through that aspiring virtue in his veins which is spurred onwards and upwards by the very inaccessibility of what he sees above him.

But I have kept Man cooling his heels too long in these antechambers of his larger life. He becomes more interesting to us, and we are more willing to admit his claim of kinship with us, in proportion as he has entered upon a larger share of his inheritance. His condition of nonage and apprenticeship was unconscionably long; but there was no escape, since it was Nature that had drawn his indentures. Till he had learned to write, what we seem to know of him is hypothetical merely, and he was dull at his pothooks and trammels. The book which you have before you enables you to see, in brief but sufficient compendium, the advances made by mankind in the various lines of human enterprise and development, which, leading away from a single centre, gradually enlarge the circumference of his activity and the horizon of his intelligent desires and hopes. We begin with Man where our records of him begin, in the rude memorials of himself he has unwittingly left us. Fancy and conjecture may find ample

and instructive entertainment if they try to conceive him as he was at first, — a dweller in the natural shelter of caverns, fashioning, on rainy days, spear-heads and arrow-tips of flint, or fishing-hooks of the bones of the very prey that was to be their victim. Perhaps the need of even a natural roof implies that he had already learned, as no other animal has ever learned, to cover Nature's waterproof suit with some kind of clothing. Next, we follow him as he emerges from the isolation of Family to the wider relations of Tribe, Nation, Community, State. Before even the simplest of these latter organizations could be possible, he must have invented language; and this could have been no improvisation. Indeed, would we conceive how slow his progress must have been, we have only to consider the multitude of inventions, like the wheel, the lever, the bow, the sling, every one of which a child now uses — perhaps by hereditary instinct — with as little forethought as if they were natural limbs. Yet all these and countless others waited till a genius came along to make them servants of man; and surely Nature is sparing of genius. He was a Kepler who first counted the fingers of one hand; he a Galileo who added those of the other, and gave us the decimal system; he a Newton who divined the possibility of numbering his toes also and arriving at the score. By and by

another great inventor devised the tally, and property in flocks and herds, the first riches, became secure because numerable and matter of record. Nay, if we consider that every man we meet walking is a miracle (for it is nothing less than this so to evade the law of gravitation as to balance himself on one foot at every step), and that every infant must give two or three years to the acquiring of this art, we shall the more easily reconcile ourselves with the prolonged periods of preparation and training which our present civilization presupposes.

Pope has fancied man a pupil of the lower animals, learning of the little nautilus to sail; and no doubt it is a fruitful characteristic of man that he is clever enough to take and to profit by those nods and winks that are thrown away upon the blind horses of creation. These, too, — if we are to suppose him to stand in need of them, he is capable of expanding and perfecting till the original germ be lost in the medley of variation and accretion. This skill in emendation, this faculty of improving on his models and achievements, is what happily distinguishes him. The bee builds as he began in Eden, — a perfect architect from the first, — only accommodating the structure of his cells to circumstances when he cannot help it. The nautilus spreads his cobweb sail as the first navigator of his race spread his. The tradition of the nat-

ural caverns in which his ancestor found shelter and warmth may have taught the troglodyte to burrow in cliffs of softer stone ; but the first tree under which man sought refuge from a shower must have read him a more convincing lecture on the advantages of a permanent roof than any that Vitruvius or Palladio could have furnished him. The first tree-trunk he saw floating downstream might well be his earliest lesson in shipbuilding ; the first wooden bowl dropped into the brook by a careless girl might suggest to some master mind the advantage of hollowing the log, to give it buoyancy, balance, and capacity. But, from the mere conception of shelter, man was beckoned onwards by the longing to complete and crown use with beauty, till, from the seed of the wattled hovel, sprang at last, in supreme loveliness, the Parthenon and the Cathedral, in architrave or arch, still filially renewing the idealized features of the primitive ancestor. The rude dugout or coracle of the primæval mariner has grown into a palace on the sea, a city on the inconstant billows dancing, that carries its sails and fair winds in its own entrails, and pushes prevailingly against the very breast of the storm.

Man is the only animal that has given proof of invention in the highest sense, that is, not as a mere fence against the blasts of discomfort, or as a lightener of his drudgery, but as a minister

of beauty ; the only one who of Nature's chains has made his ornaments, and of her obstacles the stepping-stones of his advance. Other creatures show, or seem to show, pleasure in bright colors, or sensibility to modulated sounds ; but only Man has combined and harmonized those into picture and these into music. The eye of the ox is a placid mirror of the meadow into which he gazes, unconscious as the dull pool that images the magnificence of sky and mountain or the various grace of growth upon its borders. The eye of man is a window, not to the sense only but to the soul behind the sense ; it has memory and desire, nor will let him rest till he have reproduced and made permanent some semblance of what engaged his fancy or wakened his imagination. Even among cave-dwellers, we find, scratched on the bones from which they had gnawed the flesh, outlines of the mastodon and of a combat of stags, — crude endeavors after art, deeply suggestive, in their intention, of some impossible Snyders or Landseer beguiling the impulse he could neither stifle nor satisfy.

Though he cannot create, man reflects the Creative Power through his sense of Form, Order, and Proportion, — the abstractions by which that Power is most vividly manifested. He has the supreme faculty of organization. Multiply the bison indefinitely, and the result is still a

herd: multiply man, and he organizes himself, arranging himself, more or less rudely, by some process of moral gravitation, in a form of polity, or groping clumsily in search thereof; he cannot long remain mob, even if he would. Other creatures are endowed with that kind of crystallized reason which we call instinct. In the highest types of man alone does reason continue ductile and versatile, enabling him to supplement or multiply his natural organs and powers by artificial contrivances, and thus to realize the dreams and fables of his remote progenitors. We write no more fairy-tales, because the facts of our every-day lives are more full of marvel than they. Other creatures have curiosity; but it stops short in the vagueness of wonder, nor pushes on, like that of man, to discovery. Other animals stare; man looks. Many are gregarious, some social, and some — as ants, bees, and beavers — dwell in communities and socialize their labor; man only has devised a society which, imperfect in many ways and wasteful as it is, contains within itself the elements of growth and amelioration. It is a suggestive fact that, within the historic period, no new animal has been tamed to the service or companionship of man. Only he can record his memory, and so fund his experience for the benefit of his posterity; only he is capable of being bored, — the sharpest spur to enterprise, to action, to the

contempt of life. Captaincy among the lower animals means superior strength and the cheap courage that comes of it: among men it means brains, it means, above all, character; and they have contrived, by making Law supreme, to make all men alike strong. Dogs know when they have done wrong, but their moral standard is the displeasure of their master; man has invented, or, at any rate, developed, conscience, — the only infallible detective, the only impeccable judge, the only executioner with whom no reprieve avails. The endeavor has been made to distinguish man from the brutes by defining him as the only animal that laughs, that has learned the uses of fire, and what not. We might be tempted to call him the only animal who thinks he is thinking when he is merely ruminating. But I conceive his truer and higher distinction to be that he alone has the gift, or, rather, is laid under the ennobling necessity, of conceiving and formulating an ideal; which means that he alone may be the servant and steward of the Divine Beauty.

In these volumes the reader will find all that he can reasonably wish to know about prehistoric or historic man, and about the floating globe on which he dwells, treated at sufficient length by competent persons, each dealing with that part of the subject to which his special studies had been devoted. He will learn how

far and in what directions man has advanced, how much of his inheritance he has subdued and occupied, and with what results. He will learn what is meant by the familiar phrase that man is "the heir of all the ages," and how nobly exacting are the duties and privileges implied in it. He will observe how certain races have been endowed with special qualities and aptitudes; as, the Greeks for art, in its most widely inclusive sense; the Jews, for commerce and (strange paradox) for the higher divinations of the soul; the Romans, for civil and military administration; our own, for polity and the planting of colonies. He will trace back astronomy to Chaldæa, theogony to Babylonia, and metaphysical speculation to India. In certain directions he will find no advance, as in literature and sculpture, since the Greeks; in ethics, since the Sermon on the Mount. He will see some races that have been seemingly able to spin a civilization, as the spider his web, out of their own entrails, and yet none that has not borrowed, few which have not a tradition that the seeds of culture were brought to them from abroad. This will lead him to think how large a part commerce must have had in the civilizing process, and that, before commerce was possible, communities must have existed of sufficient duration and stability to produce more than they could consume, and therefore to desire profitable exchanges. It

should be encouraging, then, to see, as we now see, the carrier-doves of commerce spreading their white wings over every ocean and every land-locked sea. For, if they sometimes bear with them the germs of contagious social evils, they bear also those of good; and we should despair of humanity did we not believe that these strike a deeper and more enduring root, till they crowd out their noxious rivals and occupy all the soil. But if the adventurer into strange lands too often carry darkness with him, he seldom fails to bring back light; for nothing is more certain than that the mind widens with its wider circuit, and is liberalized by contact with various races, religions, and forms of civilization. It was said of old, "Many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased." We have a striking instance of this in the Crusaders, who, though they did not realize their dream of permanent conquest, came home, if not more human, at least more cosmopolitan, which is a long stride towards becoming so, and unwittingly brought with them the seeds of that freer thinking which slowly conquered for Man that freedom to think which was to emancipate Europe and make America possible. But we should always bear in mind the wise saying of Goethe, that "whatever emancipates our minds without giving us the mastery of ourselves is destructive." And, if Commerce have enriched

us in many ways, both spiritually and materially, I cannot let it go without a sigh for the sentimental wrong it has unconsciously done us in bringing about that prosaic uniformity in the costume, both of mind and body, which unhappily distinguishes the modern from that ancient world, to print whose obituary, one might say, was the first employment of Gutenberg's types.

If the history of the world show us Man slowly rising to a higher conception and more adequate fulfilment of his destiny, it also shows us the sadder spectacle of empires that have perished and now lie buried under the decay of their own monuments. Worse than this, it shows us that higher forms of civilization may be overwhelmed and supplanted by lower forms; that some families of men, like the pure negro, are incapable of civilization from their own resources, and relapse into savagery when left to themselves, as in Hayti. Nay, members even of the higher and more self-sufficing races are never beyond danger of this relapse when the wholesome influences and restraints of organized society are withdrawn. Examples of this are only too common; as, in armies after a rout, in great cities under the paralysis of pestilence, and in the mutineers of the Bounty. The last instance supplies us also with a consoling illustration of the force of hereditary impulse and the value of character; since the sole survivor, John Adams, was able,

with the Bible behind him, to piece together again the fragments of society into a patriarchal community that revived the legend of Arcadia. The fact that civilization is, after all, built on so sandy a foundation as the nature of man, that it is exposed to all the storms that lie in wait for the fortunes of man, should make us more sensible of that duty of unremitting vigilance which is needful for its safeguard.

In casting the figure of the World's future, many new elements, many disturbing forces, must be taken into account. First of all is Democracy, which, within the memory of men yet living, has assumed almost the privilege of a Law of Nature, and seems to be making constant advances towards universal dominion. Its ideal is to substitute the interest of the many for that of the few as the test of what is wise in polity and administration, and the opinion of the many for that of the few as the rule of conduct in public affairs. That the interest of the many is the object of whatever social organization man has hitherto been able to effect seems unquestionable; whether their opinions are so safe a guide as the opinions of the few, and whether it will ever be possible, or wise if possible, to substitute the one for the other in the hegemony of the World, is a question still open for debate. Whether there was ever such a thing as a Social Contract or not, as has been somewhat otiosely discussed, this, at

least, is certain, — that the basis of all Society is the putting of the force of all at the disposal of all, by means of some arrangement assented to by all, for the protection of all, and this under certain prescribed forms. This has always been, consciously or unconsciously, the object for which men have striven, and which they have more or less clumsily accomplished. The State — some established Order of Things, under whatever name — has always been, and must always be, the supremely important thing; because in it the interests of all are invested, by it the duties of all imposed and exacted. In point of fact, though it be often strangely overlooked, the claim to any selfish hereditary privilege because you are born a man is as absurd as the same claim because you are born a noble. In a last analysis, there is but one natural right; and that is the right of superior force. This primary right, having been found unworkable in practice, has been deposited, for the convenience of all, with the State, from which, as the maker, guardian, and executor of Law, and as a common fund for the use of all, the rights of each are derived, and man thus made as free as he can be without harm to his neighbor. It was this surrender of private jurisdiction which made civilization possible, and keeps it so. The abrogation of the right of private war has done more to secure the rights of man, properly understood, — and, conse-

quently, for his well-being, — than all the theories spun from the brain of the most subtle speculator, who, finding himself cramped by the actual conditions of life, fancies it as easy to make a better world than God intended, as it has been proved difficult to keep in running order the world that man has made out of his fragmentary conception of the divine thought. The great peril of democracy is that the assertion of private right should be pushed to the obscuring of the superior obligation of public duty.

The pluralizing in his single person, by the Editor of the Newspaper, of the offices once divided among the Church, the University, and the Courts of Law, is one of the most striking phenomena of modern times in democratized countries, and is calculated to inspire thoughtful men with some distrust. Such pretension to omniscience and to the functions it involves has not been seen since the days of Voltaire, and even he never aspired to anything beyond the privilege of issuing his own private notes, and not the bonds on which the credit of the Universe depends. The Church, the University, and the Courts taught at least under the guidance of some extrinsic standard of Authority, or of Experience, or of Tradition, but what may be the outcome of a world edited subjectively every morning is matter of alarming conjecture. Anonymousness also evades responsibility. But

it is encouraging to note that the higher type of editor is coming every day to a fuller sense of the meaning of his many-sided calling, and that the newspaper itself is really beginning to furnish an instructive epitome of contemporary culture in all its branches, which, if it cannot supply the place of more thorough and special training, may inspire in some an appetite for it, and prevent others from suffering, so much as they otherwise might, by the want of it. Moreover, the power to influence public opinion is cumulative, gathering slowly but surely to the abler and more scrupulous conductors of the press, and it is observable that Wisdom generally comes to stay, while Error is apt to be but a transitory lodger.

Another very serious factor in the problem of the future is Socialism. This, it is true, is no novel phenomenon. Its theory, at least, must have been dimly conceived by the first man who had little and wanted more, and who found Society guilty of the shortcomings whose cause may have been mainly in himself. Nay, there is dynamite enough in the New Testament, if illegitimately applied, to blow all our existing institutions to atoms. All well-meaning and humane men sympathize with the aims of Lasalle and Karl Marx. All thoughtful men see well-founded and insuperable difficulties in the way of their accomplishment. But the socialism of the closet is a very different thing from that

of hordes of unthinking men to whom universal suffrage may give the power of unmaking Order by making Laws. Our federal system gives us a safeguard, however, that is wanting in more centralized governments. Should one state choose to make the experiment of mending its watch by taking out the mainspring, the others can meanwhile look on and take warning by the result. We have already observed a movement towards the introduction of socialistic theories into both state and national legislation, though, if History teach anything, it teaches that the true function of government is the prevention and remedy of evils so far only as these depend on causes within the reach of law, and that it has lost any proper conception of its duty when it becomes a distributor of alms. Timid people dread the insurrection of Bone and Sinew without seeing that unwise concessions to their unreasoned demands, which include the right to revive private war, will lead inevitably to the revolt of Brain, with consequences far more disastrous to the liberties so painfully won in all the ages during which man has been visible to us. When men formed their first Society, they instinctively recognized, in the Priest, the Lawgiver, or the Great Captain, the supreme fact that intellect is the divinely appointed lieutenant of God in the government of this World, and in the ordering of man's place in it and of

his relations towards it. This viceroy may be deposed, as during the drunkenness of the French Revolution, but out of the very crime will arise the Avenger.

It has seemed to some, and those not the least wise of their generation, that the advance of Science on which we so much plume ourselves was no unmixed good, and that this seemingly gracious benefactress perhaps took away with one hand as much as she gave with the other. We are not yet in a position to compute the results of its influence in modifying human thought and action. That it may be great none doubt who are capable of forming a judgment; and if long life were for any reason a desirable thing, I can conceive of none more valid than that it might be prolonged till some of these results could be classed and tabulated. I cannot share their fears who are made unhappy by the foreboding that Science is in some unexplained way to take from us our sense of spiritual things. What she may do is to forbid our vulgarizing them by materialistic conceptions of their nature; and in this she will be serving the best interests of Truth and of mankind also. For it is Man's highest distinction and safeguard that he cannot if he would rest satisfied till he have pushed to its full circumference whatever fragmentary arc of truth he has been able to trace with the compasses of his mind. Give to Science her undisputed pre-

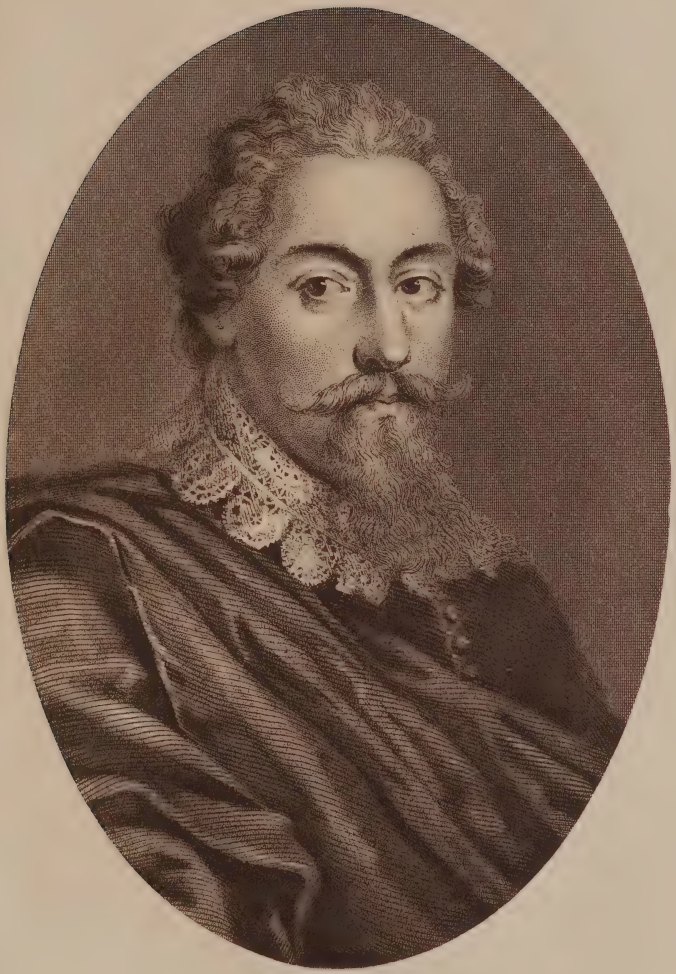
rogative in the realm of matter, and she must become, whether she will or no, the tributary of Faith. *Invisibilia enim ipsius [Dei] a creatura mundi per ea quae facta sunt intellecta.* Whatever else Science may accomplish, she will never contrive to make all men equally tall in body or mind. By labor-saving expedients she may multiply every man's hands by fifty, but she can never find a substitute for the planning and directing head; nor, though she abolish space and time, can she endow electricity and vibration with the higher functions of soul. The more she makes one lobe of the brain Aristotelian, so much more will the other intrigue for an invitation to the banquet of Plato. Theology will find out in good time that there is no atheism at once so stupid and so harmful as the fancying God to be afraid of any knowledge with which He has enabled Man to equip himself. Should the doctrines of Natural Selection, Survival of the Fittest, and Heredity be accepted as Laws of Nature, they must profoundly modify the thought of men and, consequently, their action. But we should remember that it is the privilege and distinction of man to mitigate natural laws, and to make them his partners if he cannot make them his servants. Human nature is too expansive a force to be safely bottled up in any scientific formula, however incontrovertible.

I should be glad to speculate also on the effect

of the tendency of population towards great cities; no new thing, but intensified as never before by increased and increasing ease of locomutation. The evil is intensified by the fact that this migration is recruited much more largely from the helpless than from the energetic class of the rural population; and it is not only an evil but a danger where, as with us, suffrage has no precautionary limits. If no remedy be possible, a palliative should be sought in whatever will make the country more entertaining; as in village libraries that may turn solitude into society, and in a more thorough and intelligent teaching of natural history in our public schools. The ploughman who is also a naturalist runs his furrow through the most interesting museum in the world. To discuss the cohesive or disruptive forces of Race and of Nationality might tempt me still to linger, but I have kept the reader quite long enough from the book itself. I have barely touched on several points on which it has roused or quickened thought. So far as the material prosperity of mankind is concerned, the review is by no means discomforting, and as I am one of those who believe that only when the bodily appetites of man are satisfied, does he become first conscious of a spiritual hunger and thirst that demand quite other food to appease them, so we may say, with some confidence, *sicut patribus erit Deus nobis.*

THE OLD ENGLISH DRAMATISTS

Francis Beaumont



THE OLD ENGLISH DRAMATISTS

I

INTRODUCTORY

WHEN the rule limiting speeches to an hour was adopted by Congress, which was before most of you were born, an eminent but somewhat discursive person spent more than that measure of time in convincing me that whoever really had anything to say could say it in less. I then and there acquired a conviction of this truth, which has only strengthened with years. Yet whoever undertakes to lecture must adapt his discourse to the law which requires such exercises to be precisely sixty minutes long, just as a certain standard of inches must be reached by one who would enter the army. If one has been studying all his life how to be terse, how to suggest rather than to expound, how to contract rather than to dilate, something like a strain is put upon the conscience by this necessity of giving the full measure of words, without reference to other considerations which a judicious ear may esteem of more importance. Instead of saying things compactly and pithily, so that they may be easily carried away, one is tempted into a

certain generosity and circumambience of phrase, which, if not adapted to conquer Time, may at least compel him to turn his glass and admit a drawn game. It is so much harder to fill an hour than to empty one!

These thoughts rose before me with painful vividness as I fancied myself standing here again, after an interval of thirty-two years, to address an audience at the Lowell Institute. Then I lectured, not without some favorable acceptance, on Poetry in general and what constituted it, on Imagination and Fancy, on Wit and Humor, on Metrical Romances, on Ballads, and I know not what else — on whatever I thought I had anything to say about, I suppose. Then I was at the period in life when thoughts rose in coveys, and one filled one's bag without considering too nicely whether the game had been hatched within his neighbor's fence or within his own, — a period of life when it does n't seem as if everything had been said; when a man overestimates the value of what specially interests himself, and insists with Don Quixote that all the world shall stop till the superior charms of his Dulcinea of the moment have been acknowledged; when he conceives himself a missionary, and is persuaded that he is saving his fellows from the perdition of their souls if he convert them from belief in some æsthetic heresy. That is the mood of mind in which one may read

lectures with some assurance of success. I remember how I read mine over to the clock, that I might be sure I had enough, and how patiently the clock listened, and gave no opinion except as to duration, on which point it assured me that I always ran over. This is the pleasant peril of enthusiasm, which has always something of the careless superfluity of youth. Since then, and for a period making a sixth part of my mature life, my mind has been shunted off upon the track of other duties and other interests. If I have learned something, I have also forgotten a good deal. One is apt to forget so much in the service of one's country, — even that he is an American, I have been told, though I can hardly believe it.

When I selected my topic for this new venture, I was returning to a first love. The second volume I ever printed, in 1843, I think it was, — it is now a rare book, I am not sorry to know; I have not seen it for many years, — was mainly about the Old English Dramatists, if I am not mistaken. I dare say it was crude enough, but it was spontaneous and honest. I have continued to read them ever since, with no less pleasure, if with more discrimination. But when I was confronted with the question what I could say of them that would interest any rational person, after all that had been said by Lamb, the most sympathetic of critics, by Hazlitt, one

of the most penetrative, by Coleridge, the most intuitive, and by so many others, I was inclined to believe that instead of an easy subject I had chosen a subject very far from easy. But I sustained myself with the words of the great poet who so often has saved me from myself:

> "Vagliami il lungo studio e il grande amóre,
> Che m' ha fatto cercar lo tuo volume."

If I bring no other qualification, I bring at least that of hearty affection, which is the first condition of insight. I shall not scruple to repeat what may seem already too familiar, confident that these old poets will stand as much talking about as most people. At the risk of being tedious, I shall put you back to your scales as a teacher of music does his pupils. For it is the business of a lecturer to treat his audience as M. Jourdain wished to be treated in respect of the Latin language, — to take it for granted that they know, but to talk to them as if they did n't. I should have preferred to entitle my course Readings from the Old English Dramatists with illustrative comments, rather than a critical discussion of them, for there is more conviction in what is beautiful in itself than in any amount of explanation why, or exposition of how, it is beautiful. A rose has a very succinct way of explaining itself. When I find nothing profitable to say, I shall take sanctuary in my authors.

It is generally assumed that the Modern Drama in France, Spain, Italy, and England was an evolution out of the Mysteries and Moralities and Interludes which had edified and amused preceding generations of simpler taste and ruder intelligence. 'T is the old story of Thespis and his cart. Taken with due limitations, and substituting the word *stage* for *drama*, this theory of origin is satisfactory enough. The stage was there, and the desire to be amused, when the drama at last appeared to occupy the one and to satisfy the other. It seems to have been, so far as the English Drama is concerned, a case of *post hoc*, without altogether adequate grounds for inferring a *propter hoc*. The Interludes may have served as training-schools for actors. It is certain that Richard Burbage, afterwards of Shakespeare's company, was so trained. He is the actor, you will remember, who first played the part of Hamlet, and the untimely expansion of whose person is supposed to account for the Queen's speech in the fencing scene, "He 's fat and scant of breath." I may say, in passing, that the phrase merely means "He 's out of training," as we should say now. A fat Hamlet is as inconceivable as a lean Falstaff. Shakespeare, with his usual discretion, never makes the Queen hateful, and made use of this expedient to show her solicitude for her son. Her last word, as she is dying, is his name.

To return. The Interlude may have kept alive the traditions of a stage, and may have made ready a certain number of persons to assume higher and graver parts when the opportunity should come; but the revival of learning, and the rise of cities capable of supplying a more cultivated and exacting audience, must have had a stronger and more direct influence on the growth of the Drama, as we understand the word, than any or all other influences combined. Certainly this seems to me true of the English Drama at least. The English Miracle Plays are dull beyond what is permitted even by the most hardened charity, and there is nothing dramatic in them except that they are in the form of dialogue. The Interludes are perhaps further saddened in the reading by reminding us how much easier it was to be amused three hundred years ago than now, but their wit is the wit of the Eocene period, unhappily as long as it is broad, and their humor is horse-play. We inherited a vast accumulation of barbarism from our Teutonic ancestors. It was only on those terms, perhaps, that we could have their vigor too. The Interludes have some small value as illustrating manners and forms of speech, but the man must be born expressly for the purpose — as for some of the adventures of mediæval knight-errantry — who can read them. "Gammer Gurton's Needle" is perhaps as good as

any. It was acted at Christ's College, Cambridge, in 1566, and is remarkable, as Mr. Collier pointed out, as the first existing play acted before either University. Its author was John Still, afterwards Bishop of Bath and Wells, and it is curious that when Vice-Chancellor of Cambridge he should have protested against the acting before the University of an English play so unbefitting its learning, dignity, and character. "Gammer Gurton's Needle" contains a very jolly and spirited song in praise of ale. Latin plays were acted before the Universities on great occasions, but there was nothing dramatic about them but their form. One of them by Burton, author of the "Anatomy of Melancholy," has been printed, and is not without merit. In the "Pardoner and the Frere" there is a hint at the drollery of those cross-readings with which Bonnell Thornton made our grandfathers laugh: —

"*Pard.* Pope July the Sixth hath granted fair and well —
Fr. That when to them God hath abundance sent —
Pard. And doth twelve thousand years of pardon to them send —
Fr. They would distribute none to the indigent —
Pard. That aught to this holy chapel lend."

Everything in these old farces is rudimentary. They are not merely coarse; they are vulgar.

In France it was better, but France had something which may fairly be called literature before

any other country in Europe; not literature in the highest sense, of course, but something, at any rate, that may be still read with pleasure for its delicate beauty, like "Aucassin and Nicolete," or for its downright vigor, like the "Song of Roland," or for its genuine humor, like "Renard the Fox." There is even one French Miracle Play of the thirteenth century, by the trouvère Rutebeuf, based on the legend of Theophilus of Antioch, which might be said to contain the germ of Calderon's "El Magico Prodigioso," and thus, remotely, of Goethe's "Faust." Of the next century is the farce of "Patelin," which has given a new word with its several derivatives to the French language, and a proverbial phrase, *revenons à nos moutons*, that long ago domiciled itself beyond the boundaries of France. "Patelin" rises at times above the level of farce, though hardly to the region of pure comedy. I saw it acted at the Théâtre Français many years ago, with only so much modernization of language as was necessary to make it easily comprehensible, and found it far more than archæologically entertaining. Surely none of our old English Interludes could be put upon the stage now without the gloomiest results. They were not, in my judgment, the direct, and hardly even the collateral, ancestors of our legitimate comedy. On the other hand, while the Miracle Plays left no traces of them-

selves in our serious drama, the play of Punch and Judy looks very like an impoverished descendant of theirs.

In Spain it was otherwise. There the old Moralities and Mysteries of the Church Festivals are renewed and perpetuated in the Autos Sacramentales of Calderon, but ensouled with the creative breath of his genius, and having a strange phantasmal reality in the ideal world of his wonder-working imagination. One of his plays, "La Devocion de la Cruz," an Auto in spirit if not in form, dramatizes, as only he could do it, the doctrine of justification by faith. In Spain, too, the comedy of the booth and the plaza is plainly the rude sketch of the higher creations of Tirso and Lope and Calderon and Rojas and Alarcon, and scores of others only less than they. The tragi-comedy of "Celestina," written at the close of the fifteenth century, is the first modern piece of realism or naturalism, as it is called, with which I am acquainted. It is coarse, and most of the characters are low, but there are touches of nature in it, and the character of Celestina is brought out with singular vivacity. The word tragi-comedy is many years older than this play, if play that may be called which is but a succession of dialogues, but I can think of no earlier example of its application to a production in dramatic form than by the Bachelor Fernando de Rojas in this instance.

It was made over into English, rather than translated, in 1520, — our first literary debt to Spain, I should guess. The Spanish theatre, though the influence of Seneca is apparent in the form it put on, is more sincerely a growth of the soil than any other of modern times, and it has one interesting analogy with our own in the introduction of the clown into tragedy, whether by way of foil or parody. The Spanish dramatists have been called marvels of fecundity, but the facility of their trochaic measure, in which the verses seem to go of themselves, makes their feats less wonderful. The marvel would seem to be rather that, writing so easily, they also wrote so well. Their invention is as remarkable as their abundance. Their drama and our own have affected the spirit and sometimes the substance of later literature more than any other. They have to a certain extent impregnated it. I have called the Spanish theatre a product of the soil, yet it must not be overlooked that Sophocles, Euripides, Plautus, and Terence had been translated into Spanish early in the sixteenth century, and that Lope de Rueda, its real founder, would willingly have followed classical models more closely had the public taste justified him in doing so. But fortunately the national genius triumphed over traditional criterions of art, and the Spanish theatre, asserting its own happier instincts, be-

came and continued Spanish, with an unspeakable charm and flavor of its own.

One peculiarity of the Spanish plays makes it safe to recommend them even *virginibus puerisque*, — they are never unclean. Even Milton would have approved a censorship of the press that accomplished this. It is a remarkable example of how sharp the contradiction is between the private morals of a people and their public code of morality. Certain things may be done, but they must not seem to be done.

I have said nothing of the earlier Italian Drama because it has failed to interest me. But Italy had indirectly a potent influence, through Spenser, in suppling English verse till it could answer the higher uses of the stage. The lines — for they can hardly be called verses — of the first attempts at regular plays are as uniform, flat, and void of variety as laths cut by machinery, and show only the arithmetical ability of their fashioners to count as high as ten. A speech is a series of such laths laid parallel to each other with scrupulous exactness. But I shall have occasion to return to this topic in speaking of Marlowe.

Who, then, were the Old English Dramatists? They were a score or so of literary bohemians, for the most part, living from hand to mouth in London during the last twenty years of the sixteenth century and the first thirty years of

the seventeenth, of the personal history of most of whom we fortunately know little, and who, by their good luck in being born into an unsophisticated age, have written a few things so well that they seem to have written themselves. Poor, nearly all of them, they have left us a fine estate in the realm of Faery. Among them were three or four men of genius. A comrade of theirs by his calling, but set apart from them alike by the splendor of his endowments and the more equable balance of his temperament, was that divine apparition known to mortals as Shakespeare. The civil war put an end to their activity. The last of them, in the direct line, was James Shirley, remembered chiefly for two lines from the last stanza of a song of his in the "Contention of Ajax and Ulysses," which have become a proverb:

> "Only the actions of the just
> Smell sweet and blossom in the dust."

It is a nobly simple piece of verse, with the slow and solemn cadence of a funeral march. The hint of it seems to have been taken from a passage in that droningly dreary book the "Mirror for Magistrates." This little poem is one of the best instances of the good fortune of the men of that age in the unconscious simplicity and gladness (I know not what else to call it) of their vocabulary. The language, so to speak, had just learned to go alone, and found a joy in its own

mere motion, which it lost as it grew older, and to walk was no longer a marvel.

Nothing in the history of literature seems more startling than the sudden spring with which English poetry blossomed in the later years of Elizabeth's reign. We may account for the seemingly unheralded apparition of a single genius like Dante or Chaucer by the genius itself; for, given that, everything else is possible. But even in such cases as these much must have gone before to make the genius available when it came. For the production of great literature there must be already a language ductile to all the varying moods of expression. There must be a certain amount of culture, or the stimulus of sympathy would be wanting. If, as Horace tells us, the heroes who lived before Agamemnon have perished for want of a poet to celebrate them, so doubtless many poets have gone dumb to their graves, or, at any rate, have uttered themselves imperfectly, for lack of a fitting vehicle or of an amiable atmosphere. Genius, to be sure, makes its own opportunity, but the circumstances must be there out of which it can be made. For instance, I cannot help feeling that Turold, or whoever was the author of the "Chanson de Roland," was endowed with a rare epical faculty, and that he would have given more emphatic proof of it had it been possible for him to clothe his thought in a form

equivalent to the vigor of his conception. Perhaps with more art, he might have had less of that happy audacity of the first leap which Montaigne valued so highly, but would he not have gained could he have spoken to us in a verse as sonorous as the Greek hexameter, nay, even as sweet in its cadences, as variously voluble by its slurs and elisions, and withal as sharply-edged and clean-cut as the Italian pentameter? It is at least a question open to debate. Mr. Matthew Arnold taxes the "Song of Roland" with an entire want of the grand style; and this is true enough; but it has immense stores of courage and victory in it, as Taillefer proved at the battle of Hastings, — yes, and touches of heroic pathos, too.

Many things had slowly and silently concurred to make that singular preëminence of the Elizabethan literature possible. First of all was the growth of a national consciousness, made aware of itself and more cumulatively operative by the existence and safer accessibility of a national capital, to serve it both as head and heart. The want of such a focus of intellectual, political, and material activity has had more to do with the backwardness and provincialism of our own literature than is generally taken into account. My friend Mr. Hosea Biglow ventured to affirm twenty odd years ago that we had at last arrived at this national consciousness through the

convulsion of our civil war, — a convulsion so violent as might well convince the members that they formed part of a common body. But I make bold to doubt whether that consciousness will ever be more than fitful and imperfect, whether it will ever, except in some moment of supreme crisis, pour itself into and reinforce the individual consciousness in a way to make our literature feel itself of age and its own master, till we shall have got a common head as well as a common body. It is not the size of a city that gives it this stimulating and expanding quality, but the fact that it sums up in itself and gathers all the moral and intellectual forces of the country in a single focus. London is still the metropolis of the British as Paris of the French race. We admit this readily enough as regards Australia or Canada, but we willingly overlook it as regards ourselves. Washington is growing more national and more habitable every year, but it will never be a capital till every kind of culture is attainable there on as good terms as elsewhere. Why not on better than elsewhere? We are rich enough. Bismarck's first care has been the Museums of Berlin. For a fiftieth part of the money Congress seems willing to waste in demoralizing the country, we might have had the Hamilton books and the far more precious Ashburnham manuscripts. Perhaps what formerly gave Boston its admitted literary supre-

macy was the fact that fifty years ago it was more truly a capital than any other American city. Edinburgh once held a similar position, with similar results. And yet how narrow Boston was! How scant a pasture it offered to the imagination! I have often mused on the dreary fate of the great painter who perished slowly of inanition over yonder in Cambridgeport, he who had known Coleridge and Lamb and Wordsworth, and who, if ever any,

> "With immortal wine
> Should have been bathed and swum in more heart's ease
> Than there are waters in the Sestian seas."

The pity of it! That unfinished Belshazzar of his was a bitter sarcasm on our self-conceit. Among *us*, it was unfinishable. Whatever place can draw together the greatest amount and greatest variety of intellect and character, the most abundant elements of civilization, performs the best function of a university. London was such a centre in the days of Queen Elizabeth. And think what a school the Mermaid Tavern must have been! The verses which Beaumont addressed to Ben Jonson from the country point to this: —

> "What things have we seen
> Done at the Mermaid! heard words that have been
> So nimble and so full of subtle flame
> As if that every one from whence they came
> Had meant to put his whole wit in a jest,
> And had resolved to live a fool the rest

Of his dull life; then when there hath been thrown
Wit able enough to justify the town
For three days past, wit that might warrant be
For the whole city to talk foolishly
Till that were cancelled; and, when that was gone,
We left an air behind us which alone
Was able to make the two next companies
Right witty; though but downright fools, more wise."

This air, which Beaumont says they left behind them, they carried with them, too. It was the atmosphere of culture, the open air of it, which loses much of its bracing and stimulating virtue in solitude and the silent society of books. And what discussions can we not fancy there, of language, of diction, of style, of ancients and moderns, of grammar even, for our speech was still at school, and with license of vagrant truancy for the gathering of wild flowers and the finding of whole nests full of singing birds! Here was indeed a new World of Words, as Florio called his dictionary. And the face-to-face criticism, frank, friendly, and with chance of reply, how fruitful it must have been! It was here, doubtless, that Jonson found fault with that verse of Shakespeare's,

"Cæsar did never wrong but with just cause,"

which is no longer to be found in the play of "Julius Cæsar." Perhaps Heminge and Condell left it out, for Shakespeare could have justified himself with the hook-nosed fellow of Rome's

favorite Greek quotation, that nothing justified crime but the winning or keeping of supreme power. Never could London, before or since, gather such an academy of genius. It must have been a marvellous whetstone of the wits, and spur to generous emulation.

Another great advantage which the authors of that day had was the freshness of the language, which had not then become literary, and therefore more or less commonplace. All the words they used were bright from the die, not yet worn smooth in the daily drudgery of prosaic service. I am not sure whether they were so fully conscious of this as we are, who find a surprising charm in it, and perhaps endow the poet with the witchery that really belongs to the vocables he employs. The parts of speech of these old poets are just archaic enough to please us with that familiar strangeness which makes our own tongue agreeable if spoken with a hardly perceptible foreign accent. The power of giving novelty to things outworn is, indeed, one of the prime qualities of genius, and this novelty the habitual phrase of the Elizabethans has for us without any merit of theirs. But I think, making all due abatements, that they had the hermetic gift of buckling wings to the feet of their verse in a measure which has fallen to the share of few or no modern poets. I think some of them certainly were fully aware of the fine qualities of

their mother tongue. Chapman, in the poem "To the Reader," prefixed to his translation of the "Iliad," protests against those who preferred to it the softer Romance languages: —

> "And for our tongue that still is so impaired
> By travailing linguists, I can prove it clear,
> That no tongue hath the Muses' utterance heired
> For verse and that sweet Music to the ear
> Strook out of rime, so naturally as this;
> Our monosyllables so kindly fall,
> And meet, opposed in rhyme, as they did kiss."

I think Chapman has very prettily maintained and illustrated his thesis. But, though fortunate in being able to gather their language with the dew still on it, as herbs must be gathered for use in certain incantations, we are not to suppose that our elders used it indiscriminately, or tumbled out their words as they would dice, trusting that luck or chance would send them a happy throw; that they did not select, arrange, combine, and make use of the most cunning artifices of modulation and rhythm. They debated all these questions, we may be sure, not only with a laudable desire of excellence, and with a hope to make their native tongue as fitting a vehicle for poetry and eloquence as those of their neighbors, or as those of Greece and Rome, but also with something of the eager joy of adventure and discovery. They must have felt with Lucretius the delight of wandering over the path-

less places of the Muse, and hence, perhaps, it is that their step is so elastic, and that we are never dispirited by a consciousness of any lassitude when they put forth their best pace. If they are natural, it is in great part the benefit of the age they lived in; but the winning graces, the picturesque felicities, the electric flashes, I had almost said the explosions, of their style are their own. And their diction mingles its elements so kindly and with such gracious reliefs of changing key, now dallying with the very childishness of speech like the spinsters and the knitters in the sun, and anon snatched up without effort to the rapt phrase of passion or of tragedy that flashes and reverberates!

The dullest of them, for I admit that many of them were dull as a comedy of Goethe, and dulness loses none of its disheartening properties by age, no, nor even by being embalmed in the precious gems and spices of Lamb's affectionate eulogy, — for I am persuaded that I should know a stupid mummy from a clever one before I had been in his company five minutes, — the dullest of them, I say, has his lucid intervals. There are, I grant, dreary wastes and vast solitudes in such collections as Dodsley's "Old Plays," where we slump along through the loose sand without even so much as a mirage to comfort us under the intolerable drought of our companion's discourse. Nay, even some of

the dramatists who have been thought worthy of editions all to themselves, may enjoy that seclusion without fear of its being disturbed by me.

Let me mention a name or two of such as I shall not speak of in this course. Robert Greene is one of them. He has all the inadequacy of imperfectly drawn tea. I thank him, indeed, for the word "brightsome," and for two lines of Sephestia's song to her child, —

"Weep not, my wanton, smile upon my knee,
When thou art old, there 's grief enough for thee,—"

which have all the innocence of the Old Age in them. Otherwise he is naught. I say this for the benefit of the young, for in my own callow days I took him seriously because the Rev. Alexander Dyce had edited him, and I endured much in trying to reconcile my instincts with my superstition. He it was that called Shakespeare "an upstart crow beautified with our feathers," as if any one could have any use for feathers from such birds as he, except to make pens of them. He was the cause of the dulness that was in other men, too, and human nature feels itself partially avenged by this stanza of an elegy upon him by one "R. B.," quoted by Mr. Dyce:

"Greene is the pleasing object of an eye;
Greene pleased the eyes of all that looked upon him;
Greene is the ground of every painter's dye;
Greene gave the ground to all that wrote upon him;

Nay, more, the men that so eclipsed his fame
Purloyned his plumes; can they deny the same?"

Even the libeller of Shakespeare deserved nothing worse than this! If this is "R. B." when he was playing upon words, what must he have been when serious?

Another dramatist whom we can get on very well without is George Peele, the friend and fellow roisterer of Greene. He, too, defied the inspiring influence of the air he breathed almost as successfully as his friend. But he had not that genius for being dull all the time that Greene had, and illustrates what I was just saying of the manner in which the most tiresome of these men waylay us when we least expect it with some phrase or verse that shines and trembles in the memory like a star. Such are:

"For her I 'll build a kingly bower
Seated in hearing of a hundred streams";

and this, of God's avenging lightning:

"At him the thunder shall discharge his bolt,
And his fair spouse, with bright and fiery wings,
Sit ever burning in his hateful bones."

He also wrote some musically simple stanzas, of which I quote the first two, the rather that Thackeray was fond of them:

"My golden locks Time hath to silver turned
(O Time too swift, and swiftness never ceasing),
My youth 'gainst age, and age at youth hath spurned,
But spurned in vain; youth waneth by increasing.

Beauty, strength, and youth, flowers fading been;
Duty, faith, and love, are roots, and ever green.

"My helmet now shall make an hive for bees,
And lover's songs shall turn to holy psalms;
A man-at-arms must now serve on his knees,
And feed on prayers, that are old age's alms.
But though from court to cottage I depart,
My saint is sure of mine unspotted heart."

There is a pensiveness in this, half pleasurable, half melancholy, that has a charm of its own.

Thomas Dekker is a far more important person. Most of his works seem to have been what artists call pot-boilers, written at ruinous speed, and with the bailiff rather than the Muse at his elbow. There was a liberal background of prose in him, as in Ben Jonson, but he was a poet and no mean one, as he shows by the careless good luck of his epithets and similes. He could rise also to a grave dignity of style that is grateful to the ear, nor was he incapable of that heightened emotion which might almost pass for passion. His fancy kindles well-nigh to imagination at times, and ventures on those extravagances which entice the fancy of the reader as with the music of an invitation to the waltz. I had him in my mind when I was speaking of the *obiter dicta*, of the fine verses dropt casually by these men when you are beginning to think they have no poetry in them. Fortune tells Fortunatus,

in the play of that name, that he shall have gold as countless as

> "Those gilded wantons that in swarms do run
> To warm their *slender bodies* in the sun,"

thus giving him a hint also of its ephemeral nature. Here is a verse, too, that shows a kind of bleakish sympathy of sound and sense. Long life, he tells us,

> "Is a long journey in December gone."

It may be merely my fancy, but I seem to hear a melancholy echo in it, as of footfalls on frozen earth. Or take this for a pretty fancy:

> "The moon hath through her bow scarce drawn to the head,
> Like to twelve silver arrows, all the months
> Since —"

when do you suppose? I give you three guesses, as the children say. Since 1600! Poor Fancy shudders at this opening of Haydn's "Dictionary of Dates" and thinks her silver arrows a little out of place, like a belated masquerader going home under the broad grin of day. But the verses themselves seem plucked from the "Midsummer-Night's Dream."

This is as good an instance as may be of the want of taste, of sense of congruity, and of the delicate discrimination that makes style, which strikes and sometimes even shocks us in the Old Dramatists. This was a disadvantage of

the age into which they were born, and is perhaps implied in the very advantages it gave them, and of which I have spoken. Even Shakespeare offends sometimes in this way. Good taste, if mainly a gift of Nature, is also an acquisition. It was not impossible even then. Samuel Daniel had it, but the cautious propriety with which it embarrassed him has made his drama of "Cleopatra" unapproachable, in more senses than one, in its frigid regularity. His contemplative poetry, thanks to its grave sweetness of style, is among the best in our language. And Daniel wrote the following sentences, which explain better than anything I could say why his contemporaries, in spite of their manifest imperfections, pleased then and continue to please: "Suffer the world to enjoy that which it knows and what it likes, seeing whatsoever form of words doth move delight, and sway the affections of men, in what Scythian sort soever it be disposed and uttered, that is true number, measure, eloquence, and the perfection of speech." Those men did "move delight, and sway the affections of men," in a very singular manner, gaining, on the whole, perhaps, more by their liberty than they lost by their license. But it is only genius that can safely profit by this immunity. Form, of which we hear so much, is of great value, but it is not of the highest value, except in combination with other qualities better than itself; and it is worth

noting that the modern English poet who seems least to have regarded it, is also the one who has most powerfully moved, swayed, and delighted those who are wise enough to read him.

One more passage and I have done. It is from the same play of "Old Fortunatus," a favorite of mine. The Soldan of Babylon shows Fortunatus his treasury, or cabinet of bric-à-brac:

"Behold yon tower: there stands mine armoury,
In which are corselets forged of beaten gold
To arm ten hundred thousand fighting men,
Whose glittering squadrons when the sun beholds,
They seem like to ten hundred thousand Joves,
When Jove on the proud back of thunder rides,
Trapped all in lightning-flames. There can I show thee
The ball of gold that set all Troy on fire;
There shalt thou see the scarf of Cupid's mother,
Snatcht from the soft moist ivory of her arm
To wrap about Adonis' wounded thigh;
There shalt thou see a wheel of Titan's car
Which dropt from Heaven when Phaethon fired the world.
I 'll give thee (if thou wilt) two silver doves
Composed by magic to divide the air,
Who, as they flie, shall clap their silver wings
And give strange music to the elements.
I 'll give thee else the fan of Proserpine,
Which, in reward for a sweet Thracian song,
The blackbrow'd Empress threw to Orpheus,
Being come to fetch Eurydice from hell."

This is, here and there, tremblingly near bombast, but its exuberance is cheery, and the quaintness of Proserpine's fan shows how real she was

to the poet. Hers was a generous gift, considering the climate in which Dekker evidently supposed her to dwell, and speaks well for the song that could make her forget it. There is crudeness, as if the wine had been drawn before the ferment was over, but the arm of Venus is from the life, and that one verse gleams and glows among the rest like the thing it describes. The whole passage is a good example of fancy, whimsical, irresponsible. But there is more imagination and power to move the imagination in Shakespeare's "sunken wreck and sunless treasures" than all his contemporaries together, not even excepting Marlowe, could have mustered.

We lump all these poets together as dramatists because they wrote for the theatre, and yet how little they were truly dramatic seems proved by the fact that none, or next to none, of their plays have held the stage. Not one of their characters, that I can remember, has become one of the familiar figures that make up the habitual society of any cultivated memory even of the same race and tongue. Marlowe, great as he was, makes no exception. To some of them we cannot deny genius, but creative genius we must deny to all of them, and dramatic genius as well.

This last, indeed, is one of the rarest gifts bestowed on man. What is that which we call dramatic? In the abstract, it is thought or emotion

in action, or on its way to become action. In the concrete, it is that which is more vivid if represented than described, and which would lose if merely narrated. Goethe, for example, had little dramatic power; though, if taking thought could have earned it, he would have had enough, for he studied the actual stage all his life. The characters in his plays seem rather to express his thoughts than their own. Yet there is one admirably dramatic scene in "Faust" which illustrates what I have been saying. I mean Margaret in the cathedral, suggested to Goethe by the temptation of Justina in Calderon's "Magico Prodigioso," but full of horror as that of seductiveness. We see and hear as we read. Her own bad conscience projected in the fiend who mutters despair into her ear, and the awful peals of the "Dies Irae," that most terribly resonant of Latin hymns, as if blown from the very trump of doom itself, coming in at intervals to remind her that the

> "Tuba mirum spargens sonum
> Per sepulchra regionum
> Coget omnes ante thronum,"

herself among the rest, — all of this would be weaker in narration. This is real, and needs realization by the senses to be fully felt. Compare it with Dimmesdale mounting the pillory at night, in the "Scarlet Letter," to my thinking the deepest thrust of what may be called

the metaphysical imagination since Shakespeare. There we need only a statement of the facts — pictorial statement, of course, as Hawthorne's could not fail to be — and the effect is complete. Thoroughly to understand a good play and enjoy it, even in the reading, the imagination must body forth its personages, and see them doing or suffering in the visionary theatre of the brain. There, indeed, they are best seen, and Hamlet or Lear loses that ideal quality which makes him typical and universal if he be once compressed within the limits, or associated with the lineaments, of any, even the best, actor.

It is for their poetical qualities, for their gleams of imagination, for their quaint and subtle fancies, for their tender sentiment, and for their charm of diction that these old playwrights are worth reading. They are the best comment also to convince us of the immeasurable superiority of Shakespeare. Several of them, moreover, have been very inadequately edited, or not at all, which is perhaps better; and it is no useless discipline of the wits, no unworthy exercise of the mind, to do our own editing as we go along, winning back to its cradle the right word for the changeling the printers have left in its stead, making the lame verses find their feet again, and rescuing those that have been tumbled higgledy-piggledy into a mire of prose. A strenuous study of this kind will enable us better to understand

many a faulty passage in our Shakespeare, and to judge of the proposed emendations of them, or to make one to our own liking. There is no better school for learning English, and for learning it when, in many important respects, it was at its best.

I am not sure that I shall not seem to talk to you of many things that seem trivialities if weighed in the huge business scales of life, but I am always glad to say a word in behalf of what most men consider useless, and to say it the rather because it has so few friends. I have observed, and am sorry to have observed, that English poetry, at least in its older examples, is less read now than when I was young. I do not believe this to be a healthy symptom, for poetry frequents and keeps habitable those upper chambers of the mind that open toward the sun's rising.

II

MARLOWE

I SHALL preface what I have to say of Marlowe with a few words as to the refinement which had been going on in the language, and the greater ductility which it had been rapidly gaining, and which fitted it for the use of the remarkable group of men who made an epoch of the reign of Elizabeth. Spenser was undoubtedly the poet to whom we owe most in this respect, and the very great contrast between his "Shepherd's Calendar," published in 1579, and his later poems awakens curiosity. In his earliest work there are glimpses, indeed, of those special qualities which have won for him the name of the poet's poet, but they are rare and fugitive, and certainly never would have warranted the prediction of such poetry as was to follow. There is nothing here to indicate that a great artist in language had been born. Two causes, I suspect, were mainly effective in this transformation, I am almost tempted to say transubstantiation, of the man. The first was his practice in translation (true also of Marlowe), than which nothing gives a greater choice and mastery of one's mother tongue, for one must pause and weigh and judge every word with the

greatest nicety, and cunningly transfuse idiom into idiom. The other, and by far the more important, was his study of the Italian poets. The "Faery Queen" is full of loving reminiscence of them, but their happiest influence is felt in his lyrical poems. For these, I think, make it plain that Italy first taught him how much of the meaning of verse is in its music, and trained his ear to a sense of the harmony as well as the melody of which English verse was capable or might be made capable. Compare the sweetest passage in any lyric of the "Shepherd's Calendar" with the eloquent ardor of the poorest, if any be poor, in the "Epithalamion," and we find ourselves in a new world where music had just been invented. This we owe, beyond any doubt, to Spenser's study of the Italian canzone. Nay, the whole metrical movement of the "Epithalamion" recalls that of Petrarca's noble "*Spirto gentil.*" I repeat that melody and harmony were first naturalized in our language by Spenser. I love to recall these debts, for it is pleasant to be grateful even to the dead.

Other men had done their share towards what may be called the modernization of our English, and among these Sir Philip Sidney was conspicuous. He probably gave it greater ease of movement, and seems to have done for it very much what Dryden did a century later in establishing terms of easier intercourse between

the language of literature and the language of cultivated society.

There had been good versifiers long before. Chaucer, for example, and even Gower, wearisome as he mainly is, made verses sometimes not only easy in movement, but in which the language seems strangely modern. That most dolefully dreary of books the "Mirror of Magistrates," and Sackville, more than any of its authors, did something towards restoring the dignity of verse, and helping it to recover its self-respect, while Spenser was still a youth. Tame as it is, the sunshine of that age here and there touches some verse that ripples in the sluggish current with a flicker of momentary illumination. But before Spenser, no English verse had ever soared and sung, or been filled with what Sidney calls "divine delightfulness." Sidney, it may be conjectured, did more by private criticism and argument than by example. Drayton says of him:

> "The noble Sidney with this last arose,
> That heroë for numbers and for prose,
> That throughly paced our language as to show
> The plenteous English hand in hand might go
> With Greek and Latin, and did first reduce
> Our tongue from Lilly's writing then in use."

But even the affectations of Lilly were not without their use as helps to refinement. If, like Chaucer's frere,

"Somewhat he lisped, for his wantonness,"

it was through the desire

"To make his English sweet upon his tongue."

It was the general clownishness against which he revolted, and we owe him our thanks for it. To show of what brutalities even recent writers could be capable, it will suffice to mention that Golding, in his translation of Ovid's "Metamorphoses," makes a witch mutter the devil's pater-noster, and Ulysses express his fears of going "to pot." I should like to read you a familiar sonnet of Sidney's for its sweetness: —

"Come, Sleep: O Sleep! the certain knot of peace,
The baiting-place of wit, the balm of woe,
The poor man's wealth, the prisoner's release,
The indifferent judge between the high and low;
With shield of proof, shield me from out the press
Of those fierce darts despair at me doth throw;
O make in me those civil wars to cease:
I will good tribute pay if thou do so.
Take thou of me smooth pillows, sweetest bed,
A chamber deaf to noise and blind to light,
A rosy garland, and a weary head:
And if these things, as being thine of right,
Move not thy heavy grace, thou shalt in me,
Livelier than elsewhere, Stella's image see."

Here is ease and simplicity; but in such a phrase as "baiting-place of wit" there is also a want of that perfect discretion which we demand

of the language of poetry, however we may be glad to miss it in the thought or emotion which that language conveys. *Baiting-place* is no more a homespun word than the word *inn*, which adds a charm to one of the sweetest verses that Spenser ever wrote; but *baiting-place* is common, it smacks of the hostler and postilion, and commonness is a very poor relation indeed of simplicity. But doubtless one main cause of the vivacity of phrase which so charms us in our earlier writers is to be found in the fact that there were not yet two languages — that of life and that of literature. The divorce between the two took place a century and a half later, and that process of breeding in and in began which at last reduced the language of verse to a kind of idiocy.

Do not consider such discussions as these otiose or nugatory. The language we are fortunate enough to share, and which, I think, Jacob Grimm was right in pronouncing, in its admirable mixture of Saxon and Latin, its strength and sonorousness, a better literary medium than any other modern tongue — this language has not been fashioned to what it is without much experiment, much failure, and infinite expenditure of pains and thought. Genius and pedantry have each done its part towards the result which seems so easy to us, and yet was so hard to win — the one by way of exam-

ple, the other by way of warning. The purity, the elegance, the decorum, the chastity of our mother tongue are a sacred trust in our hands. I am tired of hearing the foolish talk of an American variety of it, about our privilege to make it what we will because we are in a majority. A language belongs to those who know best how to use it, how to bring out all its resources, how to make it search its coffers round for the pithy or canorous phrase that suits the need, and they who can do this have been always in a pitiful minority. Let us be thankful that we too have a right to it, and have proved our right, but let us set up no claim to vulgarize it. The English of Abraham Lincoln was so good not because he learned it in Illinois, but because he learned it of Shakespeare and Milton and the Bible, the constant companions of his leisure. And how perfect it was in its homely dignity, its quiet strength, the unerring aim with which it struck once nor needed to strike more! The language is alive here, and will grow. Let us do all we can with it but debase it. Good taste may not be necessary to salvation or to success in life, but it is one of the most powerful factors of civilization. As a people we have a larger share of it and more widely distributed than I, at least, have found elsewhere, but as a nation we seem to lack it altogether. Our coinage is ruder than that of any country

of equal pretensions, our paper money is filthily infectious, and the engraving on it, mechanically perfect as it is, makes of every bank-note a missionary of barbarism. This should make us cautious of trying our hand in the same fashion on the circulating medium of thought. But it is high time that I should remember Maître Guillaume of Patelin, and come back to my sheep.

In coming to speak of Marlowe, I cannot help fearing that I may fail a little in that equanimity which is the first condition of all helpful criticism. Generosity there should be, and enthusiasm there should be, but they should stop short of extravagance. Praise should not weaken into eulogy, nor blame fritter itself away into fault-finding. Goethe tells us that the first thing needful to the critic, as indeed it is to the wise man generally, is to see the thing as it really is; this is the most precious result of all culture, the surest warrant of happiness, or at least of composure. But he also bids us, in judging any work, seek first to discover its beauties, and then its blemishes or defects. Now there are two poets whom I feel that I can never judge without a favorable bias. One is Spenser, who was the first poet I ever read as a boy, not drawn to him by any enchantment of his matter or style, but simply because the first verse of his great poem was,

"A gentle knight was pricking on the plain,"

and I followed gladly, wishful of adventure. Of course I understood nothing of the allegory, never suspected it, fortunately for me, and am surprised to think how much of the language I understood. At any rate, I grew fond of him, and whenever I see the little brown folio in which I read, my heart warms to it as to a friend of my childhood. With Marlowe it was otherwise. With him I grew acquainted during the most impressible and receptive period of my youth. He was the first man of genius I had ever really known, and he naturally bewitched me. What cared I that they said he was a deboshed fellow? nay, an atheist? To me he was the voice of one singing in the desert, of one who had found the water of life for which I was panting, and was at rest under the palms. How can he ever become to me as other poets are? But I shall try to be lenient in my admiration.

Christopher Marlowe, the son of a shoemaker, was born at Canterbury, in February, 1563, was matriculated at Benet College, Cambridge, in 1580, received his degree of bachelor there in 1583 and of master in 1587. He came early to London, and was already known as a dramatist before the end of his twenty-fourth year. There is some reason for thinking that he was at one time an actor. He was killed in a tavern brawl, by a man named Archer, in 1593, at the age of

thirty. He was taxed with atheism, but on inadequate grounds, as it appears to me. That he was said to have written a tract against the Trinity, for which a license to print was refused on the ground of blasphemy, might easily have led to the greater charge. That he had some opinions of a kind unusual then may be inferred, perhaps, from a passage in his "Faust." Faust asks Mephistopheles how, being damned, he is out of hell. And Mephistopheles answers, "Why, this is hell, nor am I out of it." And a little farther on he explains himself thus:

> "Hell hath no limits, nor is circumscribed
> In one self place; for where we are is hell,
> And where hell is there must we ever be;
> And, to conclude, when all the earth dissolves,
> And every creature shall be purified,
> All places shall be hell that are not heaven."

Milton remembered the first passage I have quoted, and puts nearly the same words into the mouth of his Lucifer. If Marlowe was a liberal thinker, it is not strange that in that intolerant age he should have incurred the stigma of general unbelief. Men are apt to blacken opinions which are distasteful to them, and along with them the character of him who holds them.

This at least may be said of him without risk of violating the rule of *ne quid nimis*, that he is one of the most masculine and fecundating natures in the long line of British poets. Perhaps

his energy was even in excess. There is in him an Oriental lavishness. He will impoverish a province for a simile, and pour the revenues of a kingdom into the lap of a description. In that delightful story in the book of Esdras, King Darius, who has just dismissed all his captains and governors of cities and satraps, after a royal feast, sends couriers galloping after them to order them all back again, because he has found a riddle under his pillow, and wishes their aid in solving it. Marlowe in like manner calls in help from every the remotest corner of earth and heaven for what seems to us as trivial an occasion. I will not say that he is bombastic, but he constantly pushes grandiosity to the verge of bombast. His contemporaries thought he passed it in his "Tamburlaine." His imagination flames and flares, consuming what it should caress, as Jupiter did Semele. That exquisite phrase of Hamlet, "the modesty of nature," would never have occurred to him. Yet in the midst of the hurly-burly there will fall a sudden hush, and we come upon passages calm and pellucid as mountain tarns filled to the brim with the purest distillations of heaven. And, again, there are single verses that open silently as roses, and surprise us with that seemingly accidental perfection, which there is no use in talking about because itself says all that is to be said and more.

There is a passage in "Tamburlaine" which I remember reading in the first course of lectures I ever delivered, thirty-four years ago, as a poet's feeling of the inadequacy of the word to the idea: —

> "If all the pens that ever poets held
> Had fed the feeling of their masters' thoughts,
> And every sweetness that inspired their hearts,
> Their minds, and muses on admired themes;
> If all the heavenly quintessence they still
> From their immortal flowers of poesy,
> Wherein, as in a mirror, we perceive
> The highest reaches of a human wit; —
> If these had made one poem's period,
> And all combined in beauty's worthiness,
> Yet should there hover in their restless heads
> One thought, one grace, one wonder, at the least,
> Which into words no virtue can digest."

Marlowe made snatches at this forbidden fruit with vigorous leaps, and not without bringing away a prize now and then such as only the fewest have been able to reach. Of fine single verses I give a few as instances of this: —

> "Sometimes a lovely boy in Dian's shape,
> *With hair that gilds the water as it glides,*
> Shall bathe him in a spring."

Here is a couplet notable for dignity of poise describing Tamburlaine:

> "Of stature tall and straightly fashionèd,
> Like his desire, lift upward and divine."

"For every street like to a firmament
Glistered with breathing stars."

"Unwedded maids
Shadowing more beauty in their airy brows
Than have the white breasts of the queen of Love."

This from "Tamburlaine" is particularly characteristic:

"Nature
Doth teach us all to have aspiring minds.
Our souls, whose faculties can comprehend
The wondrous architecture of the world,
And measure every wandering planet's course,
Still climbing after knowledge infinite,
And always moving as the restless spheres,
Will us to wear ourselves and never rest
Until we reach the ripest fruit of all."

One of these verses reminds us of that exquisite one of Shakespeare where he says that Love is

"Still climbing trees in the Hesperides."

But Shakespeare puts a complexity of meaning into his chance sayings, and lures the fancy to excursions of which Marlowe never dreamt.

But, alas, a voice will not illustrate like a stereopticon, and this tearing away of fragments that seem to bleed with the avulsion is like breaking off a finger from a statue as a specimen.

The impression he made upon the men of his time was uniform; it was that of something new and strange; it was that of genius, in short. Drayton says of him, kindling to an unwonted

warmth, as if he loosened himself for a moment from the choking coils of his Polyolbion for a larger breath :

"Next Marlowe bathèd in the Thespian springs
Had in him those brave translunary things
That the first poets had; his raptures were
All air and fire, which made his verses clear;
For that fine madness still he did retain
Which rightly should possess a poet's brain."

And Chapman, taking up and continuing Marlowe's half-told story of Hero and Leander, breaks forth suddenly into this enthusiasm of invocation :

"Then, ho! most strangely intellectual fire
That, proper to my soul, hast power to inspire
Her burning faculties, and with the wings
Of thy unspherèd flame visit'st the springs
Of spirits immortal, now (as swift as Time
Doth follow motion) find the eternal clime
Of his free soul whose living subject stood
Up to the chin in the Pierian flood."

Surely Chapman would have sent his soul on no such errand had he believed that the soul of Marlowe was in torment, as his accusers did not scruple to say that it was, sent thither by the manifestly divine judgment of his violent death.

Yes, Drayton was right in classing him with "the first poets," for he was indeed such, and so continues, — that is, he was that most indefinable thing, an original man, and therefore as fresh

and contemporaneous to-day as he was three hundred years ago. Most of us are more or less hampered by our own individuality, nor can shake ourselves free of that chrysalis of consciousness and give our "souls a loose," as Dryden calls it in his vigorous way. And yet it seems to me that there is something even finer than that fine madness, and I think I see it in the imperturbable sanity of Shakespeare, which made him so much an artist that his new work still bettered his old. I think I see it even in the almost irritating calm of Goethe, which, if it did not quite make him an artist, enabled him to see what an artist should be, and to come as near to being one as his nature allowed. Marlowe was certainly not an artist in the larger sense, but he was cunning in words and periods and the musical modulation of them. And even this is a very rare gift. But his mind could never submit itself to a controlling purpose, and renounce all other things for the sake of that. His plays, with the single exception of "Edward II.," have no organic unity, and such unity as is here is more apparent than real. Passages in them stir us deeply and thrill us to the marrow, but each play as a whole is ineffectual. Even his "Edward II." is regular only to the eye by a more orderly arrangement of scenes and acts, and Marlowe evidently felt the drag of this restraint, for we miss the uncontrollable energy, the eruptive fire,

and the feeling that he was happy in his work. Yet Lamb was hardly extravagant in saying that "the death scene of Marlowe's king moves pity and terror beyond any scene, ancient or modern, with which I am acquainted." His tragedy of "Dido, Queen of Carthage," is also regularly plotted out, and is also somewhat tedious. Yet there are many touches that betray his burning hand. There is one passage illustrating that luxury of description into which Marlowe is always glad to escape from the business in hand. Dido tells Æneas: —

"Æneas, I'll repair thy Trojan ships
Conditionally that thou wilt stay with me,
And let Achates sail to Italy;
I'll give thee tackling made of rivelled gold,
Wound on the barks of odoriferous trees;
Oars of massy ivory, full of holes
Through which the water shall delight to play;
Thy anchors shall be hewed from crystal rocks
Which, if thou lose, shall shine above the waves;
The masts whereon thy swelling sails shall hang
Hollow pyramides of silver plate;
The sails of folded lawn, where shall be wrought
The wars of Troy, but not Troy's overthrow;
For ballast, empty Dido's treasury;
Take what ye will, but leave Æneas here.
Achates, thou shalt be so seemly clad
As sea-born nymphs shall swarm about thy ships
And wanton mermaids court thee with sweet songs,
Flinging in favors of more sovereign worth
Than Thetis hangs about Apollo's neck,
So that Æneas may but stay with me."

But far finer than this, in the same costly way, is the speech of Barabas in the "Jew of Malta," ending with a line that has incorporated itself in the language with the familiarity of a proverb: —

> "Give me the merchants of the Indian mines
> That trade in metal of the purest mould;
> The wealthy Moor that in the Eastern rocks
> Without control can pick his riches up,
> And in his house heap pearl like pebble-stones,
> Receive them free, and sell them by the weight;
> Bags of fiery opals, sapphires, amethysts,
> Jacynths, hard topaz, grass-green emeralds,
> Beauteous rubies, sparkling diamonds,
> And seld-seen costly stones of so great price
> As one of them, indifferently rated,
> . . . . . .
> May serve in peril of calamity
> To ransom great kings from captivity.
> This is the ware wherein consists my wealth:
> . . . . . .
> Infinite riches in a little room."

This is the very poetry of avarice.

Let us now look a little more closely at Marlowe as a dramatist. Here also he has an importance less for what he accomplished than for what he suggested to others. Not only do I think that Shakespeare's verse caught some hints from his, but there are certain descriptive passages and similes of the greater poet which, whenever I read them, instantly bring Marlowe

to my mind. This is an impression I might find it hard to convey to another, or even to make definite to myself; but it is an old one, and constantly repeats itself, so that I put some confidence in it. Marlowe's "Edward II." certainly served Shakespeare as a model for his earlier historical plays. Of course he surpassed his model, but Marlowe might have said of him as Oderisi, with pathetic modesty, said to Dante of his rival and surpasser, Franco of Bologna, "The praise is now all his, yet mine in part." But it is always thus. The pathfinder is forgotten when the track is once blazed out. It was in Shakespeare's "Richard II." that Lamb detected the influence of Marlowe, saying that "the reluctant pangs of abdicating royalty in Edward furnished hints which Shakespeare has scarce improved upon in Richard." In the parallel scenes of both plays the sentiment is rather elegiac than dramatic, but there is a deeper pathos, I think, in Richard, and his grief rises at times to a passion which is wholly wanting in Edward. Let me read Marlowe's abdication scene. The irresolute nature of the king is finely indicated. The Bishop of Winchester has come to demand the crown; Edward takes it off, and says:

> "Here, take my crown; the life of Edward too:
> Two kings of England cannot reign at once.
> But stay awhile: let me be king till night,

That I may gaze upon this glittering crown;
So shall my eyes receive their last content,
My head the latest honor due to it,
And jointly both yield up their wishèd right.
Continue ever, thou celestial sun;
Let never silent night possess this clime;
Stand still, you watches of the element;
All times and seasons, rest you at a stay —
That Edward may be still fair England's king!
But day's bright beam doth vanish fast away,
And needs I must resign my wishèd crown.
Inhuman creatures, nursed with tiger's milk,
Why gape you for your sovereign's overthrow? —
My diadem, I mean, and guiltless life.
See, monsters, see, I 'll wear my crown again.
What, fear you not the fury of your king?
. . . . . .
I 'll not resign, but, whilst I live, be king!"

Then, after a short further parley:

"Here, receive my crown.
Receive it? No; these innocent hands of mine
Shall not be guilty of so foul a crime:
He of you all that most desires my blood,
And will be called the murderer of a king,
Take it. What, are you moved? Pity you me?
Then send for unrelenting Mortimer,
And Isabel, whose eyes, being turned to steel,
Will sooner sparkle fire than shed a tear.
Yet stay, for rather than I 'll look on them,
Here, here! — Now, sweet God of Heaven,
Make me despise this transitory pomp,
And sit for aye enthronizèd in Heaven!
Come, Death, and with thy fingers close my eyes,
Or, if I live, let me forget myself."

Surely one might fancy that to be from the 'prentice hand of Shakespeare. It is no small distinction that this can be said of Marlowe, for it can be said of no other. What follows is still finer. The ruffian who is to murder Edward, in order to evade his distrust, pretends to weep. The king exclaims:

"Weep'st thou already? List awhile to me,
And then thy heart, were it as Gurney's is,
Or as Matrevis', hewn from the Caucasus,
Yet will it melt ere I have done my tale.
This dungeon where they keep me is the sink
Wherein the filth of all the castle falls,
And there in mire and puddle have I stood
This ten days' space; and, lest that I should sleep,
One plays continually upon a drum;
They give me bread and water, being a king;
So that, for want of sleep and sustenance,
My mind 's distempered and my body numbed,
And whether I have limbs or no I know not.
O, would my blood dropt out from every vein,
As doth this water from my tattered robes!
Tell Isabel the queen I looked not thus,
When, for her sake, I ran at tilt in France,
And there unhorsed the Duke of Clerëmont."

This is even more in Shakespeare's early manner than the other, and it is not ungrateful to our feeling of his immeasurable supremacy to think that even he had been helped in his schooling. There is a truly royal pathos in "They give me bread and water"; and "Tell Isabel the queen," instead of "Isabel my queen,"

is the most vividly dramatic touch that I remember anywhere in Marlowe. And that vision of the brilliant tournament, not more natural than it is artistic, how does it not deepen by contrast the gloom of all that went before! But you will observe that the verse is rather epic than dramatic. I mean by this that its every pause and every movement are regularly cadenced. There is a kingly composure in it, perhaps, but were the passage not so finely pathetic as it is, or the diction less naturally simple, it would seem stiff. Nothing is more peculiarly characteristic of the mature Shakespeare than the way in which his verses curve and wind themselves with the fluctuating emotion or passion of the speaker and echo his mood. Let me illustrate this by a speech of Imogen when Pisanio gives her a letter from her husband bidding her meet him at Milford-Haven. The words seem to waver to and fro, or huddle together before the hurrying thought, like sheep when the collie chases them.

"O, for a horse with wings! — Hear'st thou, Pisanio?
He is at Milford-Haven: read, and tell me
How far 't is thither. If one of mean affairs
May plod it in a week, why may not I
Glide thither in a day? — Then, true Pisanio —
Who long'st like me to see thy lord; who long'st —
O, let me 'bate — but not like me — yet long'st —
But in a fainter kind: — O, not like me;
For mine 's beyond beyond: say, and speak thick, —

Love's counsellor should fill the bores of hearing,
To the smothering of the sense, — how far it is
To this same blessed Milford: and, by the way,
Tell me how Wales was made so happy as
To inherit such a haven; but, first of all,
How we may steal from hence."

The whole speech is breathless with haste, and is in keeping not only with the feeling of the moment, but with what we already know of the impulsive character of Imogen. Marlowe did not, for he could not, teach Shakespeare this secret, nor has anybody else ever learned it.

There are, properly speaking, no characters in the plays of Marlowe — but personages and interlocutors. We do not get to know them, but only to know what they do and say. The nearest approach to a character is Barabas, in the "Jew of Malta," and he is but the incarnation of the popular hatred of the Jew. There is really nothing human in him. He seems a bugaboo rather than a man. Here is his own account of himself:

"As for myself, I walk abroad o' nights,
And kill sick people groaning under walls;
Sometimes I go about and poison wells;
And now and then, to cherish Christian thieves,
I am content to lose some of my crowns,
That I may, walking in my gallery,
See 'em go pinioned by my door along;
Being young, I studied physic, and began
To practise first upon the Italian;
There I enriched the priests with burials,

And always kept the sexton's arms in ure
With digging graves and ringing dead men's knells;
And, after that, was I an engineer,
And in the wars 'twixt France and Germany,
Under pretence of helping Charles the Fifth,
Slew friend and enemy with my stratagems.
Then, after that, was I an usurer,
And with extorting, cozening, forfeiting,
And tricks belonging unto brokery,
I filled the jails with bankrupts in a year,
And with young orphans planted hospitals;
And every moon made some or other mad,
And now and then one hang himself for grief,
Pinning upon his breast a long great scroll
How I with interest tormented him.
But mark how I am blest for plaguing them —
I have as much coin as will buy the town."

Here is nothing left for sympathy. This is the mere lunacy of distempered imagination. It is shocking, and not terrible. Shakespeare makes no such mistake with Shylock. His passions are those of a man, though of a man depraved by oppression and contumely; and he shows sentiment, as when he says of the ring that Jessica had given for a monkey: "It was my turquoise. I had it of Leah when I was a bachelor." And yet, observe the profound humor with which Shakespeare makes him think first of its dearness as a precious stone and then as a keepsake. In letting him exact his pound of flesh, he but follows the story as he found it in Giraldi Cinthio, and is careful to let us know

that this Jew had good reason, or thought he had, to hate Christians. At the end, I think he meant us to pity Shylock, and we do pity him. And with what a smiling background of love and poetry does he give relief to the sombre figure of the Jew! In Marlowe's play there is no respite. And yet it comes nearer to having a connected plot, in which one event draws on another, than any other of his plays. I do not think Milman right in saying that the interest falls off after the first two acts. I find enough to carry me on to the end, where the defiant death of Barabas in a caldron of boiling oil he had arranged for another victim does something to make a man of him. But there is no controlling reason in the piece. Nothing happens because it must, but because the author wills it so. The conception of life is purely arbitrary, and as far from nature as that of an imaginative child. It is curious, however, that here, too, Marlowe should have pointed the way to Shakespeare. But there is no resemblance between the Jew of Malta and the Jew of Venice, except that both have daughters whom they love. Nor is the analogy close even here. The love which Barabas professes for his child fails to humanize him to us, because it does not prevent him from making her the abhorrent instrument of his wanton malice in the death of her lover, and because we cannot believe him capable of loving

anything but gold and vengeance. There is always something extravagant in the imagination of Marlowe, but here it is the extravagance of absurdity. Generally he gives us an impression of power, of vastness, though it be the vastness of chaos, where elemental forces hurtle blindly one against the other. But they are elemental forces, and not mere stage properties. Even Tamburlaine, if we see in him — as Marlowe, I think, meant that we should see — the embodiment of brute force, without reason and without conscience, ceases to be a blusterer, and becomes, indeed, as he asserts himself, the scourge of God. There is an exultation of strength in this play that seems to add a cubit to our stature. Marlowe had found the way that leads to style, and helped others to find it, but he never arrived there. He had not self-denial enough. He can refuse nothing to his fancy. He fails of his effect by over-emphasis, heaping upon a slender thought a burthen of expression too heavy for it to carry. But it is not with fagots, but with priceless Oriental stuffs, that he breaks their backs.

Marlowe's "Dr. Faustus" interests us in another way. Here he again shows himself as a precursor. There is no attempt at profound philosophy in this play, and in the conduct of it Marlowe has followed the prose history of Dr. Faustus closely, even in its scenes of mere

buffoonery. Disengaged from these, the figure of the protagonist is not without grandeur. It is not avarice or lust that tempts him at first, but power. Weary of his studies in law, medicine, and divinity, which have failed to bring him what he seeks, he turns to necromancy: —

"These metaphysics of magicians
And necromantic books are heavenly.
. . . . . .
Oh, what a world of profit and delight,
Of power, of honor, of omnipotence,
Is promised to the studious artisan!
All things that move between the quiet poles
Shall be at my command. Emperors and kings
Are but obeyèd in their several provinces,
Nor can they raise the winds or rend the clouds;
But his dominion that exceeds in this
Stretcheth as far as doth the mind of man;
A sound magician is a mighty god:
Hĕre, Faustus, tire thy brains to gain a deity."

His good angel intervenes, but the evil spirit at the other ear tempts him with power again: —

"Be thou on earth as Jove is in the sky,
Lord and commander of these elements."

Ere long Faustus begins to think of power for baser uses: —

"How am I glutted with conceit of this!
Shall I make spirits fetch me what I please,
Resolve me of all ambiguities,
Perform what desperate enterprise I will?
I 'll have them fly to India for gold,

Ransack the ocean for orient pearl,
And search all corners of the new-found world
For pleasant fruits and princely delicates;
I 'll have them read me strange philosophy,
And tell the secrets of all foreign kings."

And yet it is always to the pleasures of the intellect that he returns. It is when the good and evil spirits come to him for the second time that wealth is offered as a bait, and after Faustus has signed away his soul to Lucifer, he is tempted even by more sensual allurements. I may be reading into the book what is not there, but I cannot help thinking that Marlowe intended in this to typify the inevitably continuous degradation of a soul that has renounced its ideal, and the drawing on of one vice by another, for they go hand in hand like the Hours. But even in his degradation the pleasures of Faustus are mainly of the mind, or at worst of a sensuous and not sensual kind. No doubt in this Marlowe is unwittingly betraying his own tastes. Faustus is made to say:

"And long ere this I should have slain myself
Had not sweet pleasure conquered deep despair.
Have I not made blind Homer sing to me
Of Alexander's love and Œnon's death?
And hath not he that built the walls of Thebes
With ravishing sound of his melodious harp
Made music with my Mephistophilis?
Why should I die, then? basely why despair?"

This employment of the devil in a duet seems

odd. I remember no other instance of his appearance as a musician except in Burns's "Tam o' Shanter." The last wish of Faustus was Helen of Troy. Mephistophilis fetches her, and Faustus exclaims:

> "Was this the face that launched a thousand ships,
> And burned the topless towers of Ilium?
> Sweet Helen, make me immortal with a kiss!
> . . . . . .
> Here will I dwell, for Heaven is in these lips,
> And all is dross that is not Helena:
> . . . . . .
> Oh, thou art fairer than the evening air
> Clad in the beauty of a thousand stars."

No such verses had ever been heard on the English stage before, and this was one of the great debts our language owes to Marlowe. He first taught it what passion and fire were in its veins. The last scene of the play, in which the bond with Lucifer becomes payable, is nobly conceived. Here the verse rises to the true dramatic sympathy of which I spoke. It is swept into the vortex of Faust's eddying thought, and seems to writhe and gasp in the agony of hopeless despair: —

> "Ah, Faustus,
> Now hast thou but one bare hour to live,
> And then thou must be damned perpetually!
> Stand still, ye ever-moving spheres of Heaven,
> That time may cease and midnight never come;
> Fair Nature's eye, rise, rise again, and make

Perpetual day; or let this hour be but
A year, a month, a week, a natural day,
That Faustus may repent and save his soul!
The stars move still, time runs, the clock will strike,
The devil will come, and Faustus must be damned.
Oh, I'll leap up to my God! Who pulls me down?
See, see, where Christ's blood streams in the firmament!
One drop would save my soul — half a drop; ah, my Christ!
Ah, rend not my heart for naming of my Christ!
Yet will I call on Him. Oh, spare me, Lucifer!
Where is it now? 'T is gone; and see where God
Stretcheth out His arm and bends His ireful brows!
Mountains and hills, come, come and fall on me,
And hide me from the heavy wrath of God!
No? No?
Then will I headlong run into the earth.
Earth, gape! Oh no, it will not harbor me!
. . . . . .
Ah! half the hour is past; 't will all be past anon.
O God,
If Thou wilt not have mercy on my soul,
Yet, for Christ's sake, whose blood hath ransomed me,
Impose some end to my incessant pain;
Let Faustus live in hell a thousand years —
A hundred thousand — and at last be saved!
Oh, no end 's limited to damnèd souls.
Why wert thou not a creature wanting soul?
Or why was this immortal that thou hast?
Ah, Pythagoras' metempsychosis, were that true,
This soul should fly from me, and I be changed
Unto some brutish beast! All beasts are happy,
For when they die
Their souls are soon dissolved in elements;
But mine must live still to be plagued in Hell!
Cursed be the parents that engendered me!

No, Faustus, curse thyself, curse Lucifer,
That hath deprived thee of the joys of Heaven.
Oh, it strikes! it strikes! Now, body, turn to air,
Or Lucifer will bear thee quick to Hell.
O soul, be changed to little waterdrops
And fall into the ocean; ne'er be found!
My God, my God, look not so fierce on me!
Adders and serpents, let me breathe awhile.
Ugly Hell, gape not. Come not, Lucifer!
I 'll burn my books. Ah, Mephistophilis!"

It remains to say a few words of Marlowe's poem of "Hero and Leander," for in translating it from Musæus he made it his own. It has great ease and fluency of versification, and many lines as perfect in their concinnity as those of Pope, but infused with a warmer coloring and a more poetic fancy. Here is found the verse that Shakespeare quotes somewhere. The second verse of the following couplet has precisely Pope's cadence: —

"Unto her was he led, or rather drawn,
By those white limbs that sparkled through the lawn."

It was from this poem that Keats caught the inspiration for his "Endymion." A single passage will serve to prove this: —

"So fair a church as this had Venus none:
The walls were of discolored jasper stone,
Wherein was Proteus carved; and overhead
A lively vine of green sea-agate spread,
Where by one hand light-headed Bacchus hung,
And with the other wine from grapes outwrung."

Milton, too, learned from Marlowe the charm of those long sequences of musical proper names of which he made such effective use. Here are two passages which Milton surely had read and pondered: —

> "So from the East unto the furthest West
> Shall Tamburlaine extend his puissant arm;
> The galleys and those pilling brigantines
> That yearly sail to the Venetian gulf,
> And hover in the straits for Christians' wreck,
> Shall lie at anchor in the isle Asant,
> Until the Persian fleet and men of war
> Sailing along the Oriental sea
> Have fetched about the Indian continent,
> Even from Persepolis to Mexico,
> And thence unto the straits of Jubaltar."

This is still more Miltonic: —

> "As when the seaman sees the Hyades
> Gather an army of Cimmerian clouds,
> Auster and Aquilon with wingèd steeds,
> . . . . . .
> All fearful folds his sails and sounds the main."

Spenser, too, loved this luxury of sound, as he shows in such passages as this: —

> "Now was Aldebaran uplifted high
> Above the starry Cassiopeia's chair."

And I fancy he would have put him there to make music, even had it been astronomically impossible, but he never strung such names in long necklaces, as Marlowe and Milton were fond of doing.

Was Marlowe, then, a great poet? For such a title he had hardly range enough of power, hardly reach enough of thought. But surely he had some of the finest qualities that go to the making of a great poet; and his poetic instinct, when he had time to give himself wholly over to its guidance, was unerring. I say when he had time enough, for he, too, like his fellows, was forced to make the daily task bring in the daily bread. We have seen how fruitful his influence has been, and perhaps his genius could have no surer warrant than that the charm of it lingered in the memory of poets, for theirs is the memory of mankind. If we allow him genius, what need to ask for more? And perhaps it would be only to him among the group of dramatists who surrounded Shakespeare that we should allow it. He was the herald that dropped dead in announcing the victory in whose fruits he was not to share.

III

WEBSTER

IN my first lecture I spoke briefly of the deficiency in respect of Form which characterizes nearly all the dramatic literature of which we are taking a summary survey, till the example of Shakespeare and the precepts of Ben Jonson wrought their natural effect. Teleology, or the argument from means to end, the argument of adaptation, is not so much in fashion in some spheres of thought and speculation as it once was, but here it applies admirably. We have a piece of work, and we know the maker of it. The next question that we ask ourselves is the very natural one — how far it shows marks of intelligent design. In a play we not only expect a succession of scenes, but that each scene should lead, by a logic more or less stringent, if not to the next, at any rate to something that is to follow, and that all should contribute their fraction of impulse towards the inevitable catastrophe. That is to say, the structure should be organic, with a necessary and harmonious connection and relation of parts, and not merely mechanical, with an arbitrary or haphazard joining of one part to another. It is in the former sense alone that any production can be called a work of art.

And when we apply the word Form in this sense to some creation of the mind, we imply that there is a life, or, what is still better, a soul in it. That there is an intimate relation, or, at any rate, a close analogy, between Form in this its highest attribute and Imagination, is evident if we remember that the Imagination is the shaping faculty. This is, indeed, its preëminent function, to which all others are subsidiary. Shakespeare, with his usual depth of insight and the precision that comes of it, tells us that "imagination bodies forth the forms of things unknown." In his maturer creations there is generally some central thought about which the action revolves like a moon, carried along with it in its appointed orbit, and permitted the gambol of a Ptolemaic epicycle now and then. But the word Form has also more limited applications, as, for example, when we use it to imply that nice sense of proportion and adaptation which results in Style. We may apply it even to the structure of a verse, or of a short poem in which every advantage has been taken of the material employed, as in Keats's "Ode to a Grecian Urn," which seems as perfect in its outline as the thing it so lovingly celebrates. In all these cases there often seems also to be something intuitive or instinctive in the working of certain faculties of the poet, and to this we unconsciously testify when we call it genius. But in

the technic of this art, perfection can be reached only by long training, as was evident in the case of Coleridge. Of course, without the genius all the training in the world will produce only a mechanical and lifeless result; but even if the genius is there, there is nothing too seemingly trifling to deserve its study. The "Elegy in a Country Churchyard" owes much of the charm that makes it precious, even with those who perhaps undervalue its sentiment, to Gray's exquisite sense of the value of vowel sounds.

Let us, however, come down to what is within the reach and under the control of talent and of a natural or acquired dexterity. And such a thing is the plot or arrangement of a play. In this part of their business our older playwrights are especially unskilled or negligent. They seem perfectly content if they have a story which they can divide at proper intervals by acts and scenes, and bring at last to a satisfactory end by marriage or murder, as the case may be. A certain variety of characters is necessary, but the motives that compel and control them are almost never sufficiently apparent. And this is especially true of the dramatic motives, as distinguished from the moral. The personages are brought in to do certain things and perform certain purposes of the author, but too often there seems to be no special reason why one of them should do this or that more than another. They are servants of all

work, ready to be villains or fools at a moment's notice if required. The obliging simplicity with which they walk into traps which everybody can see but themselves, is sometimes almost delightful in its absurdity. Ben Jonson was perfectly familiar with the traditional principles of construction. He tells us that the fable of a drama (by which he means the plot or action) should have a beginning, a middle, and an end; and that "as a body without proportion cannot be goodly, no more can the action, either in comedy or tragedy, without his fit bounds." But he goes on to say "that as every bound, for the nature of the subject, is esteemed the best that is largest, till it can increase no more; so it behoves the action in tragedy or comedy to be let grow till the necessity ask a conclusion; wherein two things are to be considered — first, that it exceed not the compass of one day; next, that there be place left for digression and art." The weakness of our earlier playwrights is that they esteemed those bounds best that were largest, and let their action grow till they had to stop it.

Many of Shakespeare's contemporary poets must have had every advantage that he had in practical experience of the stage, and all of them had probably as familiar an intercourse with the theatre as he. But what a difference between their manner of constructing a play and his! In all his dramatic works his skill in this is more

or less apparent. In the best of them it is unrivalled. From the first scene of them he seems to have beheld as from a tower the end of all. In "Romeo and Juliet," for example, he had his story before him, and he follows it closely enough; but how naturally one scene is linked to the next, and one event leads to another! If this play were meant to illustrate anything, it would seem to be that our lives were ruled by chance. Yet there is nothing left to chance in the action of the play, which advances with the unvacillating foot of destiny. And the characters are made to subordinate themselves to the interests of the play as to something in which they have all a common concern. With the greater part of the secondary dramatists, the characters seem like unpractised people trying to walk the deck of a ship in rough weather, who start for everywhere to bring up anywhere, and are hustled against each other in the most inconvenient way. It is only when the plot is very simple and straightforward that there is any chance of smooth water and of things going on without falling foul of each other. Was it only that Shakespeare, in choosing his themes, had a keener perception of the dramatic possibilities of a story? This is very likely, and it is certain that he preferred to take a story ready to his hand rather than invent one. All the good stories, indeed, seem to have invented them-

selves in the most obliging manner somewhere in the morning of the world, and to have been camp-followers when the famous march of mind set out from the farthest East. But where he invented his plot, as in the "Midsummer Night's Dream" and the "Tempest," he is careful to have it as little complicated with needless incident as possible.

These thoughts were suggested to me by the gratuitous miscellaneousness of plot (if I may so call it) in some of the plays of John Webster, concerning whose works I am to say something this evening, a complication made still more puzzling by the motiveless conduct of many of the characters. When he invented a plot of his own, as in his comedy of the "Devil's Law Case," the improbabilities become insuperable, by which I mean that they are such as not merely the understanding but the imagination cannot get over. For mere common sense has little to do with the affair. Shakespeare cared little for anachronisms, or whether there were seaports in Bohemia or not, any more than Calderon cared that gunpowder had not been invented centuries before the Christian era when he wanted an arquebus to be fired, because the noise of a shot would do for him what a silent arrow would not do. But, if possible, the understanding should have as few difficulties put in its way as possible. Shakespeare is careful to place his Ariel in the

not yet wholly disenchanted Bermudas, near which Sir John Hawkins had seen a mermaid not many years before, and lays the scene for his Oberon and Titania in the dim remoteness of legendary Athens, though his clowns are unmistakably English, and though he knew as well as we do that Puck was a British goblin. In estimating material improbability as distinguished from moral, however, we should give our old dramatists the benefit of the fact that all the world was a great deal farther away in those days than in ours, when the electric telegraph puts our button into the grip of whatever commonplace our planet is capable of producing.

Moreover, in respect of Webster as of his fellows, we must, in order to understand them, first naturalize our minds in *their* world. Chapman makes Byron say to Queen Elizabeth:

> "These stars,
> Whose influences for this latitude
> Distilled, and wrought in with this temperate air,
> And this division of the elements,
> Have with your reign brought forth more worthy spirits
> For counsel, valour, height of wit, and art,
> Than any other region of the earth,
> Or were brought forth to all your ancestors."

And this is apt to be the only view we take of that Golden Age, as we call it fairly enough in one, and that, perhaps, the most superficial, sense. But it was in many ways rude and savage, an age of great crimes and of the ever-brood-

ing suspicion of great crimes. Queen Elizabeth herself was the daughter of a king as savagely cruel and irresponsible as the Grand Turk. It was an age that in Italy could breed a Cenci, and in France could tolerate the massacre of St. Bartholomew as a legitimate stroke of statecraft. But when we consider whether crime be a fit subject for tragedy, we must distinguish. Merely as crime, it is vulgar, as are the waxen images of murderers with the very rope round their necks with which they were hanged. Crime becomes then really tragic when it merely furnishes the theme for a profound psychological study of motive and character. The weakness of Webster's two greatest plays lies in this — that crime is presented as a spectacle, and not as a means of looking into our own hearts and fathoming our own consciousness.

The scene of the "Devil's Law Case" is Naples, then a viceroyalty of Spain, and our ancestors thought anything possible in Italy. Leonora, a widow, has a son and daughter, Romelio and Jolenta. Romelio is a rich and prosperous merchant. Jolenta is secretly betrothed to Contarino, an apparently rather spendthrift young nobleman, who has already borrowed large sums of money of Romelio on the security of his estates. Romelio is bitterly opposed to his marrying Jolenta, for reasons known only to himself; at least, no reason appears for it, except that the

play could not have gone on without it. The reason he assigns is that he has a grudge against the nobility, though it appears afterwards that he himself is of noble birth, and asserts his equality with them. When Contarino, at the opening of the play, comes to urge his suit, and asks him how he looks upon it, Romelio answers:

"Believe me, sir, as on the principal column
To advance our house; why, you bring honour with you,
Which is the soul of wealth. I shall be proud
To live to see my little nephews ride
O' the upper hand of their uncles, and the daughters
Be ranked by heralds at solemnities
Before the mother; and all this derived
From your nobility. Do not blame, sir,
If I be taken with 't exceedingly;
For this same honour with us citizens
Is a thing we are mainly fond of, especially
When it comes without money, which is very seldom.
But as you do perceive my present temper,
Be sure I 'm yours."

And of this Contarino was sure, the irony of Romelio's speech having been so delicately conveyed that he was unable to perceive it.

A little earlier in this scene a speech is put into the mouth of Romelio so characteristic of Webster's more sententious style that I will repeat it: —

"O, my lord, lie not idle:
The chiefest action for a man of great spirit
Is never to be out of action. We should think
The soul was never put into the body,

Which has so many rare and curious pieces
Of mathematical motion, to stand still.
Virtue is ever sowing of her seeds;
I' th' trenches for the soldiers, i' th' wakeful study
For the scholar, in the furrows of the sea
For men of our profession, of all which
Arise and spring up honour."

This recalls to mind the speech of Ulysses to Achilles in "Troilus and Cressida," a piece of eloquence which, for the impetuous charge of serried argument and poetic beauty of illustration, grows more marvellous with every reading. But it is hardly fair to any other poet to let him remind us of Shakespeare.

Contarino, on leaving Romelio, goes to Leonora, the mother, who immediately conceives a violent passion for him. He, by way of a pretty compliment, tells her that he has a suit to her, and that it is for her picture. By this he meant her daughter, but with the flattering implication that you would not know the parent from the child. Leonora, of course, takes him literally, is gracious accordingly, and Contarino is satisfied that he has won her consent also. This scene gives occasion for a good example of Webster's more playful style, which is perhaps worth quoting. Still apropos of her portrait, Leonora says:

"You will enjoin me to a strange punishment.
With what a compelled face a woman sits
While she is drawing! I have noted divers

Either to feign smiles, or suck in the lips
To have a little mouth; ruffle the cheeks
To have the dimple seen; and so disorder
The face with affectation, at next sitting
It has not been the same: I have known others
Have lost the entire fashion of their face
In half an hour's sitting. . . .
But indeed
If ever I would have mine drawn to th' life,
I'd have a painter steal it at such a time
I were devoutly kneeling at my prayers;
There's then a heavenly beauty in't; the soul
Moves in the superficies."

The poet shows one of his habitual weaknesses here in being so far tempted by the chance of saying a pretty thing as to make somebody say it who naturally would not. There is really a worse waste than had it been thrown away. I am inclined to think men as vain about their portraits as Leonora makes women to be, or else the story of Cromwell's wart would not be so famous. However, Contarino goes away satisfied with the result of his embassy, saying to himself:

"She has got some intelligence how I intend to marry
Her daughter, and ingenuously perceived
That by her picture, which I begged of her,
I meant the fair Jolenta."

There is no possible reason why he should not have conveyed this intelligence to her himself, and Leonora must have been ingenious indeed to divine it, except that the plot would

not allow it. Presently another match is found for Jolenta in Ercole, which Romelio favors for reasons again known only to himself, though he is a noble quite as much as Contarino. Ercole is the pattern of a chivalrous gentleman. Though he at once falls in love with Jolenta, according to Marlowe's rule that "he never loved that loved not at first sight," and though Romelio and the mother both urge the immediate signing of the contract, he refuses.

> "Lady, I will do
> A manly office for you; I will leave you
> To th' freedom of your own soul; may it move
> Whither Heaven and you please!
> . . . . . .
> I'll leave you, excellent lady, and withal
> Leave a heart with you so entirely yours
> That I protest, had I the least of hope
> To enjoy you, though I were to wait the time
> That scholars do in taking their degree
> In the noble arts, 't were nothing: howsoe'er,
> He parts from you, that will depart from life
> To do you any service; and so humbly
> I take my leave."

Never, I think, was more delicate compliment paid to a woman than in that fine touch which puts the service of her on a level with the "noble arts." On this ground of sentiment idealized by devotion, Webster always moves with the assured ease and dignified familiarity of a thorough gentleman.

Ercole's pretension to the hand of Jolenta

leads, of course, to a duel with Contarino. They had been fellow students together at Padua, and the scene in which the preliminaries of the duel are arranged is pitched on as nobly grave a key as can be conceived. Lamb very justly calls it "the model of a well-arranged and gentleman-like difference." There is no swagger and no bravado in it, as is too commonly apt to be the case in the plays of that age. There is something Spanish in its dignity. To show what its tone is, I quote the opening. It is Contarino who first speaks.

"Sir, my love to you has proclaimed you one
Whose word was still led by a noble thought,
And that thought followed by as fair a deed.
Deceive not that opinion. We were students
At Padua together, and have long
To th' world's eye shown like friends; was it hearty
On your part to me?
Erc. Unfeigned.
Con. You are false
To the good thought I held of you, and now
Join the worst part of man to you, your malice,
To uphold that falsehood: sacred innocence
Is fled your bosom. Signior, I must tell you,
To draw the picture of unkindness truly
Is to express two that have dearly loved
And fall'n at variance; 't is a wonder to me,
Knowing my interest in the fair Jolenta,
That you should love her.
Erc. Compare her beauty and my youth together
And you will find the fair effects of love
No miracle at all."

They fight, and both fall mortally wounded, as it is supposed. Ercole is reported dead, and Contarino dying, having first made a will in favor of Jolenta. Romelio, disguised as a Jew, to avenge the injury to himself in the death of Ercole, and to make sure that Contarino shall not survive to alter his will, gets admission to him by bribing his surgeons, and stabs him. This saves his life by reopening the old wound and letting forth its virus. Of course both he and Ercole recover, and both conceal themselves, though why, it is hard to say, except that they are not wanted again till towards the end of the play. Romelio, unaware of his mother's passion for Contarino, tells her, as a piece of good news she will be glad to hear, of what he has done. She at once resolves on a most horrible and unnatural revenge. Her speech has a kind of savage grandeur in it which Webster was fond of showing, for he rightly felt that it was his strongest quality, though it often tempted him too far, till it became bestial in its ferocity. It is to be observed that he was on his guard here, and gives us a hint, as you will see, in a highly imaginative passage, that Leonora's brain was turning: —

> "I will make you chief mourner, believe it.
> Never was woe like mine. O, that my care
> And absolute study to preserve his life
> Should be his absolute ruin! Is he gone, then?

There is no plague i' th' world can be compar'd
To impossible desire; for they are plagu'd
In the desire itself. Never, O, never
Shall I behold him living, in whose life
I liv'd far sweetlier than in mine own!
A precise curiosity has undone me: why did I not
Make my love known directly? 'T had not been
Beyond example for a matron
To affect i' th' honourable way of marriage
So youthful a person. O, I shall run mad!
For as we love our youngest children best,
So the last fruit of our affection,
Wherever we bestow it, is most strong,
Most violent, most unresistible,
Since 't is indeed our latest harvest-home,
Last merriment 'fore winter; and we widows,
As men report of our best picture-makers,
We love the piece we are in hand with better
Than all the excellent work we have done before.
And my son has depriv'd me of all this! Ha, my son!
I 'll be a Fury to him; like an Amazon lady,
I 'd cut off this right pap that gave him suck,
To shoot him dead. I 'll no more tender him,
Than had a wolf stol'n to my teat i' the night
And robb'd me of my milk; nay, such a creature
I should love better far. Ha, ha! what say you?
I do talk to somewhat, methinks; it may be
My evil Genius. Do not the bells ring?
I have a strange noise in my head: O, fly in pieces!
Come, age, and wither me into the malice
Of those that have been happy! Let me have
One property more than the devil of hell;
Let me envy the pleasure of youth heartily;
Let me in this life fear no kind of ill,
That have no good to hope for; let me die
In the distraction of that worthy princess

Who loathed food, and sleep, and ceremony,
For thought of losing that brave gentleman
She would fain have sav'd, had not a false conveyance
Express'd him stubborn-hearted. Let me sink
Where neither man nor memory may ever find me."

Webster forestalled Balzac by two hundred years in what he says of a woman's last passion. The revenge on which she fixes is, at the cost of her own honor, to declare Romelio illegitimate. She says that his true father was one Crispiano, a Spanish gentleman, the friend of her husband. Naturally, when the trial comes on, Crispiano, unrecognized, turns up in court as the very judge who is to preside over it. He first gets the year of the alleged adultery fixed by the oath of Leonora and her maid, and then professes to remember that Crispiano had told him of giving a portrait of himself to Leonora, has it sent for, and, revealing himself, identifies himself by it, saying, prettily enough (those old dramatists have a way of stating dry facts so fancifully as to make them blossom, as it were),

"Behold, I am the shadow of this shadow."

He then proves an alibi at the date in question by his friend Ariosto, whom meanwhile he has just promoted to the bench in his own place, by virtue of a convenient commission from the king of Spain, which he has in his pocket. At the end of the trial, the counsel for Leonora exclaims:

"Ud's foot, we're spoiled;
Why, our client is proved an honest woman!"

Which I cite only because it reminds me to say that Webster has a sense of humor more delicate, and a way of showing it less coarse, than most of his brother dramatists. Meanwhile Webster saves Romelio from being hateful beyond possibility of condonation by making him perfectly fearless. He says finely:

"I cannot set myself so many fathom
Beneath the height of my true heart as fear.
Let me continue
An honest man, which I am very certain
A coward can never be."

The last words convey an important and even profound truth. And let me say now, once for all, that Webster abounds, more than any of his contemporaries except Chapman, in these metaphysical apothegms, and that he introduces them naturally, while Chapman is too apt to drag them in by the ears. Here is another as good, I am tempted to say, as many of Shakespeare's, save only in avarice of words. When Leonora is suborning Winifred, her maid, to aid her in the plot against her son, she says:

"Come hither:
I have a weighty secret to impart,
But I would have thee first confirm to me
How I may trust that thou canst keep my counsel
Beyond death.
Win. Why, mistress, 't is your only way

To enjoin me first that I reveal to you
The worst act I e'er did in all my life;
One secret so shall bind another.
Leon. Thou instruct'st me
Most ingeniously; for indeed it is not fit,
Where any act is plotted that is naught,
Any of counsel to it should be good;
And, in a thousand ills have happ'd i' th' world,
The intelligence of one another's shame
Hath wrought far more effectually than the tie
Of conscience or religion."

The plot has other involutions of so unpleasant a nature now through change of manners that I shall but allude to them. They are perhaps intended to darken Romelio's character to the proper Websterian sable, but they certainly rather make an eddy in the current of the action than hasten it as they should.

I have briefly analyzed this play because its plot is not a bad sample of a good many others, and because the play itself is less generally known than Webster's deservedly more famous "Vittoria Corombona" and the "Duchess of Malfi." Before coming to these, I will mention his "Appius and Virginia," a spirited, well-constructed play (for here the simplicity of the incidents kept him within bounds), and, I think, as good as any other founded on a Roman story except Shakespeare's. It is of a truly Roman temper, and perhaps, therefore, incurs a suspicion of being cast iron. Webster, like Ben

Jonson, knew, theoretically at least, how a good play should be put together. In his preface to the "Devil's Law Case" he says: "A great part of the grace of this lay in action; yet can no action ever be gracious, where the decency of the language and ingenious structure of the scene arrive not to make up a perfect harmony."

The "White Devil, or Vittoria Corombona," produced in 1612, and the "Duchess of Malfi," in 1616, are the two works by which Webster is remembered. In these plays there is almost something like a fascination of crime and horror. Our eyes dazzle with them. The imagination that conceived them is a ghastly imagination. Hell is naked before it. It is the imagination of nightmare, but of no vulgar nightmare. I would rather call it fantasy than imagination, for there is something fantastic in its creations, and the fantastic is dangerously near to the grotesque, while the imagination, where it is most authentic, is most serene. Even to elicit strong emotion, it is the still small voice that is most effective; nor is Webster unaware of this, as I shall show presently. Both these plays are full of horrors, yet they do move pity and terror strongly also. We feel that we are under the control of a usurped and illegitimate power, but it is power. I remember seeing a picture in some Belgian church where an angel makes a motion to arrest the hand of the Almighty just

as it is stretched forth in the act of the creation. If the angel foresaw that the world to be created was to be such a one as Webster conceived, we can fully understand his impulse. Through both plays there is a vapor of fresh blood and a scent of churchyard mould in the air. They are what children call *creepy*. Ghosts are ready at any moment: they seem, indeed, to have formed a considerable part of the population in those days. As an instance of the almost ludicrous way in which they were employed, take this stage direction from Chapman's "Revenge of Bussy d'Ambois": "Music, and the ghost of Bussy enters leading the ghosts of the Guise, Monsieur, Cardinal Guise, and Chatillon; they dance about the body and *exeunt*." It is fair to say that Webster's ghosts are far from comic.

Let me briefly analyze the "White Devil." Vittoria Corombona, a beautiful woman, is married to Camillo, whom she did not love. She becomes the paramour of the Duke of Brachiano, whose Duchess is the sister of Francesco de' Medici and of Cardinal Monticelso. One of the brothers of Vittoria, Flamineo, is secretary to Brachiano, and contrives to murder Camillo for them. Vittoria, as there is no sufficient proof to fix the charge of murder upon her, is tried for incontinency, and sent to a house of Convertites, whence Brachiano spirits her away, meaning to marry her. In the mean while Bra-

chiano's Duchess is got out of the way by poison; the lips of his portrait, which she kisses every night before going to bed, having been smeared with a deadly drug to that end. There is a Count Ludovico, who had proffered an unholy love to the Duchess, but had been repulsed by her, and he gladly offers himself as the minister of vengeance. Just as Brachiano is arming for a tournament arranged for the purpose by his brother-in-law, the Duke of Florence, Ludovico poisons his helmet, so that he shortly dies in torture. Ludovico then murders Vittoria, Zanche, her Moorish maid, and Flamineo, and is himself shot by the guards of the young Duke Giovanni, son of Brachiano, who break in upon him just as he has completed his butchery. There are but four characters in the play unstained with crime — Cornelia, Vittoria's mother; Marcello, her younger son; the Duchess of Brachiano; and her son, the young Duke. There are three scenes in the play remarkable for their effectiveness, or for their power in different ways — the trial scene of Vittoria, the death scene of Brachiano, and that of Vittoria. There is another — the burial of Marcello — which is pathetic as few men have known how to be so simply and with so little effort as Webster.

"*Fran. de' Med.* Your reverend mother
Is grown a very old woman in two hours.
I found them winding of Marcello's corse;

And there is such a solemn melody,
'Tween doleful songs, tears, and sad elegies —
Such as old grandams watching by the dead
Were wont to outweare the nights with — that, believe me,
I had no eyes to guide me forth the room,
They were so o'ercharg'd with water.

Flam. I will see them.

Fran. de' Med. 'T were much uncharity in you, for your sight
Will add unto their tears.

Flam. I will see them:
They are behind the traverse; I 'll discover
Their superstitious howling.

[*Draws the curtain.* Cornelia, Zanche, *and three other* Ladies *discovered winding* Marcello's *corse. A song.*

Cor. This rosemary is wither'd; pray, get fresh;
I would have these herbs grow up in his grave
When I am dead and rotten. Reach the bays;
I 'll tie a garland here about his head;
'T will keep my boy from lightning. This sheet
I have kept this twenty year, and every day
Hallow'd it with my prayers. I did not think
He should have wore it.

Zanche. Look you who are yonder.

Cor. O, reach me the flowers.

Zanche. Her ladyship 's foolish.

Lady. Alas, her grief
Hath turn'd her child again!

Cor. You 're very welcome:
There 's rosemary for you; and rue for you; [*To* Flamineo.
Heart's-ease for you; I pray make much of it:
I have left more for myself.

Fran. de' Med. Lady, who 's this?

Cor. You are, I take it, the grave-maker.

Flam. So.

Zanche. 'T is Flamineo.

Cor. Will you make me such a fool? Here's a white hand.

Can blood so soon be wash'd out? Let me see:
When screech-owls croak upon the chimney-tops,
And the strange cricket i' the oven sings and hops,
When yellow spots do on your hands appear,
Be certain then you of a corse shall hear.
Out upon 't, how 't is speckled! h' 'as handled a toad, sure.
Cowslip-water is good for the memory:
Pray, buy me three ounces of 't.

Flam. I would I were from hence.

Cor. Do you hear, sir?
I 'll give you a saying which my grandmother
Was wont, when she heard the bell toll, to sing o'er
Unto her lute.

Flam. Do, an you will, do.

Cor. 'Call for the robin-redbreast and the wren,

[Cornelia *doth this in several forms of distraction.*

Since o'er shady groves they hover,
And with leaves and flowers do cover
The friendless bodies of unburied men.
Call unto his funeral dole
The ant, the field-mouse, and the mole,
To rear him hillocks that shall keep him warm,
And (when gay tombs are robb'd) sustain no harm,
But keep the wolf far thence, that 's foe to men,
For with his nails he 'll dig them up again.'

They would not bury him 'cause he died in a quarrel;
But I have an answer for them:

'Let holy church receive him duly,
Since he paid the church-tithes truly.'

His wealth is summ'd, and this is all his store;
This poor men get, and great men get no more.
Now the wares are gone, we may shut up shop.
Bless you all, good people!

[*Exeunt* Cornelia, Zanche, *and* Ladies.

Flam. I have a strange thing in me, to the which
I cannot give a name, without it be
Compassion. I pray, leave me."

In the trial scene the defiant haughtiness of Vittoria, entrenched in her illustrious birth, against the taunts of the Cardinal, making one think of Browning's Ottima, "magnificent in sin," excites a sympathy which must check itself if it would not become admiration. She dies with the same unconquerable spirit, not shaming in death at least the blood of the Vitelli that ran in her veins. As to Flamineo, I think it plain that but for Iago he would never have existed; and it has always interested me to find in Webster more obvious reminiscences of Shakespeare, without conscious imitation of him, than in any other dramatist of the time. Indeed, the style of Shakespeare cannot be imitated, because it is the expression of his individual genius. Coleridge tells us that he thought he was copying it when writing the tragedy of "Remorse," and found, when all was done, that he had reproduced Massinger instead. Iago seems to me one of Shakespeare's most extraordinary divinations. He has embodied in him the corrupt Italian intellect of the Renaissance. Flamineo is a more degraded example of the same type, but without Iago's motives of hate and revenge. He is a mere incarnation of selfish sensuality. These two tragedies of "Vittoria Corombona" and the

"Duchess of Malfi" are, I should say, the most vivid pictures of that repulsively fascinating period that we have in English. Alfred de Musset's "Lorenzaccio" is, however, far more terrible, because there the horror is moral wholly, and never physical, as too often in Webster.

There is something in Webster that reminds me of Victor Hugo. There is the same confusion at times of what is big with what is great, the same fondness for the merely spectacular, the same insensibility to repulsive details, the same indifference to the probable or even to the natural, the same leaning toward the grotesque, the same love of effect at whatever cost; and there is also the same impressiveness of result. Whatever other effect Webster may produce upon us, he never leaves us indifferent. We may blame, we may criticise, as much as we will; we may say that all this ghastliness is only a trick of theatrical blue-light; we shudder, and admire nevertheless. We may say he is melodramatic, that his figures are magic-lantern pictures that waver and change shape with the curtain on which they are thrown: it matters not; he stirs us with an emotion deeper than any mere artifice could stir.

IV

CHAPMAN

AS I turn from one to another of the old dramatists, and see how little is known about their personal history, I find a question continually coming back, invincible as a fly with a strong sense of duty, which I shall endeavor to fan away by a little discussion. This question is whether we gain or lose by our ignorance of the personal details of their history. Would it make any difference in our enjoyment of what they wrote, if we had the means of knowing that one of them was a good son, or the other a bad husband? that one was a punctual paymaster, and that the other never paid his washer-woman for the lustration of the legendary single shirt without which he could not face a neglectful world, or hasten to the theatre with the manuscript of the new play for which posterity was to be more thankful than the manager? Is it a love of knowledge or of gossip that renders these private concerns so interesting to us, and makes us willing to intrude on the awful seclusion of the dead, or to flatten our noses against the windows of the living? The law is more scrupulous than we in maintaining the inviolability of private letters. Are we to profit by

every indiscretion, by every breach of confidence? Of course, in whatever the man himself has made a part of the record we are entitled to find what intimations we can of his genuine self, of the real man, veiled under the draperies of convention and circumstance, who was visible for so many years, yet perhaps never truly seen, obscurely known to himself, conjectured even by his intimates, and a mere name to all beside. And yet how much do we really know even of men who profess to admit us to every corner of their nature — of Montaigne? of Rousseau? As in the box under the table at which the automaton chess-player sat, there is always a closet within that which is so frankly opened to us, and into this the enigma himself absconds while we are staring at nothing in the other. Even in autobiographies, it is only by inadvertencies, by unconscious betrayals when the author is off his guard, that we make our discoveries. In a man's works we read between the lines, not always wisely. No doubt there is an intense interest in watching the process by which a detective critic like Sainte-Beuve dogs his hero or his victim, as the case may be, with tireless sympathy or vindictive sagacity, tracking out clue after clue, and constructing out of the life a comment on the works, or, again, from the works divining the character. But our satisfaction depends upon the bias with which the inquisition is conducted,

and, after assisting at this process in the case of Châteaubriand, for example, are we sure that we know the man better, or only what was morbid in the man, which, perhaps, it was not profitable for us to know?

But is it not after the discreditable particulars which excite a correspondingly discreditable curiosity that we are eager, and these that we read with greatest zest? So it should seem if we judged by the fact that biography, and especially that of men of letters, tends more and more towards these indecent exposures. The concern of the biographer should be with the mind, and not with the body of his victim. We are willing to be taken into the parlor and the library, but may fairly refuse to be dragged down to the kitchen or to look into the pantry. Boswell's "Life of Johnson" does not come under this condemnation, being mainly a record of the great doctor's opinions, and, since done with his own consent, is almost to be called autobiographical. There are certain memoirs, after reading which one blushes as if he had not only been peeping through a keyhole, but had been caught in the act. No doubt there is a fearful truth in Shakespeare's saying,

> "The evil that men do lives after them,"

but I should limit it to the evil done by otherwise good men, for it is only in this kind of evil

that others will seek excuse for what they are tempted to do, or palliation for what they have already done. I like to believe, and to think I see reason for believing, that it is the good that is in men which is immortal, and beneficently immortal, and that the sooner the perishable husk in which it was enveloped is suffered to perish and crumble away, the sooner we shall know them as they really were. I remember how Longfellow used to laugh in his kindly way when he told the story of the French visitor who asked him for some *révélations intimes* of his domestic life, to be published in a Paris newspaper. No man would have lost less by the most staring light that could have been admitted to those sacred retreats, but he shrank instinctively from being an accomplice to its admission. I am not sure that I ought to be grateful for the probable identification of the Dark Lady to whom twenty-five of Shakespeare's sonnets are addressed, much as I should commend the research and acuteness that rendered it possible. We had, indeed, more than suspected that these sonnets had an address within the bills of mortality, for no such red-blooded flame as this sometimes is ever burned on the altar of the Ideal. But whoever she was, she was unembodied so long as she was nameless, she moved about in a world not realized, sacred in her inaccessibility, a fainter image of that image of her which had been mir-

rored in the poet's eyes; and this vulgarization of her into flesh and blood seems to pull down the sonnets from heaven's sweetest air to the turbid level of our earthier apprehension. Here is no longer an object for the upward but for the furtive and sidelong glance. A gentleman once told me that being compelled to part with some family portraits, he requested a dealer to price that of a collateral ancestress by Gainsborough. He thought the sum offered surprisingly small, and said so.

"I beg your pardon for asking the question," said the dealer, "but business is business. You are not, I understand, a direct descendant of this lady. Was her name ever connected with any scandal? If so, I could double my offer."

Somewhere in our *in*human nature there must be an appetite for these unsavory personalities, but they are degrading in a double sense — degrading to him whose secret is betrayed, and to him who consents to share in the illicit knowledge of it. These things are none of our business, and yet it is remarkable how scrupulously exact even those most neglectful in their own affairs are in attending to the business of other people. I think, on the whole, that it is fortunate for us that our judgment of what the old dramatists did should be so little disturbed by any misinformation as to what they were, for to be imperfectly informed is to be misinformed,

and even to look through contemporary eyes is to look through very crooked glass. Sometimes we may draw a pretty infallible inference as to a man's temperament, though not as to his character, from his writings. And this, I think, is the case with Chapman.

George Chapman was born at Hitchin, in Hertfordshire, in 1559 probably, though Anthony Wood makes him two years older, and died in London on the 12th of May, 1634. He was buried in the churchyard of St. Giles in the Fields, where the monument put up over him by Inigo Jones is still standing. He was five years older than Shakespeare, whom he survived for nearly twenty years, and fifteen years older than Ben Jonson, who outlived him three years. There is good ground for believing that he studied at both Universities, though he took a degree at neither. While there he is said to have devoted himself to the classics, and to have despised philosophy. This contempt, however, seems to me somewhat doubtful, for he is certainly the most obtrusively metaphysical of all our dramatists. After leaving the University, he is supposed to have travelled, which is as convenient a way as any other to fill up the gap of sixteen years between 1578, when he ended his academic studies, and 1594, when we first have notice of him in London, during which period he vanishes altogether. Whether he

travelled in France and Italy or not, he seems to have become in some way familiar with the languages of those countries, and there is some reason for thinking that he understood German also. We have two glimpses of him during his life in London. In 1605 he, with Jonson and Marston, produced a play called "Eastward Ho!" Some "injurious reflections" on the Scottish nation in it angered King James, and the authors were imprisoned for a few days in the Fleet. Again, in 1606, the French ambassador, Beaumont, writes to his master: "I caused certain players to be forbid from acting the 'History of the Duke of Biron'; when, however, they saw that the whole court had left town, they persisted in acting it; nay, they brought upon the stage the Queen of France and Mlle. de Verneuil. The former having first accosted the latter with very hard words, gave her a box on the ear. At my suit three of them were arrested; but the principal person, the author, escaped." This was Chapman's tragedy, and in neither of the editions printed two years later does the objectionable passage appear. It is curious that this interesting illustration of the history of the English stage should have been unearthed from the French archives by Von Raumer in his "History of the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries."

Chapman was a man of grave character and

regular life. We may, perhaps, infer from some passages in his plays that he heartily hated Puritans. There are other passages that might lead one to suspect him of a leaning towards Catholicism, or at least of regretting the schism of the Reformation. The scene of " Byron's Conspiracy " and " Byron's Tragedy " is laid in France, to be sure, in the time of Henry IV., but not to mention that Chapman's characters are almost always the mere mouthpieces of his own thought, there is a fervor in the speeches to which I have alluded which gives to them an air of personal conviction. In " Byron's Tragedy " there is a eulogy of Philip II. and his policy very well worth reading by those who like to keep their minds judicially steady, for it displays no little historical insight. It certainly shows courage and independence to have written such a vindication only eighteen years after the Armada, and when national prejudice against Spain was so strong.

Chapman's friendships are the strongest testimonials we have of his character. Prince Henry, whose untimely death may have changed the course of English history, and with it that of our own, was his patron. So was Carr, Earl of Somerset, whom he did not desert in ill fortune. Inigo Jones was certainly his intimate friend; and he is said to have been, though it seems doubtful, on terms of friendly intercourse with Bacon.

In dedicating his "Byron's Conspiracy" to Sir Thomas Walsingham, he speaks as to an old friend. With his fellow poets he appears to have been generally on good terms. His long life covered the whole of the Elizabethan age of literature, and before he died he might have read the earlier poems of Milton.

He wrote seven comedies and eight tragedies that have come down to us, and probably others that have perished. Nearly all his comedies are formless and coarse, but with what seems to me a kind of stiff and wilful coarseness, as if he were trying to make his personages speak in what he supposed to be their proper dialect, in which he himself was unpractised, having never learned it in those haunts, familiar to most of his fellow poets, where it was vernacular. His characters seem, indeed, types, and he frankly proclaims himself an idealist in the dedication of the "Revenge of Bussy d'Ambois" to Sir Thomas Howard, where he says, "And for the authentical truth of either person or action, who (worth the respecting) will expect it in a Poem whose subject is not truth, but things like truth?" Of his comedies, "All Fools" is by general consent the best. It is less lumpish than the others, and is, on the whole, lively and amusing. In his comedies he indulges himself freely in all that depreciation of woman which had been so long traditional with the sex which has the greatest share

in making them what they are. But he thought he was being comic, and there is, on the whole, no more depressing sight than a naturally grave man under that delusion. His notion of love, too, is coarse and animal, or rather the notion he thinks proper to express through his characters. And yet in his comedies there are two passages, one in praise of love, and the other of woman, certainly among the best of their kind. The first is a speech of Valerio in "All Fools": —

> "I tell thee love is Nature's second sun
> Causing a spring of virtues where he shines;
> And as without the sun, the world's great eye,
> All colours, beauties, both of art and Nature,
> Are given in vain to men, so without love
> All beauties bred in women are in vain,
> All virtues born in men lie buried;
> For love informs them as the sun doth colours;
> And as the sun, reflecting his warm beams
> Against the earth, begets all fruits and flowers,
> So love, fair shining in the inward man,
> Brings forth in him the honourable fruits
> Of valour, wit, virtue, and haughty thoughts,
> Brave resolution and divine discourse:
> O, 't is the paradise, the heaven of earth!
> And didst thou know the comfort of two hearts
> In one delicious harmony united,
> As to enjoy one joy, think both one thought,
> Live both one life and therein double life,
> . . . . . .
> Thou wouldst abhor thy tongue for blasphemy."

And now let me read to you a passage in praise of women from the "Gentleman Usher." It is

not great poetry, but it has fine touches of discrimination both in feeling and expression: —

"Let no man value at a little price
A virtuous woman's counsel; her winged spirit
Is feathered oftentimes with heavenly words,
And, like her beauty, ravishing and pure;
The weaker body still the stronger soul.
. . . . . .
O what a treasure is a virtuous wife,
Discreet and loving! not one gift on earth
Makes a man's life so highly bound to heaven;
She gives him double forces, to endure
And to enjoy, by being one with him."

Then, after comparing her with power, wealth, music, and delicate diet, which delight but imperfectly,

"But a true wife both sense and soul delights,
And mixeth not her good with any ill.
All store without her leaves a man but poor,
And with her poverty is exceeding store."

Chapman himself, in a passage of his "Revenge of Bussy d'Ambois," condemns the very kind of comedy he wrote as a concession to public taste: —

"Nay, we must now have nothing brought on stages
But puppetry, and pied ridiculous antics;
Men thither come to laugh and feed fool-fat,
Check at all goodness there as being profaned;
When wheresoever goodness comes, she makes
The place still sacred, though with other feet
Never so much 't is scandaled and polluted.

> Let me learn anything that fits a man,
> In any stables shown, as well as stages."

Of his tragedies, the general judgment has pronounced "Byron's Conspiracy" and "Byron's Tragedy" to be the finest, though they have less genuine poetical ecstasy than his "D'Ambois." The "Tragedy of Chabot, Admiral of France," is almost wholly from his hand, as all its editors agree, and as is plain from internal evidence, for Chapman has some marked peculiarities of thought and style which are unmistakable. Because Shirley had some obscure share in it, it is printed with his works, and omitted by the latest editor of Chapman. Yet it is far more characteristic of him than "Alphonsus," or "Cæsar and Pompey." The character of Chabot has a nobility less prompt to vaunt itself, less conscious of itself, less obstreperous, I am tempted to say, than is common with Chapman. There is one passage in the play which I will quote, because of the plain allusion in it to the then comparatively recent fate of Lord Bacon. I am not sure whether it has been before remarked or not. The Lord Chancellor of France is impeached of the same crimes with Bacon. He is accused also of treacherous cruelty to Chabot, as Bacon was reproached for ingratitude to Essex. He is sentenced like him to degradation of rank, to a heavy fine, and to imprisonment at the King's pleasure. Like

Bacon, again, he twice confesses his guilt before sentence is passed on him, and throws himself on the King's mercy: —

"Hear me, great Judges; if you have not lost
For my sake all your charities, I beseech you
Let the King know my heart is full of penitence;
Calm his high-going sea, or in that tempest
I ruin to eternity. O, my lords,
Consider your own places and the helms
You sit at; while with all your providence
You steer, look forth and see devouring quicksands!
My ambition now is punished, and my pride
Of state and greatness falling into nothing;
I, that had never time, through vast employments,
To think of Heaven, feel His revengeful wrath
Boiling my blood and scorching up my entrails.
There 's doomsday in my conscience, black and horrid,
For my abuse of justice; but no stings
Prick with that terror as the wounds I made
Upon the pious Admiral. Some good man
Bear my repentance thither; he is merciful,
And may incline the King to stay his lightning,
Which threatens my confusion, that my free
Resign of title, office, and what else
My pride look'd at, would buy my poor life's safety;
Forever banish me the Court, and let
Me waste my life far-off in some mean village."

After the Chancellor's sentence, his secretary says:

"I could have wished him fall on softer ground
For his good parts."

Bacon's monument, in St. Michael's Church at St. Albans', was erected by *his* secretary, Sir

Thomas Meautys. Bacon did not appear at his trial; but there are several striking parallels between his letters of confession and the speech you have just heard.

Another posthumously published tragedy of Chapman's, the "Revenge for Honour," is, in conception, the most original of them all, and the plot seems to be of his own invention. It has great improbabilities, but as the story is Oriental, we find it easier to forgive them. It is, on the whole, a very striking play, and with more variety of character in it than is common with Chapman.

In general he seems to have been led to the choice of his heroes (and these sustain nearly the whole weight of the play in which they figure) by some half-conscious sympathy of temperament. They are impetuous, have an overweening self-confidence, and an orotund way of expressing it that fitted them perfectly to be the mouthpieces for an eloquence always vehement and impassioned, sometimes rising to a sublimity of self-assertion. Where it is fine, it is nobly fine, but too often it raves itself into a kind of fury recalling Hamlet's word "robustious," and seems to be shouted through a speaking-trumpet in a gale of wind. He is especially fond of describing battles, and the rush of his narration is then like a charge of cavalry. Of his first tragedy, "Bussy d'Ambois," Dryden

says, with that mixture of sure instinct and hasty judgment which makes his prose so refreshing: "I have sometimes wondered in the reading what has become of those glaring colours which amazed me in 'Bussy d'Ambois' upon the theatre; but when I had taken up what I supposed a falling star, I found I had been cozened with a jelly, nothing but a cold dull mass, which glittered no longer than it was shooting; a dwarfish thought dressed up in gigantic words, repetition in abundance, looseness of expression, and gross hyperbole; the sense of one line expanded prodigiously into ten; and, to sum up all, incorrect English, and a hideous mingle of false poetry and true nonsense; or, at best, a scantling of wit which lay gasping for life and groaning beneath a heap of rubbish."

There *is* hyperbole in Chapman, and perhaps Dryden saw it the more readily and disliked it the more that his own tragedies are full of it. But Dryden was always hasty, not for the first time in speaking of Chapman. I am pretty safe in saying that he had probably only run his eye over "Bussy d'Ambois," and that it did not happen to fall on any of those finely inspired passages which are not only more frequent in it than in any other of Chapman's plays, but of a more purely poetical quality. Dryden was irritated by a consciousness of his own former barbarity of taste, which had led him to prefer

Sylvester's translation of Du Bartas. What he says as to the success of "Bussy d'Ambois" on the stage is interesting.

In saying that the sense of "one line is prodigiously expanded into ten," Dryden certainly puts his finger on one of Chapman's faults. He never knew when to stop. But it is not true that the sense is expanded, if by that we are to understand that Chapman watered his thought to make it fill up. There is abundance of thought in him, and of very suggestive thought too, but it is not always in the right place. He is the most sententious of our poets — sententious to a fault, as we feel in his continuation of "Hero and Leander." In his annotations to the sixteenth book of his translation of the "Iliad," he seems to have been thinking of himself in speaking of Homer. He says: "And here have we ruled a case against our plain and smug writers, that, because their own unwieldiness will not let them rise themselves, would have every man grovel like them. . . . But herein this case is ruled against such men that they affirm these hyperthetical or superlative sort of expressions and illustrations are too bold and bumbasted, and out of that word is spun that which they call our fustian, their plain writing being stuff nothing so substantial, but such gross sowtege or hairpatch as every goose may eat oats through. . . . But the chief end why I extend

this annotation is only to entreat your note here of Homer's manner of writing, which to utter his after-store of matter and variety, is so presse and puts on with so strong a current that it far overruns the most laborious pursuer if he have not a poetical foot and Poesy's quick eye to guide it."

Chapman has indeed a "great after-store of matter" which encumbers him, and does sometimes "far overrun the most laborious pursuer," but many a poetical foot, with Poesy's quick eye to guide it, has loved to follow. He has kindled an enthusiasm of admiration such as no other poet of his day except Shakespeare has been able to kindle. In this very play of "Bussy d'Ambois" there is a single line of which Charles Lamb says that "in all poetry I know nothing like it." When Chapman *is* fine, it is in a way all his own. There is then an incomparable amplitude in his style, as when, to quote a phrase from his translation of Homer, the Lightener Zeus "lets down a great sky out of heaven." There is a quality of northwestern wind in it, which, if sometimes too blusterous, is yet taken into the lungs with an exhilarating expansion. Hyperbole is overshooting the mark. No doubt Chapman sometimes did this, but this excess is less depressing than its opposite, and at least proves vigor in the bowman. His bow was like that of Ulysses, which none could

bend but he, and even where the arrow went astray, it sings as it flies, and one feels, to use his own words, as if it were

> "The shaft
> Shot at the sun by angry Hercules,
> And into splinters by the thunder broken."

Dryden taxes Chapman with "incorrect English." This is altogether wrong. His English is of the best, and far less licentious than Dryden's own, which was also the best of its kind. Chapman himself says (or makes Montsurry in "Bussy d'Ambois" say for him):

> "Worthiest poets
> Shun common and plebeian forms of speech,
> Every illiberal and affected phrase,
> To clothe their matter, and together tie
> Matter and form with art and decency."

And yet I should say that if Chapman's English had any fault, it comes of his fondness for homespun words, and for images which, if not essentially vulgar, become awkwardly so by being forced into company where they feel themselves out of place. For example, in the poem which prefaces his Homer, full of fine thought, fitly uttered in his large way, he suddenly compares the worldlings he is denouncing to "an itching horse leaning to a block or a May-pole." He would have justified himself, I suppose, by Homer's having compared Ajax to an ass, for I think he really half believed that

the spirit of Homer had entered into him and replaced his own. So in "Bussy,"

> "Love is a razor cleansing if well used,
> But fetcheth blood still being the least abused."

But I think the incongruity is to be explained as an unconscious reaction (just as we see men of weak character fond of strong language) against a partiality he felt in himself for costly phrases. His fault is not the purple patch upon frieze, but the patch of frieze upon purple. In general, one would say that his style was impetuous like the man himself, and wants the calm which is the most convincing evidence of great power that has no misgivings of itself. I think Chapman figured forth his own ideal in his "Byron": —

> "Give me a spirit that on this life's rough sea
> Loves to have his sails filled with a lusty wind,
> Even till his sail-yards tremble, his masts crack,
> And his rapt ship run on her side so low
> That she drinks water and her keel ploughs air.
> There is no danger to a man that knows
> What life and death is; there 's not any law
> Exceeds his knowledge; neither is it lawful
> That he should stoop to any other law."

Professor Minto thinks that the rival poet of whom Shakespeare speaks in his eighty-sixth sonnet was Chapman, and enough confirmation of this theory may be racked out of dates and other circumstances to give it at least some probability. However this may be, the opening

line of the sonnet contains as good a characterization of Chapman's style as if it had been meant for him :

> " Was it the proud full sail of his great verse ? "

I have said that Chapman was generally on friendly terms with his brother poets. But there is a passage in the preface to the translation of the " Iliad " which marks an exception. He says: " And much less I weigh the frontless detractions of some stupid ignorants, that, no more knowing me than their beastly ends, and I ever (to my knowledge) blest from their sight, whisper behind me vilifyings of my translation, out of the French affirming them, when, both in French and all other languages but his own, our with-all-skill-enriched Poet is so poor and unpleasing that no man can discern from whence flowed his so generally given eminence and admiration." I know not who was intended, but the passage piques my curiosity. In what is said about language there is a curious parallel with what Ben Jonson says of Shakespeare, and the " generally given eminence and admiration " applies to him also. The " with-all-skill-enriched " reminds me of another peculiarity of Chapman — his fondness for compound words. He seems to have thought that he condensed more meaning into a phrase if he dovetailed all its words together by hyphens. This sometimes

makes the verses of his translation of Homer difficult to read musically, if not metrically.

Chapman has been compared with Seneca, but I see no likeness in their manner unless we force an analogy between the rather braggart Hercules of the one and d'Ambois of the other. The most famous passage in Seneca's tragedies is, I suppose, the answer of Medea when asked what remains to her in her desertion and danger: "*Medea superest.*" This is as unlike Chapman as he is unlike Marlowe or Webster. His genius never could have compressed itself into so laconic a casket. Here would have been a chance for him to dilate like Teneriffe or Atlas, and he would have done it ample justice. If ever there was a case in which Buffon's saying that the style is the man fitted exactly, it is in that of Chapman. Perhaps I ought to have used the word "mannerism" instead of "style," for Chapman had not that perfect control of his matter which "style" implies. On the contrary, his matter seems sometimes to do what it will with him, which is the characteristic of mannerism. I can think of no better example of both than Sterne, alternately victim of one and master of the other. His mannerism at last becomes irritating affectation, but when he throws it off, his style is perfect in simplicity of rhythm. There is no more masterly page of English prose than that in the "Sentimental Journey"

describing the effect of the chorus, "O Cupid, King of Gods and Men," on the people of Abdera.

As a translator, and he translated a great deal besides Homer, Chapman has called forth the most discordant opinions. It is plain from his prefaces and annotations that he had discussed with himself the various theories of translation, and had chosen that which prefers the spirit to the letter. "I dissent," he says, speaking of his translation of the "Iliad," "from all other translators and interpreters that ever essayed exposition of this miraculous poem, especially where the divine rapture is most exempt from capacity in grammarians merely and grammatical critics, and where the inward sense or soul of the sacred muse is only within eyeshot of a poetical spirit's inspection." This rapture, however, is not to be found in his translation of the "Odyssey," he being less in sympathy with the quieter beauties of that exquisite poem. Cervantes said long ago that no poet is translatable, and he said truly, for his thoughts will not *sing* in any language but their own. Even where the languages are of common parentage, like English and German, the feat is impossible. Who ever saw a translation of one of Heine's songs into English from which the genius had not utterly vanished? We cannot translate the music; above all, we cannot trans-

late the indefinable associations which have gathered round the poem, giving it more meaning to us, perhaps, than it ever had for the poet himself. In turning it into our own tongue the translator has made it foreign to us for the first time. Why, we do not like to hear any one read aloud a poem that we love, because he translates it into something unfamiliar as he reads. But perhaps it is fair, and this is sometimes forgotten, to suppose that a translation is intended only for such as have no knowledge of the original, and to whom it will be a new poem. If that be so, there can be no question that a free reproduction, a transfusion into the moulds of another language, with an absolute deference to its associations, whether of the ear or of the memory, is the true method. There are no more masterly illustrations of this than the versions from the Greek, Persian, and Spanish of the late Mr. FitzGerald. His translations, however else they may fail, make the same vivid impression on us that an original would. He has aimed at translating the genius, in short, letting all else take care of itself, and has succeeded. Chapman aimed at the same thing, and I think has also succeeded. You all remember Keats's sonnet on first looking in his Homer:

> "Then felt I like some watcher of the skies
> When a new planet swims into his ken."

Whether Homer or not, his translation is at

least not Milton, as those in blank verse strive without much success to be. If the Greek original had been lost, and we had only Chapman, would it not enable us to divine some of the chief qualities of that original? I think it would; and I think this perhaps the fairest test. Commonly we open a translation as it were the door of a house of mourning. It is the burial-service of our poet that is going on there. But Chapman's poem makes us feel as if Homer late in life had married an English wife, and we were invited to celebrate the coming of age of their only son. The boy, as our country people say, and as Chapman would have said, favors his mother; there is very little Greek in him; and yet a trick of the gait now and then, and certain tones of voice, recall the father. If not so tall as he, and without his dignity, he is a fine stalwart fellow, and looks quite able to make his own way in the world. Yes, in Chapman's poem there is life, there is energy, and the consciousness of them. Did not Dryden say admirably well that it was such a poem as we might fancy Homer to have written before he arrived at years of discretion? Its defect is, I should say, that in it Homer is translated into Chapman rather than into English.

Chapman is a poet for intermittent rather than for consecutive reading. He talks too loud and is too emphatic for continuous society. But

when you leave him, you feel that you have been in the company of an original, and hardly know why you should not say a great man. From his works, one may infer an individuality of character in him such as we can attribute to scarce any other of his contemporaries, though originality was far cheaper then than now. A lofty, impetuous man, ready to go off without warning into what he called a "holy fury," but capable of inspiring an almost passionate liking. Had only the best parts of what he wrote come down to us, we should have reckoned him a far greater poet than we can fairly call him. His fragments are truly Cyclopean.

V

BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER

THE names of Beaumont and Fletcher are as inseparably linked together as those of Castor and Pollux. They are the double stars of our poetical firmament, and their beams are so indissolubly mingled that it is in vain to attempt any division of them that shall assign to each his rightful share. So long as they worked in partnership, Jasper Mayne says truly that they are

> "Both so knit
> That no man knows where to divide their wit,
> Much less their praise."

William Cartwright says of Fletcher:

> "That 't was his happy fault to do too much;
> Who therefore wisely did submit each birth
> To knowing Beaumont, ere it did come forth,
> And made him the sobriety of his wit."

And Richard Brome also alludes to the copious ease of Fletcher, whom he had known: —

> "Of Fletcher and his works I speak.
> His works! says Momus, nay, his plays you 'd say!
> Thou hast said right, for that to him was play
> Which was to others' brains a toil."

The general tradition seems to have been that Beaumont contributed the artistic judgment, and

John Fletcher

Fletcher the fine frenzy. There is commonly a grain of truth in traditions of this kind. In the plays written by the two poets conjointly, we may find an intellectual entertainment in assigning this passage to one and that to the other, but we can seldom say decisively, "This is Beaumont's," or "That is Fletcher's," though we may find tolerably convincing arguments for it.

We have, it is true, some grounds on which we may safely form a conclusion as to the individual characteristics of Fletcher, because a majority of the plays which go under their joint names were written by him alone after Beaumont's death. In these I find a higher and graver poetical quality, and I think a riper grain of sentiment, than in any of the others. In running my eye along the margin, I observe that by far the greater number of the isolated phrases I have marked, whether for poetical force or felicity, but especially for picturesqueness, and for weight of thought, belong to Fletcher. I should never suspect Beaumont's hand in such verses as these from "Bonduca" (a play wholly Fletcher's):

> "Ten years of bitter nights and heavy marches,
> When many a frozen storm sung through my cuirass,
> And made it doubtful whether that or I
> Were the more stubborn metal."

Where I come upon a picturesque passage in the

joint plays, I am apt to think it Fletcher's: so too where there is a certain exhilaration and largeness of manner, and an ardor that charges its words with imagination as they go, or with an enthusiasm that comes very near it in its effect. Take this from the same play:

> "The gods of Rome fight for ye; loud fame calls ye,
> Pitched on the topless Apennine, and blows
> To all the underworld, all nations, seas,
> And unfrequented deserts where the snow dwells,
> Wakens the ruined monuments, and there,
> Where nothing but eternal death and sleep is,
> Informs again the dead bones with your virtues."

In short, I am inclined to think Fletcher the more poet of the two. Where there is pathos or humor, I am in doubt whether it belongs to him or his partner, for I find these qualities both in the plays they wrote together and in those which are wholly his. In the expression of sentiment going far enough to excite a painless æsthetic sympathy, but stopping short of tragic passion, Beaumont is quite the equal of his friend. In the art of heightening and enriching such a sentiment by poetical associations and pictorial accessaries, Fletcher seems to me the superior. Both, as I have said, have the art of being pathetic, and of conceiving pathetic situations; but neither of them had depth enough of character for that tragic pathos which is too terrible for tears; for those passionate convulsions when

our human nature, like the sea in earthquake, is sucked away deep down from its habitual shores, leaving bare for a moment slimy beds stirring with loathsome life, and weedy tangles before undreamed of, and instantly hidden again under the rush of its reaction. Theirs are no sudden revelations, flashes out of the very tempest itself, and born of its own collisions; but much rather a melancholy Ovidian grace like that of the "Heroic Epistles," conscious of itself, yet not so conscious as to beget distrust and make us feel as if we had been cheated of our tenderness. If they ope the sacred source of sympathetic tears, it is not without due warning and ceremonious preparation. I do not mean to say that their sentiment is not real, because it is pensive and not passionate. It is real, but it is never heartrending. I say it all in saying that their region is that of fancy. Fancy and imagination may be of one substance, as the northern lights and lightning are supposed to be; but the one plays and flickers in harmless flashes and streamers over the vault of the brain, the other condenses all its thought-executing fires into a single stab of flame. And so of their humor. It is playful, intellectual, elaborate, like that of Charles Lamb when he trifles with it, pleasing itself with artificial dislocations of thought, and never glancing at those essential incongruities in the nature of things at sight of

which humor shakes its bells, and mocks that it may not shudder.

Their comedies are amusing, and one of them, "Wit without Money," is excellent, with some scenes of joyous fun in it that are very cheering. The fourth scene of the third act is a masterpiece of fanciful extravagance. This is probably Fletcher's. The Rev. W. Cartwright preferred Fletcher's wit to Shakespeare's: —

> "Shakespeare to thee was dull: whose best jest lies
> I' th' ladies' questions and the fools' replies.
> Nature was all his art; thy vein was free
> As his, but without his scurrility."

Posterity has taken leave to differ with the Rev. W. Cartwright. The conversations in Fletcher's comedies are often lively, but the wit is generally a gentlemanlike banter; that is, what was gentlemanlike in that day. Real wit keeps; real humor is of the same nature in Aristophanes and Mark Twain; but nothing grows mouldy so soon as mere fun, the product of animal spirits. Fletcher had far more of this than of true humor. Both he and Beaumont were skilled in that pleasantry which in good society is the agreeable substitute for the more trenchant article. There is an instance of this in Miramont's commendation of Greek in the "Elder Brother": —

> "Though I can speak no Greek, I love the sound on 't;
> It goes so thundering as it conjured devils;

Charles speaks it loftily, and, if thou wert a man,
Or had 'st but ever heard of Homer's Iliads,
Hesiod and the Greek poets, thou would'st run mad,
And hang thyself for joy thou 'dst such a gentleman
To be thy son. O, he has read such things
To me!"

"And do you understand 'em, brother?"

"I tell thee no; that's not material; the sound 's
Sufficient to confirm an honest man."

The speech of Lucio in the "Woman-Hater" has a smack of Molière in it: —

"Secretary, fetch the gown I used to read petitions in, and the standish I answer French letters with."

Many of the comedies are impersonations of what were then called humors, like the "Little French Lawyer;" and some, like the "Knight of the Burning Pestle," mere farces. Nearly all have the merit of being lively and amusing, which, to one who has read many comedies, is saying a great deal.

In what I said just now I did not mean that Fletcher does not sometimes show an almost tragic power, as he constantly does tragic sensibility. There are glimpses of it in "Thierry and Theodoret," and in the death scene of the little Hengo in "Bonduca." Perhaps I should rather say that he can conceive a situation with some true elements of tragedy, though not of the deepest tragedy, in it; but when he comes to work it out, and make it visible to us in words,

he seems to feel himself more at home with the pity than the terror of it. His pathos (and this is true of Beaumont also) is mixed with a sweetness that grows cloying. And it is always the author who is speaking, and whom we hear. At best he rises only to a simulated passion, and that leads inevitably to declamation. There is no pang in it, but rather the hazy softness of remembered sorrow. Lear on the heath, at parley with the elements, makes all our pettier griefs contemptible, and the sublime pathos of that scene abides with us almost like a consolation. It is not Shakespeare who speaks, but Sorrow herself: —

> "I tax not you, you elements, with unkindness;
> I never gave you kingdom, called you children;
> You owe me no subscription: then let fall
> Your horrible pleasure; here I stand, your slave,
> A poor, infirm, weak, and despis'd old man: —
> But yet I call you servile ministers,
> That have with two pernicious daughters join'd
> Your high-engender'd battles 'gainst a head
> So old and white as this."

What confidence of simplicity is this! We call it Greek, but it is Nature, and cosmopolitan as she. That white head and Priam's — the one feebly defiant, the other bent humbly over the murderous hand of Achilles — are our sufficing epitomes of desolate old age. There is no third. Generally pity for ourselves mingles insensibly with our pity for others, but here — what are we

in the awful presence of these unexampled woes? The sorrows of Beaumont and Fletcher's personages have almost as much charm as sadness in them, and we think of the poet more than of the sufferer. Yet his emotion is genuine, and we feel it to be so even while we feel also that it leaves his mind free to think about it, and the dainty expression he will give to it. Beaumont and Fletcher appeal to this self-pity of which I just spoke by having the air of saying, "How would *you* feel in a situation like this?" I am not now speaking of their poetical quality. That is constant and unfailing, especially in Fletcher. In judging them as poets, the question would be, not *what* they said, but *how* they said it.

How early the two poets came to London is uncertain. They had already made Ben Jonson's acquaintance in 1607. Their first joint play, "Philaster, or Love lies a-bleeding," was produced in 1608. I suppose this play is more generally known than any other of theirs, and the characteristic passages have a charm that is perhaps never found less mixed with baser matter in any other of the plays which make up the collection known as the "Works of Beaumont and Fletcher," and they bear the supreme test of being read over again many times without loss of freshness. Philaster is son and heir to a King of Sicily, but robbed of his rights by

the King of Calabria. This King has a daughter, Arethusa, secretly in love with Philaster, as he with her, but destined by her father to marry Pharamond, a Spanish Prince. Euphrasia, daughter of Dion, an honest courtier, is also in love with Philaster, and has entered his service disguised as a page, under the name of Bellario. Arethusa makes her love known to Philaster, who, in order that they may have readier means of communicating with each other, transfers Bellario to her. Thyra, a very odious lady of the court, spreads a report that Arethusa and her handsome page have been too intimate. Philaster believes this slander, and this leads to many complications. Arethusa dismisses Bellario. Philaster refuses to take him back. They all meet in a convenient forest, where Philaster is about to kill Arethusa at her own earnest entreaty, when he is prevented by a clown who is passing. The King, finding his daughter wounded, is furious, and orders instant search for the assassin. Bellario insists that he is the criminal. He and Philaster are put under arrest; the Princess asks to be their jailer. The people rise in insurrection, and rescue him. It then turns out that he and Arethusa have been quietly married. Of course the play turns out with the discovery of Bellario's sex and the King's consent to everything.

I have said that it is hazardous to attempt

dividing the work of Beaumont and Fletcher where they worked together. Both, of course, are to blame for what is the great blot on the play, — Philaster's ready belief, I might well say eager belief, in the guilt of the Princess. One of his speeches is positively monstrous in infamous suggestion. Coleridge says: "Beaumont and Fletcher always write as if virtue or goodness were a sort of talisman or strange something that might be lost without the least fault on the part of the owner. In short, their chaste ladies value their chastity as a material thing, not as an act or state of being; and this mere thing being imaginary, no wonder that all their women are represented with the minds of strumpets, except a few irrational humorists. . . . Hence the frightful contrast between their women (even those who are meant to be virtuous) and Shakespeare's." There is some truth in this, but it is extravagant. Beaumont and Fletcher have drawn pure women. Both Bellario and Arethusa are so. So is Aspatia. They had coarse and even animal notions of women, it is true, but we must, in judging what they meant their women to be, never forget that coarseness of phrase is not always coarseness of thought. Women were allowed then to talk about things and to use words now forbidden outside the slums. Decency changes its terms, though not its nature, from one age to another. This is a

partial excuse for Beaumont and Fletcher, but they sin against that decorum of the intellect and conscience which is the same in all ages. In "Women Pleased" Claudio disguises himself, and makes love to his married sister Isabella in order to test her chastity.

The question as to the authorship of the "Two Noble Kinsmen" has an interest perhaps even greater than that concerning the shares of Beaumont and Fletcher respectively in the plays they wrote together, because in this case a part is attributed to Shakespeare. The "Two Noble Kinsmen" was first published in 1634, and ascribed on the title-page to "the memorable worthies of their time, Mr. John F. and Mr. W. S." That Fletcher's name should have been put first is not surprising, if we remember his great popularity. He seems for a time to have been more fashionable than Shakespeare, especially with the young bloods fresh from the University and of the Inns of Court. They appear to have thought that he knew the world, in their limited understanding of the word, better than his great predecessor. The priority of name on the title-page, if not due to this, probably indicated that the greater part of the play was from the hand of Fletcher. Opinion has been divided, with a leaning on the part of the weightier judges towards giving a greater or less share to Shakespeare. I think the verdict must be the Scottish

one of "not proven." On the one hand, the play could not have been written earlier than 1608, and it seems extremely improbable that Shakespeare, then at the height of his fame, and in all the splendid maturity of his powers and of his mastery over them, should have become the junior partner of a younger man. Nor can he be supposed to have made the work over and adapted it to the stage, for he appears to have abandoned that kind of work long before. But we cannot suppose the play to be so early as 1608, for the parts admitted on all hands to be Fletcher's are in his maturer manner. Yet there are some passages which seem to be above his reach, and might lead us to suppose Fletcher to have deliberately imitated Shakespeare's manner; but that he never does, though indebted to him for many suggestions. There is one speech in the play which is certainly very like Shakespeare's in the way it grows, and beginning with a series of noble images, deepens into philosophic thought at the close. And yet I am not altogether convinced, for Fletcher could heighten his style when he thought fit, and when the subject fully inspired him.

Beaumont and Fletcher undoubtedly owed a part of their immediate renown to the fact that they were looked upon as gentlemen and scholars. Not that they put on airs of gentility, as their disciple Ford was fond of doing a little later,

and as Horace Walpole, Byron, and even Landor did. They frankly gave their address in Grub Street, so far as we know. But they certainly seem to have been set up, as being artists and men of the world, not perhaps as rivals of Shakespeare, but in favorable comparison with one who was supposed to owe everything to Nature. I believe that Pope, in the preface to his edition of Shakespeare, was the first to express doubts about the wisdom of accepting too literally what Ben Jonson says of his "little Latin and less Greek." However that may be, and I am inclined to think Shakespeare had more learning even, not to say knowledge, than is commonly allowed him, it is singular that the man whose works show him to have meditated deeply on whatever interests human thought, should have been supposed never to have given his mind to the processes of his own craft. But this comparison of him with Beaumont and Fletcher suggests one remark of some interest, namely, that not only are his works by far more cleanly in thought and phrase than those of any of his important contemporaries, except Marlowe, not only are his men more manly and his women more womanly than theirs, but that his types also of gentlemen and ladies are altogether beyond any they seem to have been capable of conceiving.

Of the later dramatists, I think Beaumont

and Fletcher rank next to Shakespeare in the amount of pleasure they give, though not in the quality of it, and in fanciful charm of expression. In spite of all their coarseness, there is a delicacy, a sensibility, an air of romance, and above all a grace, in their best work that make them forever attractive to the young, and to all those who have learned to grow old amiably. Imagination, as Shakespeare teaches us to know it, we can hardly allow them, but they are the absolute lords of some of the fairest provinces in the domain of fancy. Their poetry is genuine, spontaneous, and at first hand. As I turn over the leaves of an edition which I read forty-five years ago, and see, by the passages underscored, how much I enjoyed, and remember with whom, so many happy memories revive, so many vanished faces lean over the volume with me, that I am prone to suspect myself of yielding to an enchantment that is not in the book itself. But no, I read Beaumont and Fletcher through again last autumn, and the eleven volumes of Dyce's edition show even more pencil-marks than the two of Darley had gathered in repeated readings. The delight they give, the gayety they inspire, are all their own. Perhaps one cause of this is their lavishness, their lightsome ease, their happy confidence in resources that never failed them. Their minds work without that reluctant break which pains

us in most of the later dramatists. They had that pleasure in writing which gives pleasure in reading, and deserve our gratitude because they promote cheerfulness, or, even when gravest, a pensive melancholy that, if it does not play with sadness, never takes it too seriously.

VI

MASSINGER AND FORD

PHILIP MASSINGER was born in 1584, the son of Arthur Massinger, a gentleman who held some position of trust in the household of Henry, Earl of Pembroke, who married the sister of Sir Philip Sidney. It was for her that the "Arcadia" was written. And for her Ben Jonson wrote the famous epitaph:

> "Underneath this sable hearse
> Lies the subject of all verse.
> Sidney's sister, Pembroke's mother.
> Death! ere thou hast slain another,
> Learn'd and fair and good as she,
> Time shall throw a dart at thee."

It would be pleasant to think that Massinger's boyhood had been spent in the pure atmosphere that would have surrounded such a woman, but it should seem that he could not have been brought up in her household. Otherwise it is hard to understand why, in dedicating his "Bondman" to Philip, Earl of Montgomery, one of her sons, he should say, "However, I could never arrive at the happiness to be made known to your lordship, yet a desire, born with me, to make a tender of all duties and service to the

noble family of the Herberts descended to me as an inheritance from my dead father, Arthur Massinger." All that we know of his early life is that he entered a commoner at St. Alban's Hall, Oxford, in 1602. At the University he remained four years, but left it without taking a degree.

From the year 1606, until his name appears in an undated document which the late Mr. John Payne Collier decides to be not later than 1614, we know nothing of him. This document is so illustrative of the haphazard lives of most of the dramatists and actors of the time as to be worth reading. It was written by Nathaniel Field, the actor who played the part of Bussy d'Ambois in Chapman's play of that name, and who afterwards became prosperous and one of the shareholders in the Globe Theatre. Here it is:—

"*To our most loving friend, Mr. Philip Hinchlow, Esq., These:*

"Mr. Hinchlow,—You understand our unfortunate extremity, and I do not think you so void of Christianity, but you would throw so much money into the Thames as we request now of you rather than endanger so many innocent lives. You know there is X*l.* more at least to be received of you for the play. We desire you to lend us V*l.* of that, which shall be allowed to

you, without which we cannot be bailed, nor I play any more till this be despatched. It will lose you XX*l.* ere the end of the next week, besides the hindrance of the next new play. Pray, sir, consider our cases with humanity, and now give us cause to acknowledge you our true friend in time of need. We have entreated Mr. Davison to deliver this note, as well to witness your love as our promises and always acknowledgment to be your most thankful and loving friend,

"Nat Field."

Under this is written:

"The money shall be abated out of the money [that] remains for the play of Mr. Fletcher and ours.

"Rob Daborne."

"I have always found you a true loving friend to me, and, in so small a suit, it being honest, I hope you will not fail us.

"Philip Massinger."

The endorsement on this appeal shows that Hinchlow sent the money. No doubt Field was selected to write it as the person most necessary to Hinchlow, who could much more easily get along without a new play than without a popular actor. It is plain from the docu-

ment itself that the signers of it were all under arrest, probably for some tavern bill, or it would not otherwise be easy to account for their being involved in a common calamity. Davison was doubtless released as being the least valuable. It is amusing to see how Hinchlow's humanity and Christianity are briefly appealed to first as a matter of courtesy, and how the real arguments are addressed to his self-interest as more likely to prevail. Massinger's words are of some value as showing that he had probably for some time been connected with the stage.

There are two other allusions to Massinger in the registers of Sir Henry Herbert, Master of the Revels. Both are to plays of his now lost. Of one of them even the name has not survived. On the 11th of January, 1631, Sir Henry refused to license this nameless performance "because it did contain dangerous matter — as the deposing of Sebastian King of Portugal by Philip II., there being peace sworn between England and Spain." He adds, amusingly enough, "I had my fee notwithstanding, which belongs to me for reading it over, and ought always to be brought with a book." Again, in 1638, at the time of the dispute between Charles I. and his subjects about ship-money, Sir Henry quotes from a manuscript play of Massinger submitted to him for censure the following passage:

"Monies? We 'll raise supplies which way we please,
And force you to subscribe to blanks in which
We 'll mulct you as we shall think fit. The Cæsars
In Rome were wise, acknowledging no laws
But what their swords did ratify, the wives
And daughters of the senators bowing to
Their wills as deities," etc.

Sir Henry then adds, "This is a piece taken out of Philip Massinger's play called 'The King and the Subject,' and entered here forever to be remembered by my son and those that cast their eyes upon it, in honour of King Charles, my master, who, reading the play over at Newmarket, set his mark upon the place with his own hand and in these words: 'This is too insolent, and to be changed.' Note that the poet makes it the speech of Don Pedro, King of Spain, and spoken to his subjects." Coleridge rather hastily calls Massinger a democrat. But I find no evidence of it in his plays. He certainly was no advocate of the slavish doctrine of passive obedience, or of what Pope calls the right divine of kings to govern wrong, as Beaumont and Fletcher often were, but he could not have been a democrat without being an anachronism, and that no man can be.

The license of the stage at that time went much farther than this; nay, it was as great as it ever was at Athens. From a letter of the Privy Council to certain justices of the peace

of the County of Middlesex in 1601, we learn that "certain players who use to recite their plays at the Curtain in Moorfields do represent upon the stage in their interludes the persons of some gentlemen of good desert and quality, that are yet alive, under obscure manner, but yet in such sort as all the hearers may take notice both of the matter and the persons that are meant thereby." And again it appears that in 1605 the Corporation of the City of London memorialized the Privy Council, informing them that "Kemp Armyn and other players at the Black Friars have again not forborne to bring upon their stage one or more of the Worshipful Company of Aldermen, to their great scandal and the lessening of their authority," and praying that "order may be taken to remedy the abuse, either by putting down or removing the said Theatre." Aristophanes brought Socrates and Euripides upon the stage, — but neither of these was an Alderman.

Massinger committed no offences of this kind, unless Sir Giles Overreach be meant for some special usurer whom he wished to make hateful, of which there is no evidence. He does indeed express his own opinions, his likes and dislikes, very freely. Nor were these such as he need be ashamed to avow. It may be inferred, on the strength of some of the sentiments put by him into the mouths of his characters,

that he would have sympathized rather with Hampden and Pym than with Charles I. But nothing more than this can be conjectured as to his probable politics. He disliked cruel creditors, grinders of the poor, enclosers of commons, and forestallers, as they were called; for corners in wheat and other commodities were not unknown to our ancestors, nor did they think better of the men that made them than we. There is a curious passage in his play of the "Guardian" which shows that his way of thinking on some points was not unlike Mr. Ruskin's. Severino, who has been outlawed, draws up a code of laws for the banditti of whom he has become captain, defining who might be properly plundered and who not. Among those belonging to the former class he places the

> "Builders of iron-mills that grub up forests
> With timber trees for shipping";

and in the latter, scholars, soldiers, rack-rented farmers, needy market folks, sweaty laborers, carriers, and women. All that we can fairly say is that he was a man of large and humane sympathies.

But though Massinger did not, so far as we know, indulge in as great licenses of scenic satire as some of his contemporaries, there is in his "Roman Actor" so spirited a defence of the freedom of the stage and of its usefulness as a

guardian and reformer of morals that I will quote it: —

" *Aretinus.* Are you on the stage,
You talk so boldly?
Paris. The whole world being one,
This place is not exempted; and I am
So confident in the justice of our cause
That I could wish Cæsar, in whose great name
All kings are comprehended, sat as judge
To hear our plea, and then determine of us.
If, to express a man sold to his lusts,
Wasting the treasure of his time and fortunes
In wanton dalliance, and to what sad end
A wretch that 's so given over does arrive at;
Deterring careless youth, by his example,
From such licentious courses; laying open
The snares of bawds, and the consuming arts
Of prodigal strumpets, can deserve reproof,
Why are not all your golden principles,
Writ down by grave philosophers to instruct us
To choose fair virtue for our guide, not pleasure,
Condemned unto the fire?
Sura. There 's spirit in this.
Paris. Or if desire of honour was the base
On which the building of the Roman Empire
Was raised up to this height; if, to inflame
The noble youth with an ambitious heat
T' endure the frosts of danger, nay, of death,
To be thought worthy the triumphal wreath
By glorious undertakings, may deserve
Reward or favour from the commonwealth,
Actors may put in for as large a share
As all the sects of the philosophers.
They with cold precepts (perhaps seldom read)

Deliver what an honourable thing
The active virtue is; but does that fire
The blood, or swell the veins with emulation
To be both good and great, equal to that
Which is presented on our theatres?
Let a good actor, in a lofty scene,
Shew great Alcides honour'd in the sweat
Of his twelve labours; or a bold Camillus
Forbidding Rome to be redeem'd with gold
From the insulting Gauls; or Scipio,
After his victories, imposing tribute
On conquer'd Carthage; if done to the life,
As if they saw their dangers, and their glories,
And did partake with them in their rewards,
All that have any spark of Roman in them,
The slothful arts laid by, contend to be
Like those they see presented.

Rusticus. He has put
The consuls to their whisper.

Paris. But 't is urged
That we corrupt youth, and traduce superiors.
When do we bring a vice upon the stage
That does go off unpunish'd? Do we teach,
By the success of wicked undertakings,
Others to tread in their forbidden steps?
We shew no arts of Lydian panderism,
Corinthian poisons, Persian flatteries,
But mulcted so in the conclusion, that
Even those spectators that were so inclined,
Go home changed men. And, for traducing such
That are above us, publishing to the world
Their secret crimes, we are as innocent
As such as are born dumb. When we present
An heir that does conspire against the life
Of his dear parent, numbering every hour

He lives as tedious to him, if there be
Among the auditors one whose conscience tells him
He is of the same mould, — WE CANNOT HELP IT.
Or, bringing on the stage a loose adulteress,
That does maintain the riotous expense
Of him that feeds her greedy lust, yet suffers
The lawful pledges of a former bed
To starve the while for hunger; if a matron,
However great in fortune, birth, or titles,
Guilty of such a foul, unnatural sin,
Cry out, 'T is writ for me, — WE CANNOT HELP IT.
Or, when a covetous man 's express'd, whose wealth
Arithmetic cannot number, and whose lordships
A falcon in one day cannot fly over,
Yet he so sordid in his mind, so griping,
As not to afford himself the necessaries
To maintain life; if a patrician
(Though honour'd with a consulship) find himself
Touch'd to the quick in this, — WE CANNOT HELP IT.
Or, when we show a judge that is corrupt,
And will give up his sentence as he favours
The person, not the cause, saving the guilty,
If of his faction, and as oft condemning
The innocent, out of particular spleen;
If any in this reverend assembly,
Nay, even yourself, my lord, that are the image
Of absent Cæsar, feel something in your bosom
That puts you in remembrance of things past,
Or things intended, — 'T IS NOT IN US TO HELP IT.
I have said, my lord: and now, as you find cause,
Or censure us, or free us with applause."

We know nothing else of Massinger's personal history beyond what has been told, except that the parish register of St. Saviour's contains

this entry : " March 20, 1639–40, buried Philip Massinger, a stranger." A pathos has been felt by some in the words " a stranger," as if they implied poverty and desertion. But they merely meant that Massinger did not belong to that parish. John Aubrey is spoken of in the same way in the register of St. Mary Magdalen at Oxford, and for the same reason.

Massinger wrote thirty-seven plays, of which only eighteen have come down to us. The name of one of these non-extant plays, the " Noble Choice," gives a keen pang to a lover of the poet, for it seems to indicate a subject peculiarly fitted to bring out his best qualities as a dramatist. Four of the lost plays were used to kindle fires by that servant of Mr. Warburton who made such tragic havoc in our earlier dramatic literature, a vulgar Omar without the pious motive of the Commander of the Faithful, if, as is very doubtful, he did indeed order the burning of the Alexandrian Library.

To me Massinger is one of the most interesting as well as one of the most delightful of the old dramatists, not so much for his passion or power, though at times he reaches both, as for the love he shows for those things that are lovely and of good report in human nature, for his sympathy with what is generous and high-minded and honorable, and for his equable flow of a good every-day kind of poetry with few

rapids or cataracts, but singularly soothing and companionable. The Latin adjective for gentleman, *generosus*, fits him aptly. His plots are generally excellent; his versification masterly, with skilful breaks and pauses, capable of every needful variety of emotion; and his dialogue easy, natural, and sprightly, subsiding in the proper places to a refreshing conversational tone. This graceful art was one seldom learned by any of those who may be fairly put in comparison with him. Even when it has put on the sock, their blank verse cannot forget the stride and strut it had caught of the cothurnus. Massinger never mouths or rants, because he seems never to have written merely to fill up an empty space. He is therefore never bombastic, for bombast gets its metaphorical name from its original physical use as padding. Indeed, there are very few empty spaces in his works. His plays are interesting alike from their story and the way it is told. I doubt if there are so many salient short passages, striking images, or pregnant sayings to be found in his works as may be found in those of very inferior men. But we feel always that we are in the company of a serious and thoughtful man, if not in that of a great thinker. Great thinkers, indeed, are seldom so entertaining as he. If he does not tax the mind of his reader, nor call out all its forces with profound problems of psychology, he is infinitely suggest-

ive of not unprofitable reflection, and of agreeable nor altogether purposeless meditation. His is "a world whose course is equable," where "calm pleasures abide," if no "majestic pains." I never could understand Lamb's putting Middleton and Rowley above him, unless, perhaps, because he was less at home on the humbler levels of humanity, less genial than they, or, at least, than Rowley. But there were no proper æsthetic grounds of comparison, if I am right in thinking, as I do, that he differed from them in kind, and that his kind was the higher.

In quoting from Wordsworth's "Laodamia" just now, I stopped short of the word "pure," and said only that Massinger's world was "equable." I did this because in some of his lower characters there is a coarseness, nay, a foulness, of thought and sometimes of phrase for which I find it hard to account. There is nothing in it that could possibly corrupt the imagination, for it is altogether repulsive. In this case, as in Chapman's, I should say that it indicated more ignorance of what is debasingly called Life than knowledge of it. With all this he gives frequent evidence of a higher conception of love than was then common. The region in which his mind seems most naturally to dwell is one of honor, courage, devotion, and ethereal sentiment.

I cannot help asking myself, did such a world

ever exist? Perhaps not; yet one is inclined to say that it is such a world as might exist, and, if possible, ought to exist. It is a world of noble purpose not always inadequately fulfilled; a world whose terms are easily accepted by the intellect as well as by the imagination. By this I mean that there is nothing violently improbable in it. Some men, and, I believe, more women, live habitually in such a world when they commune with their own minds. It is a world which we visit in thought as we go abroad to renew and invigorate the ideal part of us. The canopy of its heaven is wide enough to stretch over Boston also. I heard, the other day, the story of a Boston merchant which convinces me of it. The late Mr. Samuel Appleton was anxious about a ship of his which was overdue, and was not insured. Every day added to his anxiety, till at last he began to be more troubled about that than about his ship. "Is it possible," he said to himself, "that I am getting to love money for itself, and not for its noble uses?" He added together the value of the ship and the estimated profit on her cargo, found it to be $40,000, and at once devoted that amount to charities in which he was interested. This kind of thing *may* happen, and sometimes *does* happen, in the actual world; it *always* happens in the world where Massinger lays his scene. That is the difference, and it is by reason of this

difference that I like to be there. I move more freely and breathe more inspiring air among those encouraging possibilities. As I just said, we find no difficulty in reconciling ourselves with its conditions. We find no difficulty even where there is an absolute disengagement from all responsibility to the matter-of-fact, as in the "Arabian Nights," which I read through again a few years ago with as much pleasure as when a boy, perhaps with more. For it appears to me that it is the business of all imaginative literature to offer us a sanctuary from the world of the newspapers, in which we have to live, whether we will or no. As in looking at a picture we must place ourselves at the proper distance to harmonize all its particulars into an effective whole, I am not sure that life is not seen in a truer perspective when it is seen in the fairer prospect of an ideal remoteness. Perhaps we must always go a little way back in order to get into the land of romance, as Scott and Hawthorne did. And yet it is within us too. An unskilful story-teller always raises our suspicion by putting a foot-note to any improbable occurrence, to say, "This is a fact," and the so-called realist raises doubts in my mind when he assures me that he, and he alone, gives me the facts of life. Too often all I can say is, if these are the facts, I don't want them. The police reports give me more than I care for every day.

But are they the facts? I had much rather believe them to be the accidental and transitory phenomena of our existence here. The real and abiding facts are those that are recognized as such by the soul when it is in that upper chamber of our being which is farthest removed from the senses, and commerces with its truer self. I very much prefer "King Lear" to Balzac's bourgeois version of it in "Le Père Goriot," as I do the *naïveté* of Miranda to that of Voltaire's Ingénu, and, when I look about me in the Fortunate Islands of the poet, would fain exclaim with her:

> "O! wonder!
> How many goodly creatures are there here!
> How beauteous mankind is! O, brave new world,
> That has such people in 't!"

Those old poets had a very lordly contempt for probability when improbability would serve their purpose better. But Massinger taxes our credulity less than most of them, for his improbabilities are never moral; that is, are never impossibilities. I do not recall any of those sudden conversions in his works from baseness to loftiness of mind, and from vice to virtue, which trip up all our expectations so startlingly in many an old play. As to what may be called material improbabilities, we should remember that two hundred and fifty years ago many things were possible, with great advantage to complication

of plot, which are no longer so. The hand of an absolute prince could give a very sudden impulse to the wheel of Fortune, whether to lift a minion from the dust or hurl him back again; men might be taken by Barbary corsairs and sold for slaves, or turn Turks, as occasion required. The world was fuller of chances and changes than now, and the boundaries of the possible, if not of the probable, far wider. Massinger was discreet in the use of these privileges, and does not abuse them, as his contemporaries and predecessors so often do. His is a possible world, though it be in some ways the best of all possible worlds. He puts no strain upon our imaginations.

As a poet he is inferior to many others, and this follows inevitably from the admission we feel bound to make that good sense and good feeling are his leading qualities — yet ready to forget their sobriety in the exhilaration of romantic feeling. When Nature makes a poet, she seems willing to sacrifice all other considerations. Yet this very good sense of Massinger's has made him excellent as a dramatist. His "New Way to Pay Old Debts" is a very effective play, though in the reading far less interesting and pleasing than most of the others. Yet there are power and passion in it, even if the power be somewhat melodramatic, and the passion of an ignoble type. In one respect he was truly a poet

— his conceptions of character were ideal; but his diction, though full of dignity and never commonplace, lacks the charm of the inspired and inspiring word, the relief of the picturesque image that comes so naturally to the help of Fletcher. Where he is most fanciful, indeed, the influence of Fletcher is only too apparent both in his thought and diction. I should praise him chiefly for the atmosphere of magnanimity which invests his finer scenes, and which it is wholesome to breathe. In Massinger's plays people behave generously, as if that were the natural thing to do, and give us a comfortable feeling that the world is not so bad a place, after all, and that perhaps Schopenhauer was right in enduring for seventy-two years a life that was n't worth living. He impresses one as a manly kind of person, and the amount of man in a poet, though it may not add to his purely poetical quality, adds much, I think, to our pleasure in reading his works.

I have left myself little space in which to speak of Ford, but it will suffice. In reading him again after a long interval, with elements of wider comparison, and provided with more trustworthy tests, I find that the greater part of what I once took on trust as precious is really paste and pinchbeck. His plays seem to me now to be chiefly remarkable for that filigree-

work of sentiment which we call sentimentality. The word "alchemy" once had a double meaning. It was used to signify both the process by which lead could be transmuted into gold, and the alloy of baser metal by which gold could be adulterated without losing so much of its specious semblance as to be readily detected. The ring of the true metal can be partially imitated, and for a while its glow, but the counterfeit grows duller as the genuine grows brighter with wear. The greater poets have found out the ennobling secret, the lesser ones the trick of falsification. Ford seems to me to have been a master in it. He abounds especially in mock-pathos. I remember when he thoroughly imposed on me. A youth, unacquainted with grief and its incommunicable reserve, sees nothing unnatural or indecent in those expansive sorrows precious only because they can be confided to the first comer, and finds a pleasing titillation in the fresh-water tears with which they cool his eyelids. But having once come to know the jealous secretiveness of real sorrow, we resent these conspiracies to waylay our sympathy, — conspiracies of the opera plotted at the top of the lungs. It is joy that is wont to overflow, but grief shrinks back to its sources. I suspect the anguish that confides its loss to the town crier. Even in that single play of Ford's which comes nearest to the true pathetic, the

"Broken Heart," there is too much apparent artifice, and Charles Lamb's comment on its closing scene is worth more than all Ford ever wrote. But a critic must look at it *minus* Charles Lamb. We may read as much of ourselves into a great poet as we will; we shall never cancel our debt to him. In the interests of true literature we should not honor fraudulent drafts upon our imagination.

Ford has an air of saying something without ever saying it that is peculiarly distressing to a man who values his time. His diction is hackneyed and commonplace, and has seldom the charm of unexpected felicity, so much a matter of course with the elder poets. Especially does his want of imagination show itself in his metaphors. The strong direct thrust of phrase which we cannot parry, sometimes because of very artlessness, is never his.

Compare, for example, this passage with one of similar content from Shakespeare: —

> "Keep in,
> Bright angel, that severer breath to cool
> The heat of cruelty which sways the temple
> Of your too stony breast; you cannot urge
> One reason to rebuke my trembling plea
> Which I have not, with many nights' expense,
> Examined; but, oh Madam, still I find
> No physic strong to cure a tortured mind
> But freedom from the torture it sustains."

Now hear Shakespeare: —

"Canst thou not minister to a mind diseased,
Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow,
Raze out the written troubles of the brain,
And, with some sweet oblivious antidote,
Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of the perilous stuff
Which weighs upon the heart?"

Ford lingers-out his heart-breaks too much. He recalls to my mind a speech of Calianax in Beaumont and Fletcher's "Maid's Tragedy": "You have all fine new tricks to grieve. But I ne'er knew any but direct crying." One is tempted to prefer the peremptory way in which the old ballad-mongers dealt with such matters:

"She turned her face unto the wa',
And there her very heart it brak."

I cannot bid you farewell without thanking you for the patience with which you have followed me to the end. I may have seemed sometimes to be talking to you of things that would weigh but as thistle-down in the great business-scales of life. But I have an old opinion, strengthening with years, that it is as important to keep the soul alive as the body: nay, that it is the life of the soul which gives all its value to that of the body. Poetry is a criticism of life only in the sense that it furnishes us with the standard of a more ideal felicity, of calmer pleasures and more majestic pains. I am glad to see that what the understanding would stigmatize

as useless is coming back into books written for children, which at one time threatened to become more and more drearily practical and didactic. The fairies are permitted once more to imprint their rings on the tender sward of the child's fancy, and it is the child's fancy that often lives obscurely on to minister solace to the lonelier and less sociable mind of the man. Our nature resents the closing up of the windows on its emotional and imaginative side, and revenges itself as it can. I have observed that many who deny the inspiration of Scripture hasten to redress their balance by giving a reverent credit to the revelations of inspired tables and camp-stools. In a last analysis it may be said that it is to the sense of Wonder that all literature of the Fancy and of the Imagination appeals. I am told that this sense is the survival in us of some savage ancestor of the age of flint. If so, I am thankful to him for his longevity, or his transmitted nature, whichever it may be. But I have my own suspicion sometimes that the true age of flint is before, and not behind us, an age hardening itself more and more to those subtle influences which ransom our lives from the captivity of the actual, from that dungeon whose warder is the Giant Despair. Yet I am consoled by thinking that the siege of Troy will be remembered when those of Vicksburg and Paris are forgotten. One of the old dramatists, Thomas

Heywood, has, without meaning it, set down for us the uses of the poets : —

"They cover us with counsel to defend us
From storms without; they polish us within
With learning, knowledge, arts, and disciplines;
All that is nought and vicious they sweep from us
Like dust and cobwebs; our rooms concealed
Hang with the costliest hangings 'bout the walls,
Emblems and beauteous symbols pictured round."

GENERAL INDEX

GENERAL INDEX

A. H. C. = A. H. Clough.

Abana and Pharpar, 2, 135.

Abbott, *Shakespearian grammar*, 5, 301 n.

Abderite chorus in the *Andromeda*, 1, 58.

Abelard, Emerson before the Φ. B. K. compared to, 2, 137.

Abolition societies existed in Maryland and Virginia in 1790, 6, 173.

Abolitionists not the cause of the war, 6, 248; their cardinal principle disunion, 249; *also*, 7, 245.

Abstract ideas, Hazlitt on, 5, 275.

Abundance of Chaucer and Langland, 2, 228.

Abuse unpleasant from inferiors, 5, 325.

Abuses to be protested against, 6, 17.

Academic town. *See* University town.

Accent in Milton's verse, 5, 303, 306.

Accidente, Italian imprecation, 1, 204.

Accuracy and Truth compared, 7, 185.

Acephali, 1, 134.

Achilles, chariot of, 1, 181; a boy with an eel compared to, 254; *also*, 4, 8.

Acting, Italian, 1, 207. *See also*, Stage.

Adam in Paradise, White's Selborne the Journal of, 1, 260.

Adams, Charles Francis, on the attitude of America toward England in 1869, 1, 330.

Adams, John, of the Bounty, 8, 156.

Adams, John, J. Quincy's reminiscences of, 2, 29.

Adams, *Parson*. *See* Fielding, Henry.

Addison, answers an argument in favor of the Pretender, 2, 435; Pope's lines on, 458; Pope's relations to, 466; his character, 466; friendship with Dryden, 3, 14; Pope's attack on, 97; and Steele together make a man of genius, 8, 15; *also* 2, 258, 266.

on Italy, 1, 152; on English poetry of the 18th century, 2, 409; on the representation of common sense, the office of modern writers, 459; on Dryden, 8, 8.

Cato, Voltaire on, 2, 425.

Adhesiveness, the author's, 1, 12.

Adrian V., Pope, in the *Divine Comedy*, 5, 144.

Æschylus, his range narrow but deep, 2, 136; 5, 168; Atalanta in Corydon the theme of a lost drama, 2, 164; like Shakespeare in his choice of epithets, 3, 272; his imaginative power, 7, 61; *also*, 2, 19, 178, 194; 3, 265.

Agamemnon, the nurse, 3, 276; *Prometheus*, 259, 278; *Seven against Thebes*, passage cited, 275.

Æsthetic defects, connection with moral defects, 2, 69.

Æsthetics, Shakespeare's satire on the dogmatic variety, 3, 276; its problems recur in Wordsworth's poetry, 5, 176.

Affliction a cooler of pride, Roger Williams on, 4, 35.

Africa, a little mystery still hangs over the interior of, 1, 132.
Agamemnon, 2, 291.
Agassiz, Louis, anecdote of his first lecture, 7, 5; *also*, 1, 316, 370; 7, 180.
Age, the respect for, diminishing, 7, 167. *See also*, Old age; Antiquity.
Agrippa, Cornelius, on Dante, 5, 34; his visionary gardens, 222.
Ague, Sir K. Digby's prescription for, 4, 65.
Air, on a winter morning, 1, 367.
Ajax, 3, 310; 4, 103.
Akenside on winter, 1, 348; his poetry characterized, 348; Spenser's influence upon, 4, 320; *also*, 7, 136.
his *Pleasures of Imagination*, 2, 106, 409.
Alabama trouble, the relations between England and America caused by, 1, 330.
Aladdin's cave in the old Harvard College library, 8, 53.
Alban mountain, 1, 166; seen from Palestrina, 189.
Albani, Villa, near Rome, 1, 251.
Alberti, Leandro, on Italy, 1, 151.
Alchemist visited by Edw. Howes, 4, 54; Coleridge compared to, 7, 84.
Alchemy, John Winthrop, Jr., a student of, 4, 54; Edward Howes's letters on, 54; Jonathan Brewster's researches and correspondence with the younger Winthrop, 60; his reasons for secrecy, 64.
Alciato ridiculed the evidence brought against witches, 3, 195.
Alcott, Bronson, his favorite word *daemonic*, 1, 53.
Alderman, knighting of an, 1, 227.
Aldersgate St., London, Masson's description of, 5, 259.
Aleatico wine, 1, 206.
Alexander the Great, 2, 174; Pope on, 456.
Alexander, Emperor of Russia, member of the Med. Facs., 1, 55.
Alexandrines, 4, 266; Dryden on, 3, 49.
Alexis and Dora, 3, 286.
Alfieri, a copy bought by Keats, but unread, 5, 339.
Alfonso the Learned, 7, 145.
Alford, Lady Marian, 8, 98 n.
Alischans, Bataille d', referred to by Dante, 5, 128 n.
Allegory, defined, 2, 264; the *Odyssey* the true type of, 4, 285; as practised in Spenser's time, 289.
of Gower, 2, 227; of Dante, 265; 5, 80 n., 108 n., 109; of Spenser, 2, 265; 4, 286, 291; of Bunyan, 286.
Allibone, 2, 351.
Alliteration, in Spenser, 4, 315; Milton's use of, 5, 290.
Allston, Washington, described, 1, 36; judged as a painter, 40; T. G. Appleton on, 40; his work original, 41; anecdote of his early pictures, 3, 18; his picture of Elijah in the Wilderness, 5, 251; his dreary fate, 8, 182; *also*, 7, 182.
Almanacs, one compiled by Emerson, imagined, 2, 392; prophecies of, 6, 155.
Alph, the sacred river, 1, 369.
Alphonso of Castile, 3, 241.
Ambition, 4, 21; character of, in Washington Allston, 1, 42.
America interesting only as a phenomenon, 1, 9, 321, 328; 2, 7; rapidity of its changes makes it interesting to the philosophic student, 1, 13; foreigners uncomfortable in, because they find no peasants, 219; the traditions and significance of its past, 296, 323; a German beggar's diatribe on, 303; its democracy a menace to the old order, 307, 325; material prosperity a necessary

foundation for ideal triumphs, 310; the Englishman's air of superiority in, 314; patronized by all Europeans, 315; Maurice Sand's caricature of, 316; anecdotes of the bad manners of foreigners in, 318; the earlier English downright aversion to, 320; the growth of the young giant made Europe uneasy, 320; examined by the sociologists, 322; Leigh Hunt on, 324; the advantages of easier communication with Europe, 327; the silent preparatory work done here not evident to foreigners, 327; its history lacking in great associations and in interest, 2, 4, 5, 7; English history belongs to it *de jure* but not *de facto*, 5; fame palpably a provincial thing, 8; every day coming nearer to Europe, 10; its slight encouragement of art and high scholarship, 116; the country's heavy debt to the English Puritans, 4, 16; accused of sending storms to Europe, 7, 8; accused of infecting Europe with democracy, 9; its past without æsthetic stimulus, 170. *See also*, New England; United States.

America, Spanish. *See* Spanish America.

American Ambassadors, 1, 233; 6, 296.

American architecture, 1, 76, 233; no venerable buildings, 7, 171.

American biography necessarily provincial, 2, 3.

American boys, 1, 11.

American citizenship, its value depends upon the national existence, 6, 61.

American Civil War, the tender memories it has left, 1, 294; English ill-mannered references to, 318; Carlyle's failure to understand it, 323; 2, 91; its influence on foreign opinion of America, 1, 323; 6, 259; its effect on the character of the nation, 1, 326; 6, 182, 224, 261, 302, 312; its material greatness boasted of, 2, 14; the problems it has left behind, 15; compared with Frederick's wars, 91, 96; the debt of its heroes to Emerson, 401; hailed with enthusiasm by the North, 6, 93, 220; 7, 227; the following reaction of despondency, 6, 220; the great issues at stake, 109, 205; its probable effect on slavery (1861), 111; McClellan's Report from July, 1861, to Nov., 1862, 115–143; the campaign of the Peninsula, 118, 129, 131; the importance of saving Washington, 135; popular dissatisfaction at McClellan's delays, 135; Pollard's and Greeley's histories of, 163; its real cause the habit of concession on the part of the North, 178; the South fighting for what they believe to be their rights, 182; abolition of slavery its necessary result, 184; the nation to be the stronger and more united because of it, 185, 265, 286, 303; state of the war in 1864, 194; the change in its object and character, 205, 214; McClellan's views on its conduct, 206; a radical policy forced upon the Government by the rebels, 207; the just grounds of apprehension at its beginning, 221; its vast difficulties and contingencies, 222; the country's true war of independence, 236; abolition of slavery not the original object of the war, 242; efforts to confuse the public mind as to its origin, 247; the lessons it has taught Europe and ourselves, 259; loyalty and patriotism the only incentive of officers and soldiers, 260; the vices

and meannesses of the people also brought to the surface, 262; great principles felt to be at stake in the war, 265, 308; for the first time in history an army knew for what it was fighting, 266; Moore's *Rebellion Record*, 303; slavery the original motive of the war on the part of the South, 305, 307; the deep meaning of the war as a moral phenomenon, 308; the thoughtlessness with which both sides entered upon it, 309; the newspaper rumors, 311; the fruits of victory, 314; watched with breathless interest by the world, 320; its deep moral issues instinctively recognized by the North, 382; our true enemy in the war, 386; essentially a war between two different nations, 386; the readiness of the young men to give themselves, 7, 188; saved us a country worth saving, 227.

American civilization, the lack of permanence and stability, 1, 149, 233; the possible political and social development of, 310; its shortcomings and possible future dangers, 328; the need of an increased number of highly cultivated men, 7, 206; danger of becoming absorbed in material prosperity, 277.

American coinage, 8, 202.

American Colonies, the lack of unity and of great associations in their history, 2, 3; Burke's picture of their prosperous condition, 7, 247; due to a wise neglect on the part of the home government, 248; the silent but steady growth of a spirit of equality in, 249; their apprenticeship in democracy, 250.

American criticism, 7, 274.

American culture, necessarily European in its standards, 2, 10; something more than labor-saving contrivances needed, 11; its provincialism, 11, 14; value of European criticism to, 15; Emerson made our thought independent of England, 137; the cultivation of the imagination necessary, 7, 113; *also*, 6, 378.

American currency, musket balls current in early New England, 7, 99.

American great men, their statues in the Capitol, 2, 13.

American hotels, 1, 91; 4, 82.

American humor cannot appeal to the whole nation, 2, 9.

American Indians. *See* Indians.

American land-companies, 1, 203.

American language, foolish talk about an, 8, 202.

American life, compared to a railway train, 1, 10; its hurry, 78; the novelist's complaint of, 2, 5; its disadvantages, 7; barren in the elements of the social picturesque, 16; its aimless luxury, 152.

American literature, likelihood of a future strength and flavor, 1, 137; a national satire or caricature still impossible, 2, 9; the determination to produce an, in the first half of 19th century, 112, 118; a great poet expected from the West, 113; his possible character discussed, 114; the characteristics of a national poet, 116; Emerson, to some extent, typical, 116; the conditions for the development of a great poet still wanting, 116; originality and individuality not to be expected, 117; the demand for a literature proportioned to the size of the country, 118; effect of the Revolutionary War upon, 202; Daniel's prophecy of, 4, 241.

American Literature: reply to a toast April 30, 1889, 7, 271–278; exaggerated praise to be avoided, 272; may learn a les-

son from the life of Washington, 273; the early inquiries for, by the Old World, 273; its problem to adapt inherited forms to novel conditions, 274; the hindrances to its development, 274; to be criticised fearlessly if it is to become strong, 275; the promise of its future, 278.

American mechanics, their supremacy, 7, 113.

American military leaders compared with English, 6, 264.

American newspapers. *See* Newspapers.

American poet, the great, expected from the West, 2, 113.

American political eloquence, 6, 62, 64.

American politics and political conditions; every political evil leaves its taint, 1, 311; national feeling hampered by our division into States, 2, 12; national feeling increased by the Civil War, 15; the problems left by the War, 15; the Federalists the only proper tories of, 35; personality and narrowness of, 6, 25; constantly in a state of transition, 26; the Constitution to be bent back to its original position, 44; the curse of perpetual concession, 44, 175, 178, 204; the absence of great questions in the half century before the Rebellion, 58; character and powers of the government, 60, 65, 77, 87, 179; value of our national existence, 61, 219; the advantages of the federal system, 75; the relations of the States to the central government not sufficiently dwelt upon, 77; the privileges dependent upon the broad extent of the government, 81; the administration made prominent at the cost of the government, 169; the preponderance of Southern influence, 174; the basis of representation in the South, 175; the principle of coercive authority recognized in framing the Constitution, 180; Jefferson's theory of strict construction, 181; Freedom to become the one absorbing interest of the whole people, 185; the strength of the government and people proved by the strain of the war, 225, 259; the general idea of party government, and of the subserviency of the executive, 228; the idea that statesmanship does not require training, 237; the administration represents the minority as well as the majority, 243; a profound common sense the best guide of statesmanship, 251, 332; the willingness to endure taxation in order to carry on the war, 259; loyalty and patriotism the only incentive, 260; the life of the state felt in every member, 261; the people the true leaders in the conflict, 262; the United States the real country of poor men, 279; the advantages and disadvantages of universal suffrage, 283; 7, 28; the absence of an idle class, 6, 287; effect of the press and telegraph on the national sympathies, 299; the people slow to adopt measures of doubtful legality, 313; confusion of mind in regard to treason, 313; the war measures of doubtful legality justified by their results, 318; the worth of freedom discovered by the people, 320; public opinion a reserve of power to the magistrate, 321; the President's prerogative during the war and in ordinary times, 329; every inhabitant a subject as well as a citizen of the United States, 339; the attempt to climb into the White House by a back window, 361; the dignity of the Secretary of State a matter of national concern, 362;

the will of the majority always constitutional, 366; general absence of the mob element, 369; the condition before the war compared to Germany, 386; democratic institutions inherited from England, 7, 12; the success of democracy, 22; the dangers of increasing wealth, 24; security of property, 24; succession of the Vice-President to the presidency, 50; the difficult problems of the time, 117, 209; the two great parties from 1867 to 1887, 221; the broom needed, 225; the need of continued patriotic devotion, 227; the weaknesses and perils of democracy, 238; abuses easily sloughed off, 239; the duty of examining the abuses, 243; the growth of bribery, 243; political corruption and trickery, 244; the Independent needed to denounce these abuses, 245; the conditions of our successful development, 245; the general satisfaction with our good luck and good government, 246, 252; the absence of shortsighted meddlesomeness of a paternal government, 247; the effects of free land and free trade, 248; the silent growth of the spirit of equality, 249; how long the Republic can endure, 252; the English rotten borough system revived among us, 252; the shortcomings of both parties, 256; the difficulty of arriving at their opinions, 256; the old parties not to be reformed from within, 259; the reform of the civil service to be our first aim, 260; the protective system, 262; the surplus, 265; the moral standard of our politics declining, 267; the need of active men to insist on moral questions, 267.

the People. — Foreigners easily assimilated if Protestant, 1, 138; the people not corrupt, 6, 169; their patriotism, 220; their active devotion to their institutions, 260; the dangers from the population of the great cities, 264; the American people an amalgam of many nations, 380; distrust of the judgment of the people, 384, 387; the change from an agricultural to a proletary population, 7, 6; the difficulties and dangers of assimilating a large foreign population, 23, 117, 250; character of the people and of their political organization, 22; the people take their political duties lightly, 30; the population homogeneous and American at the close of the Revolution, 248; the respect for authority strong a century ago, 251; lack of political training in the average man, 253; the problem of our foreign population, 265. *See also*, Abolitionists; Civil service; Coercion; Congress; Cuba; Democracy; Democratic party; Emancipation; Embargo; Freedmen; Fugitive slave law; Immigration; Negro suffrage; President; Reconstruction; Republican party; Secession; Slavery; Squatter sovereignty; State rights; Suffrage; Tariff; United States.

American public men, effect of frequent elections upon the character of our statesmen, 6, 26, 64, 169; the mistake of sending inferior men to Congress from the North, 166; the popular fallacy of the superiority of a man of low origin, 168; the alleged inferiority of Congress, 284; the character of Congressional oratory, 326; our highest offices filled by shortsighted politicians, 388; character of the framers of the Constitution, 7, 20; their solution of the practical question before them, 20; the statesman giving place to the

politician, 242, 253; conditions of the production of great men, 254; the advancement of able men blocked by our political methods, 254:
American railroads, 4, 82.
American Revolution still regarded as an unhappy separation in Cambridge, 1, 17; French officers' opinions of America, 316; its effect on American literature, 2, 202; *also*, 6, 301.
American scholarship formerly of the theological sort, 2, 118.
American schools, their failure, 7, 204.
American shipping, 7, 225.
American soldiers, 2, 19. *See also*, American Civil War.
American towns usually in the hobbledehoy age, 1, 76.
American Tract Society, 6, 3–20; the apologue of the hermit who became a king applied to it, 3; its present position on slavery in the eyes of its founders, 4; it evades responsibility by appealing to its constitution, 5; character of its constitution examined, 5; the discussion of slavery not feared by its founders, 6; the condition that its publications shall "satisfy all Evangelical Christians" considered, 7; logical absurdities of the Society's position, 8; its position on moral questions in 1857, 9; the Society afraid to remind the owners of slaves of their moral obligations, 10, 12; the Resolutions of 1857 an attempt at compromise, 11; the inconsistency of the Society's position an occasion for scoffers, 14; its public responsibilities, 15; the division a healthy sign, 15; the anti-slavery question a moral, not a political issue, 18.
American village described, 1, 218.
American yeomen, 1, 219.
Americans, carry no household gods with them, 1, 40; their enjoyment of antiquity, 76; 7, 167; nomadic in religion, ideas, and morals, 1, 76; in what respect not Englishmen, 136; the peculiar charm of Italy to, 148; their attitude in England and France, 148; an accommodating and versatile people, 200; travel easily, 233; twitted with not distinguishing between *big* and *great*, 248; necessarily misunderstood by foreigners, 307, 327; deserve some of the sarcasm poured on them, 309, 328; what they have to learn in political matters, 310; accused of being vulgar, 312; their use of English, 313; the imitation of English manners, 313; as ostentatious *parvenus* in Europe, 316; supposed to abhor privacy, 317; anecdotes of their disregard of the rudeness of foreigners, 318; an Englishman on the cause of their hospitality, 319; what their country should be to them, 323, 329; continue to be treated as not grown up, 325, 330; the most common-schooled and the least cultivated people in the world, 327; not to be treated as counterfeit Britons, 331; the habit of estimating greatness by material measures, 2, 14; a certain advantage in their shiftiness, 19; their dismay at having no national literature, 113; the influence of Puritan descent, 4, 18; their self-complacent pride of ancestry, 25; fond of compromise, 6, 12; said to be less apt than others to profit by experience, 295; their alertness and vivacity, 301; their character as developed by the Civil War, 302; their small hands and feet, 379; bonds of sympathy with England, 7, 44, 56, 81; good nature of, 46; faith in their good qualities, 50; their habit of giving away

money during their lifetime, 115; their zeal in celebrating anniversaries, 167; said to find their own country unendurable after living in Europe, 207; find themselves at home in no other country than their own, 249; the habit of acquiescing in makeshifts, 251; of necessity largely intent on material ends, 275. *See also*, American public men.
Americanism, 7, 223.
Americanisms, 1, 313; 4, 315 n.
Ames, Fisher, compared with Burke, 2, 7.
Ammonius, 3, 169.
Anabaptists in England in 1658, 4, 45.
Anachronisms in the drama, 3, 291; in Lessing's dramas, 4, 163.
Analogies between the inward and outward world, 5, 58.
Analysis, everything subjected to, at the present day, 1, 132; escape from the evils of, 217.
Anarchy, the right of, involved in the issues of the Civil War, 6, 109.
Ancestor, adopting an, 8, 68.
Ancestry, the significance of, 1, 323; pride of, 4, 24; Dante's pride of, 5, 107 n; in matters of the intellect, 341; fortunate ancestors, 7, 188. *See also*, Heredity.
Ancient and modern art, their due relation, 2, 177.
Ancient lights, the lesson of the inscription, 7, 200.
Ancient Mariner, 1, 288.
Ancients, more social than we, 1, 341; their attitude toward life, 5, 239.
Ancients and moderns, 2, 165.
Anderson, Major, the first public officer to do his duty, 6, 70; a court-martial suggested for him by the President, 85; his forbearance, 88; *also*, 97, 105.
Anecdote, its value in history, 2, 16.
Angelico, Fra, 5, 5.
Angels, good and bad, Walburger on their power, 3, 161; Dante on, 5, 146 n.
Anglicism, Dryden on, 3, 43.
Anglomania, 1, 313; 6, 223.
Anglo-Norman mind in matters of business, 1, 174. *See also*, English.
Anglo-Norman poetry, theory that final and medial *e* was not sounded disproved, 2, 243.
Anglo-Saxon. *See* Saxon.
Anglo-Saxon element in English literature, 2, 209.
Anglo-Saxon literature, 2, 216.
Anglo-Saxon poetry essentially Scandinavian, 2, 216; its homeliness, 233.
Anglo-Saxons have deified work, 1, 77; time precious in the sight of, 157; their character, 2, 212; their religious instinct, 214; their sound political instinct, 6, 268.
Animal creation, its unchanging constitution, 1, 263.
Animals, their weather-wisdom, 1, 266.
Anio river, its waters once dammed at Tivoli to overthrow the Romans, 1, 159; seen from Subiaco, 215.
Annals, 6, 150.
Anniversaries, American liking for, 7, 167; their suggestions of self-criticism and self-satisfaction, 271.
Annual Register, 6, 297.
Anthropology, its problems to be watched in America, 1, 13.
Antigone. *See* Sophocles.
Antinomian controversy in New England, 7, 174.
Antiquarians compared to ruminants, 3, 267.
Antiquity, a matter of comparison, 1, 11; necessary to the growth of character, 76; suspicions as to

the value of discoveries, 248 ; the browsers among the vestiges of, 3, 267 ; the American relish for, 7, 167 ; the effect of geological discoveries on appreciation of, 168. *See also*, History ; Past.
Antony, St., of Padua, 1, 132.
Antwerp, Carlyle's etymology of, 2, 98.
Apemantus, Thoreau compared to, 2, 140.
Apicius, 4, 191.
Apollo, his power not in the girth of his biceps, 2, 258 ; a witness in the case of the Furies *v.* Orestes, 3, 177 n ; *also*, 5, 228.
Apoplexy, 1, 57.
Apostles, Milton on those who collected personal traditions of them, 5, 250.
Apostles of the Newness, 2, 134. *See* Transcendental movement.
Apostolical succession of English poetry, 5, 298.
Apostrophe, its use uncertain in early printing, 5, 281.
Apothecaries the victims of Satanic pranks, 3, 172.
Apparitions, origin of the belief in, 3, 125 ; Lucian's opinion of, 125 n ; instances, 126 ; ghosts in chains, 127 ; Hamlet's lines on, 130. *See also*, Haunted houses.
Appenzell, democracy in, 7, 19.
Applause, the pulse of self plainly felt in, 1, 19 ; of Emerson's speech on Burns described, 2, 403.
Apples at the grocery in Cambridge, 1, 27.
Apples of the tree of knowledge, nearly every one now plucked, 1, 132.
Appleton, Samuel, anecdote of, 8, 306.
Appleton, Thomas G., on Washington Allston, 1, 40.
Application necessary to memory, 1, 93.
Appreciation, mutual, 4, 156.
Aqueduct near Tivoli, 1, 156 ; of the Ponte Sant' Antonio, 167.
Archaisms, when permissible, 4, 315.
Archer, Judge, in a witchcraft trial, 3, 147.
Architectural restoration, constructive criticism compared to, 7, 148.
Architecture an element of patriotism and of culture, 1, 78. *See also*, American architecture ; Greek architecture ; Roman churches.
Arctic regions, their icy privacy invaded, 1, 135.
Areopagitica. *See* Milton.
Aretino, Leonardo. *See* Leonardo Aretino.
Argument, Dryden's powers of, 3, 20.
Ariosto, and the Villa d' Este, 1, 158 ; excelled by Spenser, 4, 284 ; charm of his narrative, 7, 73.
Orlando inspired Spenser's *Faery Queen*, 4, 260 ; quoted, 293.
Aristocracy, the principle implanted in human nature, 1, 72 ; in Boston in earlier days, 2, 24 ; represented by Josiah Quincy, 46 ; incompatible with democracy, 6, 394 ; of New England in 18th century, 7, 187 ; the management of public affairs in, 255.
Aristophanes, 2, 68, 85 ; 3, 287 ; the highest type of pure comedy, 2, 168 ; the *Frogs*, 3, 271 n.
Aristotle, Dryden's lines on, 3, 29 ; Lessing's discussions of, 4, 159 ; Dante on, 5, 101 n ; compared with Plato, 159 ; on moderation, 6, 391 ; *also*, 4, 104 ; 5, 43 n, 46 ; 7, 4, 199.
Army officers chosen by popular election, 7, 29.
Army personified in its leader, 6, 116 ; a great leader its chief strength, 128.
Arno, River, 5, 3.
Arnold, Matthew, on Homeric me-

tre, 2, 323; on Shakespeare, 3, 256; address as President of the Wordsworth Society, 7, 123; on education in France, 203; on the *grand style*, 321, 322; his admiration of Homer, 327.
Merope, its lack of vitality, 2, 172.
Aroux on cryptonyms in the Middle Ages, 5, 24 n.
Arrivabene on the date of Dante's birth, 5, 7.
Art of being idle, 8, 13.
Art, English race cares nothing for, 1, 41; absorbed unconsciously, 136; George Sand on, 2, 151; a principle of life its first requirement, 178; instinct for it absent in the Saxon character, 212; the basis of judgment in, 3, 277; the conception and form united, 5, 57; value of the study of, 7, 112. *See also*, Æsthetics; Greek art; Literature; Painting; Sculpture.
Art, ancient, difficulties in judging truly, 1, 249.
Art, literary, its value, 2, 57; secures lowness of tone, 58.
Art, works of, their life, 2, 165; their principles immutable, but to be accommodated, 169; often contain more than the artist put there, 3, 316.
Art galleries, torments of Englishmen in, 2, 419.
Artephus quoted, 4, 62.
Arthur, Chester A., President of the United States, character of, 7, 50.
Arthur, King, legends of, 2, 8, 168, 205, 217; 5, 133; the vacant seat at the Round Table, 170.
Artifice in literature, 2, 158, 415; Pope its chief founder, 472.
Artificiality of life, 2, 442; illustrated by the effect of disguises, 1, 42.
Artillery-election days, 1, 20.
Artist, his character expressed in his eyes, 1, 37; conditions of his work in America thirty years ago, 40; distinguished from the Moralist, 5, 57.
Artists, English, in Italy, 1, 41; welcomed by Italian peasants, 208, 210.
Artistic nature, Spenser's definition of, 4, 276.
Artistic sense wanting in Carlyle, 2, 68.
Ascham, Roger, on Italy, 1, 150; 2, 435; on care of language, 3, 221.
Aspiration the ideal of Christian life, 5, 137.
Assimilation, rapid, value of the power, 3, 51 n.
Associations, 1, 296; their power felt in buildings and landscapes, 7, 169.
Assonance in Homer, 2, 323; Milton's use of, 5, 290.
Assurance of faith, Captain Underhill's account of, 2, 67.
Assyrian inscriptions, 1, 115.
Astral spirits, 3, 125 n.
Athenæus, 2, 27.
Athenodorus and the haunted house, Pliny's story, 3, 127.
Athens, 2, 10; its place in the world of thought, 7, 208.
Athens, American, political appropriateness of the name, 2, 22.
Atlanta, taking of, effect on Democratic politics, 6, 198.
Aubrey on the alleged transportation of witches, 3, 162.
Aucassin and Nicolete cited, 7, 312.
Auchinleck on Cromwell, 5, 262.
Audience, Emerson's, described, 2, 398.
Augustine, St., Bishop of Hippo, his confessions, 4, 206; Dante on, 5, 75; on Rome, 145.
Augustine, St., Archbishop of Canterbury, on sorceresses in the Alps, 3, 169.
Aureole seen in both summer and winter, 1, 373.

Ausonius, 2, 200.
Austria, the various classes in, in 1546, 7, 10; taxation in, in 1546, 11 n.
Austrian peasants, 7, 10.
Authority, 1, 325; decline of reverence for it, 7, 30; the respect for it a century ago, 251.
Authors, their characteristics to be traced in their earliest works, 2, 61; their first appearance after publication of a book described, 276; lucky authors, 335; the reparation that time brings to obscure authors, 349; the pathos of obscurity, 351; miseries of professional authorship, 4, 126.
Autobiography, sincerity and absence of self-consciousness necessary to, 4, 205; value of, 7, 110; unconscious betrayal in, 8, 253.
Autocracy, 6, 237.
Autumn, 1, 339.
Autumn of the world's life, 1, 168.
Autumn colors, 1, 295.
Avalanches, 6, 39.
Averages, Buckle's doctrine of, applied to the relief of beggars, 1, 300.

Bacchus Sabazius, the origin of the witches' Sabbath, 3, 154.
Bach, Sebastian, 1, 122.
Background, want of, in America, 1, 136.
Backwoodsmen. *See* Woodmen.
Bacon, Francis, Lord, his definition of poetry, 2, 121; his language, 3, 227 n; distrusted English, 232; his times, 232; on wars, 7, 24; on reading, 108; on the ability of learned men in politics, 235.
Ben Jonson on, 2, 403; 3, 232.
Baden Revolution, 1, 301.
Baggage, 1, 102; its safety in the Maine woods, 114.
Bakála, Wallachian legend of, 7, 103.
Balbo, his loose way of writing history, 5, 20 n; on Dante, 22; on the large number of MS. copies of the *Divina Commedia*, 31.
Ballad poetry, Addison's praise of, 2, 409; Scottish, 4, 224; of the 16th century, 232.
Ballot. *See* Suffrage.
Bancroft, George, as a teacher in Harvard College, 7, 189; his translation of Heeren, 189; study of German, 7, 306 n.
Bandit hats, 1, 210.
Banks, General, 1, 300.
Bapson, Ebenezer, 3, 184.
Barabas in Marlowe's *Jew of Malta*, 8, 212, 217–219.
Barataria, 1, 36.
Barber, his tripod an oracle of news, 1, 20.
Barber's shop in Cambridge, 1, 24.
Barberini Palace, in Palestrina, 1, 188.
Barbour's *Brus*, 4, 226; quoted, 226.
Barclay on Englishmen, 4, 420.
Bargain-making in Italy, 1, 175, 177.
Barlow, Joel, 2, 118; the *Columbiad*, 200; 7, 74.
Barmecide feasts of the Imagination, 1, 45.
Barn-door, the picture seen through, 1, 219.
Barnum, P. T., 1, 8, 317; 2, 14.
Barnwell, George, a tragedy. *See* Lillo.
Barrel-organ style of English poetry, 5, 346.
Barrett, Mr., Mayor of Washington, 6, 76.
Barter, the characteristic of one's dealings with strangers, 1, 92.
Bartolommeo, Fra, 5, 5.
Barton, Mrs., her confession of witchcraft, 3, 148.
Batteux, Abbé, criticised by Lessing, 4, 133.

Battledoor and shuttlecock style of dialogue, 2, 177.
Battles, Mrs., rules for whist, 1, 356.
Battles and conquests of Old World, 2, 3; their real decisiveness, 6, 161.
Baxter believed in witchcraft, 3, 188; on the confession of witchcraft by a parson, 205.
Bayle, Voltaire on, 5, 8.
Beard, not worn in old Cambridge days, 1, 56.
Beards, English, 1, 234.
Beatrice. *See* Dante.
Beauclerk, Topham, 4, 178.
Beaumont, verses to Ben Jonson quoted, 8, 182.
Beaumont, Sir George, on Wordsworth's politics, 5, 188; his friendship with Wordsworth, 210.
Beaumont and Fletcher, 2, 169; 8, 278–292; inseparably linked, 278; contribution of each, 278; individual characteristics, 279, 280, 286; Fletcher's *Bonduca* quoted, 279; their region that of fancy, 281; their comedies amusing, 282, 283; their poetical quality constant and unfailing, 285; their first joint play, 285; their notions of women, 287; authorship of *The Two Noble Kinsmen*, 288; looked upon as gentlemen and scholars, 289; compared with Shakespeare, 290.
Mayne, Cartwright, and Brome on, 8, 278; Cartwright on Fletcher's wit, 282; Coleridge on, 287.
The Elder Brother, 8, 282; *Maid's Tragedy* altered or improved by Waller, 2, 422; 3, 73 n; quoted, 2, 431, 433; *Philaster* analyzed, 8, 285.
Beaupuis, General, Wordsworth intimate with, 5, 185.
Beauty, diminished by utilization, 1, 238; an Irishman's remark on what constitutes, 239; the highest kind of, 2, 35; beauty and use in literature, 5, 57; Dante on, 77 n. *See also* Æsthetics; Art.
Becker, W. A., 2, 173.
Beecher, H. W., 6, 391.
Beefsteak, fried, 1, 79.
Beer, spruce and ginger, 1, 22.
Beethoven, 2, 399; his symphonies, 5, 295.
Beets, 1, 22.
Befana, 3, 166.
Beggars, anecdote of an exemplary bow from one, 1, 66; the romance of their life, 299; their imaginary journeys, 299; their encouragement a sin against society, 300; proposal to imprison, 300; compared to unaddressed letters, 300; story of a German met on the Old Road, Cambridge, 301; the fatal effect of administering relief to the first one, 302; his opinions on America, 303.
Italian, their howl, 1, 195; in Rome, 242; their assiduity in doing nothing, 243; their demand for protection, 244; their deformities, 245; the regular fee, 245. *See also*, Mendicancy.
Bekker's *Bezauberte Welt*, 3, 197; 4, 14.
Belief, in every age dependent on what men see, 3, 182; changes of, not sharply marked, 5, 90.
Bell and Everett, candidates in the Presidential election of 1860, 6, 29, 32; their prime object to defeat the Republican ticket, 34, 43.
Bell, Peter, 7, 281.
Bell-founding, 3, 231.
Bellay, 4, 280 n; on the introduction of new words, 314.
Belmont, Augustus, speech at the Chicago convention in 1864, 6, 193.
Benedetto, San, Convent of, at Subiaco, 1, 215.
Benedictines, their hospitality, 1, 171.

Bennet, minister in Brightling, 3, 207.
Benvenuto da Imola, on Dante, 5, 27; appointed to lecture on Dante, 31; on the "second death" of Dante, 127.
Beowulf, on travel, 1, 4.
Beppo, a rich beggar, 1, 245.
Béranger, 2, 198; 4, 223; 6, 170; compared to Horace, 2, 199; sentiment of, 4, 196.
Bergerac, Peire de, quotation, 2, 204.
Bernard, Governor, 7, 183.
Bernard de Ventadour, 2, 197.
Bernardin de St. Pierre; *Paul and Virginia*, 3, 286.
Bernini's angels on the Ponte Sant' Angelo, 1, 224.
Bertrand de Born, 2, 197.
Betham, Sir W., pedigree of Spenser, 4, 256 n.
Biagioli, commentator on Dante, 5, 62 n.
Bible, its influence on the English language, 4, 234 n; Dante familiar with, 5, 112 n; Wordsworth's better utterances compared to, 234; pronunciation of -ed in the Old Testament, 284 n; would be an incendiary book among slaves, 6, 8.
Biglow, Mr. Hosea, 8, 180.
Bill of fare at the inn in Palestrina, 1, 188.
Bills of exchange, invented by the Florentines, 5, 3 n.
Billingsgate, 4, 225.
Biographer, the concern of the, 8, 255.
Biography, its main interest, 2, 20; the filling, 29; treatment of adverse criticism, 93; Wordsworth on the proper limits of, 5, 216; undue length protested against, 245; the place of contemporary history in, 249; necessity of distinguishing between substantial personages and supernumeraries, 250; should give the sifted results, not the processes, of investigation, 250; Milton's remark on those who gathered up personal traditions of the Apostles applied to, 250; its essential materials, 315; value of, for reading, 7, 110; too often supererogatory, 8, 71. *See also*, American biography; Autobiography.
Birch, its place in education, 2, 33.
Birchen bark as an educational tonic, 2, 292.
Bird in the bush worth two in the hand, 1, 134; 4, 18.
Bird of paradise, 1, 134.
Bird-nesting, 1, 287.
Birds (My Garden Acquaintance), 1, 259–290; Gilbert White's observations on, 260; the author's *mémoires pour servir*, 266; weather-wisdom of birds, 266; their migrations, 267; their geographical partialities, 268; relations between different species, 274; sentimental in the pairing season, 278; most common in the neighborhood of man, 282; various bird-songs, 283; disappearance of certain birds from the neighborhood, 285; the pleasure in the company and friendship of birds, 288; seen in winter, 372.
Special kinds, viz. —
blackbird, European, 1, 283.
bluebird, 1, 372.
blue-jays, 1, 372; driven away by robins, 275; accident in a nest of, 275; trapped in the snow-crust, 277.
bobolink, 1, 281; verses on, 16.
catbirds, 1, 269, 272; destroy the nest of some yellow-birds, 274.
cedar-bird, 1, 268.
chickadee, 1, 372.
chip-bird, 1, 283.
chimney-swallow. *See* Swift.

cockatoo in the Cambridge barber's shop, 1, 24.
cross-bills, 1, 268.
crow as a lover, 1, 278.
crow-blackbird, 1, 277.
cuckoo, 1, 284, 289.
ducks, summer, 1, 287.
fish-hawk, 1, 104.
flicker, or yellow-hammer, 1, 284.
geese, wild, 1, 267.
golden robin. *See* Oriole.
goldfinch, 1, 283.
grosbeak, rose-breasted, 1, 268.
hawk. *See* Hen-hawk; Night-hawk.
hen-hawk, 1, 285.
herons, 1, 286.
house-martins, 1, 261.
humming-birds, 1, 267, 280.
indigo-bird, 1, 283.
king-bird, 1, 200.
kingfisher, 1, 104, 286.
larks, on the road to Cavi, 1, 193; Dante's lines on, 2, 351; Dryden's and Jeremy Taylor's description of their flight, 3, 32; the Troubadours compared to, 2, 196; Pope's lines on, 2, 440.
linnets, 1, 267.
loons, 1, 87.
mavis, 1, 269.
night-hawk, 1, 285.
nightingales, 1, 283; heard at Colonna, 1, 186; at Subiaco, 216; Dunbar's lines on, 4, 224; heard in Greece, 7, 169.
nuthatch, 1, 372.
oriole, 1, 279, 283.
owls, 1, 285; Gilbert White's intimacy with, 261; a Persian poet on, 5, 308; Wordsworth on, 193. *See also*, Screech-owl.
pewees, 1, 287.
pigeon, wild, 1, 285.
pigeon-woodpecker. *See* Flicker.
plover, stilted, Gilbert White's observations on, 1, 261.
quail, 1, 284.
raven, dedicated to Satan, 3, 155.
robin, 1, 372; seen in winter, 268; his song, 269, 271; taste for fruit, 269; cunning and self-confidence, 271; presence in the garden, 272; drives away blue-jays, 275; and crow-blackbirds, 277.
robin, golden. *See* Oriole.
rooks, Gilbert White's observations on, 1, 260.
screech-owl, his cry, 1, 271 n.
snow-bird, 1, 273.
song-sparrow, 1, 267.
sparrows, 1, 283.
swallows, 1, 218, 285.
swifts, or chimney-swallows, 1, 267, 286.
thrush, brown, 1, 272.
thrush, Wilson's, 1, 287, 288.
woodcock, 1, 287.
woodpecker, golden-winged. *See* Flicker.
yellow-birds annoyed by catbirds, 1, 274.
yellow-hammer. *See* Flicker.
Birkenhead, wreck of, 1, 314.
Birkett, Mrs. Anne, Wordsworth's first teacher, 5, 178.
Birmingham, 7, 16.
Birth, pride of. *See* Ancestry.
Birthplace, its peculiar and inalienable virtue, 1, 12.
Bishop, Anne, witch, 3, 146.
Bishops, dumb, 1, 133.
Bismarck, Prince, 7, 253.
Blackburn the painter, 1, 40.
Blacklock, Dr., Latinisms of, 3, 104.
Blake, William, on Chaucer's characters, 2, 260.
Blanc, Mont, 1, 9.
Blank verse, 2, 432; 5, 306, 307; Dryden on, 3, 51 n, 71; its difficulty, 74.
Blocksberg, favorite place for witches' orgies, 3, 160.
Blokula, the place of meeting of Swedish witches, 3, 160 n.

Blondin, a suitable candidate for the Democrats in 1864, 6, 194.
Bloomer costume, 1, 115.
Bloomfield, 1, 269.
Bloomsbury, 1, 314.
Blount, Charles, plagiarized Milton's *Areopagitica*, 8, 124; Macaulay's account of the affair, 125.
Blue-jays. *See under* Birds.
Bobbin-Boy, 1, 300.
Boccaccio, smoothness of his verse, 2, 250; on Dante, 5, 7, 22 n, 27, 86 n, 123 n; on Cardinal Poggetto's desire to burn the bones of Dante, 29; appointed lecturer on Dante, 31; his life of Dante untrustworthy, 87 n; *also* 2, 267; 5, 52.
Bodin on the witchcraft of Abel de la Rue, 3, 143; on the identity of the Devil and Pan, 154; on the transportation of witches through the air, 161; on the fable of Circe, 169; on the torturing of witches, 190; justifies falsehood to a witch, 190; favors burning as the punishment of witchcraft, 191; on Wierus's work, 195; his unscrupulousness, 202; on the doings of evil spirits, 206; *also*, 170, 185.
Bodmer, 4, 154; publishes the *Nibelungen Lied*, 2, 413.
Body, the, compared to a lamp of finest clay, 1, 37.
Boethius, 5, 75.
Boëtius, 3, 126.
Böttiger, supplied Goethe with facts, 3, 267.
Boileau, his school critical not creative, 2, 414; Keats on, 3, 7; Dryden on, 7.
Bolingbroke, affected indifference to the world in his correspondence, 2, 438; the St. John of Pope's gospel in the *Essay on Man*, 449.
Bolivar, the "liberator of the world of Columbus," 2, 15.
Bologna, Dante's connection with, 5, 44.
Bolton, Edmund, on Daniel, 4, 238 n.
Bonaparte, Lucien, his *Charlemagne*, 7, 74.
Bonaparte, Napoleon. *See* Napoleon I.
Bonhomme Richard. *See* Jones, Paul.
Boniface VIII., Pope, in the *Divine Comedy*, 5, 143, 150.
Bonstetten, his judgment of Gray, 8, 20.
Book collectors, 2, 275.
Book-making the last refuge of the unhappy, 1, 36.
Book rarities, 2, 274.
Books, sacredness of, 2, 276; Ireland's *Book-lover's Enchiridion*, 7, 95; the comfort and friendship of, 96; the real world created by the imagination in them, 97; Wordsworth on, 97; the "good society" to be found in, 102; the wide range of character and subject, 103; the armories of human experience, 233; easier reading than some other kinds of printed matter, 235. *See also*, Literature; Reading; Old books.
Books and Libraries; address at Chelsea, 22 Dec., 1885, 7, 95–118.
Booths and shows at the Harvard Commencement, 1, 44.
Bordeaux wine, increased exportation of, 7, 5.
Bores, Nature's field of honest labor for, 1, 337; the fate of, 4, 76.
Born, Bertrand de, 2, 197.
Borneil, Girard de, Dante on, 5, 109 n.
Bossuet, 3, 105.
Boston, the Common, 1, 73; formerly the front door of America, 66; introduction of Cochituate

water, 238; its wrangle with New York, 2, 10; the character of its life and influence, 22; the vicinity of the College, 23; the changes in its life, 24; Josiah Quincy as mayor of, 38; its literary supremacy, 7, 100.
Boswell, as unique hitherto as Shakespeare, 1, 38; his desire to visit Rome, 147; rescued from obloquy by Carlyle, 2, 64; kept company with Rousseau, 4, 176; his letters to Temple, 206.
Bosworth, on the special virtues of Saxon, 3, 231.
Bottom, the Weaver, 2, 215.
Bouhours, Père, on German culture, 1, 306.
Bounties, 7, 226.
Bounty, the mutineers of the, 8, 156.
Bourdaloue, 7, 11.
"Bourgeois," applied to a want of propriety in diction, 3, 37.
Bouterwek, on *Don Quixote*, 7, 154.
Bowing, Francis Sales's exquisite bow described, 1, 66; three exemplary bows, 66.
Bowles, Rev. W. L., 2, 468.
Bowyer, James, of Christ's Hospital, 7, 196.
Boyd, Henry, first translator of the *Divine Comedy* in English, 5, 36.
Boys, American, 1, 11; at play in the snow, 365; public opinion of, true and discerning, 5, 320.
Bradshaw, on Chaucer's doubtful productions, 2, 189.
Brahma, 2, 392; 3, 235.
Brain, the supposed masculine and feminine lobes, 4, 217.
Bran, its prophets, 2, 132.
Brandellius and Mogusius, 4, 135.
Brandy and lager-beer, the Dutchman's distinction, 1, 152.
Bravos, 1, 210.
Breakfast in a hay-maker's camp, in northern Maine, 1, 113.
Breckinridge, John C., candidate for President in 1860, views of the Constitution, 6, 30; his honesty, 43.
Breeches, Roger Williams refuses to sell them to the Indians, 4, 80.
Breitinger, Gottsched on his *Art of Poetry*, 4, 155.
Brentford sceptre, 1, 40.
Brewer, the, in Cambridge, 1, 22.
Brewster, Jonathan, his alchemistical researches and correspondence with the younger Winthrop, 4, 59; his reasons for secrecy, 64; on the character of the New England state, 7, 116.
Bribery, its increase in American politics, 7, 243.
Brick blocks in Cambridgeport, 1, 35.
Bride of Corinth, 3, 172.
Bridge at Subiaco, 1, 214.
Brissotins, 5, 174, 185.
Britannia's trident, its advantages, 1, 144.
British. *See* English.
Brome, Alexander, 8, 94, 97, 278.
Brontë, Charlotte — *Jane Eyre*, 5, 199.
Brook, seen under snow-drifts, 1, 363; frost-work on, 369.
Brook Farm, Emerson on, 2, 401.
Brooks, Phillips, contributions to Stanley Hall received through his hands, 7, 56.
Broome, his part in Pope's Homer, 2, 295.
Broomstick, origin of the stories of its use by witches, 3, 164.
Brossier, Martha, on trial for witchcraft in 1598, 3, 206.
Brother, as a title, 1, 162.
Brown hands, 1, 219.
Brown, Tom, 3, 106 n.
Browne, Sir Thomas, believed in witchcraft, 3, 199; his language, 227 n; pronunciation of -ed, 5, 284 n; *also*, 1, 275; 2, 153;

3, 217; **5**, 298; quoted, **7**, 330; **8**, 10.
Browne, Thomas, of Middlesex, accused of witchcraft, **3**, 137 n.
Browne, William, **4**, 261; verses suggested by Spenser, 317 n.
Browning, verses on St. Peter's, **1**, 235; his picture of an old king, **2**, 89; **7**, 25; his increasing mannerism, **2**, 158; on creative genius, **7**, 62; his translation of the Agamemnon, 321; *also*, **5**, 191.
Browning, Mrs., *Aurora Leigh* belongs to the physically intense school, **2**, 159.
Browsing, Johnson and Lessing both fond of, **4**, 123.
Bruce, Latinisms of, **3**, 104.
Brunelleschi, **5**, 4.
Brunswick, Duke of, appoints Lessing librarian, **4**, 142.
Bryant, poem on the Embargo, **2**, 36; his style compared with Milton's, **5**, 277.
Bryskett, Lodowick, on Spenser, **4**, 251 n.
Buchan, Lord, **1**, 159.
Buchanan, President, his administration, **6**, 52; his theory of *laissez-faire*, 59, 69; his fatal indecision, 69; his correspondence with the South Carolina commissioners, 84; his cabinet, 100; *also*, **6**, 50, 76, 96, 358, 364.
Buckingham, Duke of. *See* Villiers, George.
Buckle, doctrine of averages, **1**, 300; on Burke, **4**, 175; theory on the advance of mankind, **5**, 159; his historical method, **6**, 154.
Buddhist ceremonies, traces of, in the Roman Church, **1**, 235.
Buffalo, Romish priests compared to, **1**, 183.
Building-lots, **1**, 35.
Bull, Jeremiah, **4**, 74.
Buncombe oratory, **6**, 62.
Bunker Hill, **1**, 73.
Bunyan compared with Spenser as to allegory, **4**, 286; the secret of his power, 286; *also*, **2**, 19, 214; **5**, 312.
Burbage, Richard, the actor, **8**, 171.
Bürger, *Pfarrer's Tochter*, possibly suggested Wordsworth's *Thorn*, **5**, 203.
Burgoyne, General, his soldiers quartered in Massachusetts Hall, **1**, 18.
Burke, Edmund, the imagination in his works, **2**, 57; his generosity of "communication," 142; his style, **3**, 42; Lessing's debt to, **4**, 162 n; a sentimentalist, 174; the character of his political wisdom, 175; his hatred of Rousseau, 175; an inspired snob, 178; his prose, **5**, 346; influence of his writings, **7**, 97; statesmanship shown in his writings and speeches, 240; harmonious working of his understanding and his imagination, 241; influence of Milton's prose on, **8**, 126; *also*, **5**, 271; **7**, 8.
compared with Fisher Ames, **2**, 7; with Dryden, **3**, 9; **8**, 6; with Milton in political wisdom, **5**, 271; with Dr. Johnson, **7**, 241.
on Sheridan, **3**, 32; on Rousseau, **4**, 176; on the condition of the American Colonies, **7**, 247
Wordsworth on, **3**, 13; **5**, 187; Buckle on, **4**, 175; Johnson on, **7**, 85.
Burleigh, Lord, hostile to Spenser, **4**, 250; Spenser's allusions to, 250; on polyglottism, **7**, 314; *also*, **4**, 281, 290.
Burlington, Lord, Pope's letter to, **2**, 467.
Burnet, Dryden's lines on, **3**, 97.
Burns, Anthony, **6**, 84.
Burns, Robert, on snow, **1**, 362; Emerson's speech on, at the Centenary dinner, **2**, 403; his sufferings from his biographers, **4**, 91;

influence on Wordsworth, 5, 190; *also*, 2, 198; 4, 141, 184, 227.
Burton, Robert, 8, 173.
Busby, Dr., 2, 85, 292.
Business prevents crankiness, 4, 12.
Bussy-Rabutin, 4, 246; on winter in the country, 1, 343.
Butcher without his coat, arrested for contempt of court, 1, 29.
Buti, on the date of Dante's birth, 5, 95 n; on Dante, 104; on Dante's "second death," 127.
Butler, Samuel, Dryden on, 3, 52 n; on poetical composition, 4, 434; Coleridge on *Hudibras*, 7, 85.
Butterfly, Spenser's verses on, 4, 273.
Buttman's Greek grammar translated by Everett, 7, 189.
Byron, his influence traced on J. G. Percival, 2, 108; his admiration for Pope, 469; his replies to Bowles, 469; Moore's connection with, 4, 180; Spenser's influence upon, 320; compared with Wordsworth and Keats, 5, 342; *also*, 1, 343; 2, 120, 158, 468; 3, 98; 4, 179; 5, 192, 200.
on the sea, 1, 122; on the falls of Terni, 154; on Rome, 222; on execution as a test of merit, 2, 454; on Wordsworth, 5, 211; on Fielding, 7, 73.

C—— = Andrew Craigie.
Cabalists, 3, 224.
Cactus, 5, 65.
Cæsar both a writer and a warrior, 2, 18.
Calderon, fondness for similes and conceits, 1, 124; Dryden's *Evening Love* taken from, 3, 64; drama on Theophilus, 136; retains always a provincial accent, 7, 131; his dramatic power, 142; passage cited, 3, 274 n; *also*, 287; 5, 58; 7, 85, 141; 8, 174, 175, 194.
Calendar of Roman beggars, 1, 243.
California, 3, 316.
Californian, met in a tavern at Passawampscot, 1, 221.
Calling names, 6, 374.
Calm at sea, 1, 122.
Calvin, Rousseau trained in the school of, 4, 188; on monarchy, 5, 41.
Calvinism, its effect on the character, 4, 216.
Cambridge thirty years ago, 1, 3–67; its characteristics and appearance, 15; still a village, 15, 17, 293; the New Road, 15; the trees and churches, 15; the Charles, 15; the Old Road and its horse-chestnuts, 16, 297; the Common, 17; its special peculiarities not yet gone, 20; institutions more established, 20; Newman, the white-washer, 21; Lewis, the brewer, 22; the barber's shop, 24; the two groceries, 26; the town constables, 27; the two Scotch gardeners, 28; the old court-house, 29; the twin Snows, the oyster men, 30; the sloop Harvard, 32; the Port, 33; the Muster and the Cornwallis, 42; Commencement day, 44; its street lamps, 297; the best spot on the habitable globe, 329. *See also*, Harvard College.
Cambridge Synod of 1679, 4, 15.
Cambridge University, England, Dryden on, 3, 15; the spell of its venerable associations, 7, 169.
Cambridgeport, a great caravansary rather than a suburb, 1, 33; the marshes bought by Rufus Davenport, 34.
Camenz, Lessing at school in, 4, 114.
Cameronianism, 4, 84.
Campagna, view of, 1, 166; seen at sunset, 172; railroads out of harmony with, 180; seen from the road to Cavi, 193; Gervinus on

Shakespeare, likened to its underground caverns, 4, 93.
Campaldino, battle of, Dante present at, 5, 13.
Campbell, 3, 58 n; on Pope, 2, 468.
Campion, Thomas, 4, 234.
Canada, the journals recommend strict neutrality in 1861, 6, 106.
Canker-worms, 1, 55, 279.
Canoes called birches on the Maine lakes, 1, 97; the felidæ of watercraft, 107; experiences in a leaky canoe, 110.
Canorousness, the, of Homer's verses, 7, 327.
Cant defined, 2, 75.
Cantù on Dante, 5, 45.
Capital, importance of having a national, 8, 198.
Capitals, American, not truly so, 2, 18.
Captain, Dutch, X.'s story of, 1, 143.
Caractacus. *See* Mason, William.
Carbery, Countess of, Jeremy Taylor's description of, 2, 459.
Cardinal and his attendants, a bow returned by them, 1, 66, 244.
Caricature, the truth in, 1, 305.
Carlyle, Thomas, 2, 53–100; possibility of arriving at a just estimate of him, 61; the bent of his mind illustrated by his early critical essays, 62; his sympathetic appreciation of character, 63; his critical method, 64, 66; his humor ends in cynicism, 65, 66; Richter's influence upon, 65; tendency to confound the moral with the æsthetic standard, 66; his lack of artistic sense, 68; his faults of style and thought traced to their root in character, 69; his position as a moral and political philosopher, 69; his sentimentalism and love of the picturesque, 70; seeks his ideal in individuals rather than in the race, 70; his Hero-cure, 70; his treatment by Cromwell or Friedrich imagined, 72; the dominie spirit continually more obtrusive in his writings, 72; the increasing extravagance of his hero-worship, 74; his remedy for the World's failure to call for Hercules, 74; has only repeated himself since *Sartor Resartus*, 75; his cynicism, 76, 83; his limitations as an historian, 77; his epical treatment of history, 78; the vividness of his pictures, 78, 81, 99; his lack of comprehensiveness, 78; his want of impartiality, 80; narrative wearisome to him, 81, 99; his accuracy of observation and description, 81; his demand of blind hero-worship, 85; the cudgel theory of divine government, 85; the intensity of his convictions, 86; decline of sincerity caused by the struggle for novelty, 88; his teaching, the "literature of despair," '89; his choice of Friedrich as a hero, 90; his lack of historic insight, 91; the character of his passion for truth, 94; his skill in winning sympathy for a character, 96; a great poet in all but rhythm, 98; his belief in brute force, 98; his loyalty to reality, 99; his value as an inspirer and awakener, 100; his influence second only to Wordsworth's, 100; gave the immediate impulse to the transcendental movement, 131; his true connection with it, 134; the herald of the decease of Scotch Presbyterianism, 135; and the embodiment of its spirit, 135; compared with Emerson in the character and result of his teaching, 138; his power of pictorial narration, 5, 253; leads the reaction against modern civilization, 6, 307; *also*, 5, 188; 6, 150, 153, 211.

on America, 1, 309; 7, 24; on the Hohenzollerns, 1, 323; on the Civil War, 324; on Boswell, 2, 64; on Dr. Francia, 73; on Edward Irving, 87; on the dissolution of Parliament in 1655, 4, 40; on Dante, 5, 55, 77, 103 n. *Critical essays*, 2, 62, 66; *Frederick the Great*, 78, 90–96; 4, 119; *French Revolution*, 2, 67; *Montaigne*, 63; *Sartor Resartus*, 65, 131; *Schiller*, 97.
Carnival, 1, 42.
Carratella, a ride in, 1, 181.
Carter, Miss, Wordsworth's fondness for her *Poem on Spring*, 5, 190.
Cary, Henry, translation of the *Divine Comedy*, 5, 36.
Cary, Jonathan, of Salem, 3, 208.
Casella, 5, 11.
Cass, Lewis, 6, 359.
Caste in New England and Virginia, 4, 19.
Castles in the air, 2, 71.
Castor and Pollux of the oyster trade, 1, 30.
Castriot, George, king of Epirus, 2, 348.
Cat at the inn in Palestrina, 1, 191.
Catacombs, guides in, 7, 89.
Catalogues, library, 7, 101; the author's first of his library, 2, 276.
Catharine-wheels, South American republics compared to, 2, 15.
Catholicism. *See* Roman Catholicism.
Cato, 6, 157; advice in regard to companions, 7, 104.
Catullus, 2, 199.
Caudine yoke, 6, 13.
Cause and effect proportionate, 6, 249.
Cavalcanti, Guido, 2, 57; 5, 74.
Cavalier and Puritan compared, 4, 82.
Cavi, the ride to, from Palestrina, 1, 192; the streets of, 193.
Cavi, Monte, its volcanic character, 1, 167; seen from Olevano, 206.
Cayenne, a place for red-peppery temperaments, 6, 76.
Cedars with gray moss, in the moonlight, 1, 109.
Celery, 1, 22.
Celestina, the tragicomedy of, 8, 192.
Celibacy, 1, 58.
Cellini, Benvenuto, anecdote of his boyhood, 3, 3; on autobiographies, 4, 205; *also*, 5, 10, 223.
Ceremonial, 2, 23; Philip II.'s ambassador on, 88.
Certosa, 1, 21.
Cervantes, his training, 2, 68; his humor, 308; 7, 145, 157; his universality, 3, 243; analysis of complex motives in, 279; on translation, 5, 118 n; his optimism, 7, 144; the father of the modern novel, 163; *also*, 3, 232; 4, 99.
Don Quixote, 7, 141–164; its place in the affections of mankind, 143; the book thoroughly good-natured and good-humored, 144; the dedication to the Second Part, 145; compared with *Robinson Crusoe*, 146; its moral, 146, 150; its pathos, 147; Don Quixote's conception of his mission, 148; transcendental criticism applied to, 149; Don Juan Valera's objections to subtle interpretations, 149; Cervantes' purpose in writing the book, 150, 163; a satire on doctrinaire reformers, 150; the rescue of the boy Andrés, 152; the objects of his benevolence come back to his discomfiture, 152; Sancho the practical man, 152, 153, 156, 159; (6, 235); the liberation of the galley-slaves, 153; the characters, not realistic, but entirely lifelike, being idealized conceptions, 154; its humor, 156;

the psychological truth of the hero's character, 158; the key of his character, 158; the island which Sancho is to govern, 160; conscience of Don Quixote and that of Sancho, 161; the adventure of the Fulling Mills, 161; character of Sancho, 162; the quality of the narrative, 162; the practical jokes played on Don Quixote resented by the reader, 162; Dulcinea, 5, 108; Coleridge on, 7, 153; Fitzgerald on, 163; *also*, 2, 8; 6, 129.
Chain, lengthening the, a favorite figure with several poets, 3, 49 n.
Chairman, his privilege of speaking first, 7, 219; his true office, 219.
Chalkhill, John, 8, 101.
Chamisso; *Peter Schlemihl*, origin of the story, 3, 178.
Chance, 5, 215 n.
Change, perpetual, in the world around us, 7, 3; the condition of our being, 8, 139.
Changelings, general belief in, 3, 172.
Chansons de Geste, 2, 204. *See also*, Romances of Chivalry.
Chanson de Roland, 7, 179, 322.
CHAPMAN, 8, 253–277; his birth and death, 258; his education, 258; familiar with several languages, 259; imprisoned by King James, 259; joint author with Jonson and Marston, 259; some condemned passages, 259; a man of grave character, 259; his strong friendships, 260; the number of his plays, 261; his characters are types, 261; his finest tragedies, 264, 266; his choice of heroes, 266; never knew when to stop, 268; the most sententious of poets, 268; his annotations to the *Iliad*, 268; incomparable amplitude in his style, 269; his English of the best, 270; his fondness for homespun words, 270; his relations with his brother poets, 272; his use of compound words, 272; his mannerism, 273; as a translator, 274–276; his theory of translation, 274; a poet for intermittent reading, 276; his long sentences, 1, 255; his diction and poetic depth, 2, 307; his reverence for Homer, 322; a master of verse, 324; effect of his translations on Keats, 328; 5, 322; his description of a virtuous wife, 2, 460; use of nak't, saf't, etc., 5, 283; his spelling, 284 n; compared with Shakespeare, 7, 290; his appreciation of his mother tongue, 8, 185; his invocation of Marlowe, 209; *also*, 2, 309; 7, 86.
on the moon, 1, 127; on his translation of Homer, 2, 319; on pedantic translators, 321.
Coleridge on, 2, 318; Dryden on, 3, 49; 8, 266; Keats on, 4, 254; Professor Minto on, 8, 271.
All Fools his best comedy, 8, 261.
Biron's Conspiracy and Tragedy, 3, 240 n; eulogy of Philip II. in, 8, 260; *Homer*, reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 281; Hooper's edition, 318; its merit, 321; the similes, 322; the character of the verse, 324; passages quoted and compared with Lord Derby's, 325; the sea passages fine, 328; fine single phrases, 328; the shortcomings of the editor, 329; *also*, 1, 357; *Odyssey* quoted, 5, 281 n; *Revenge of Bussy d'Ambois*, 8, 263, 270, 271; *The Gentleman Usher*, 262; *Tragedy of Chabot*, 264.
Character, it is cumulative, 1, 76; influence of surroundings upon, 2, 9; influence of democracy on, 20; Emerson's power a testimonial to

the value of, 395; as rare as genius, and nobler, 4, 101; Lessing on, 128; importance of, in a teacher of morals, 185; not concerned in a work of the highest genius, 201; valued above talent, 201; its power in literature, 5, 167; knowledge of it not gained by a too minute subdivision of ingredients, 249; from what it results, 316; influenced by company and by reading, 7, 104; a chief factor in the course of history, 110; its importance in the regeneration of society, 125; *also*, 3, 109.
Charing Cross, London, 1, 329.
Charity, 7, 54; required in judging the doctrines of others, 3, 208.
Charlemagne, 2, 90, 92.
Charles I. of England, Masson's description of, 5, 258; Marvell on, 259.
Charles II. of England, 3, 29; 4, 258; on the English climate, 1, 367; his French tastes, 2, 418.
Charles V., Emperor, 7, 11; cited, 314.
Charles XII. of Sweden, Pope on, 2, 456.
Charles Edward, the Young Pretender, the interest attaching to, 2, 6.
Charles River and its marshes, 1, 15.
Charleston, 2, 22.
Charlestown boys in Cambridge, 1, 20.
Charlton, Dr., Dryden's verses addressed to, 3, 29.
Charon, 1, 185, 223.
Châteaubriand, his sentimentalism, 1, 122; 2, 148; his attempts at suicide, 126; *also*, 1, 343; 4, 179, 211, 217.
on the wilderness, 1, 282; on Shakespeare, 3, 285; on desiring misfortune, 4, 194; on Rousseau and Voltaire, 210; on Dante, 5, 33.
Chatterton, Wordsworth on, 2, 411 n; Keats's sympathy for, 5, 322.
Chaucer, 2, 183–269; the springtime freshness of his writings, 183; the absence of self-consciousness, 185; Occleve's portrait of him, 186; the few facts of his life, 187; describes himself in the Clerk of Oxford, 187; the doubtful poems, 189 n; the publications of the Chaucer Society and of other authors, 190; his indebtedness to earlier poets, 193; his insight into life, 195; his debt slight to the Provençal poets, 198; Norman influence seen in his work, 217; a scholar, thinker, and critic, 217; compared with Dante, 218; the true forerunner of Shakespeare, 221; his structural faculty, 221; a reformer without cynicism in literature and morals, 222; the English narrative poetry of his time, 222; his effect on the English language, 225, 234, 235; compared with Langland, 228; his literary sense, 229; the charm of his language, 234; his verse, 234; misapprehension of his verse by modern editors, 237; emendations necessary to restore his verse, 240; the theory that he did not sound final and medial *e* disproved, 243; follows the *Roman de la Rose* in this respect, 246; lack of uniformity in this, 247; his rule to be deduced from his musical verses, not from the halting ones, 249; his power as a narrative poet, 252; his pathetic passages, 253; his humor, 253, 267; his combination of energy with simplicity, 254; compared with Shakespeare as to the action of the imagination, 255; his simple love of Nature, 256; the

continuity and even power of his best tales, 257; his naturalness, 258, 263; his epithets, 259; his characters, 260, 266; his satire, 262; 3, 93; his originality, 2, 263; allegory not attractive to him, 265; the character of his work reviewed, 266; his personal character, 268; Pres. Kirkland's resemblance to, 1, 50; a sceptic in regard to witchcraft, 3, 193; his language, 227 n; Spenser's master, 4, 262; his knowledge of Dante, 5, 35; *also*, 2, 85, 94, 434; 3, 287; 5, 45; 7, 131; quoted, 1, 342; 2, 234, 269.

on truth, 2, 189; on inconstancy, 311.

Dryden on, 2, 186; 3, 99; Gower on, 2, 218; Coleridge on his verse, 240; William Blake on his characters, 260; Spenser on, 268.

Canterbury Tales, the device of connecting them an afterthought, 2, 190; the six-text edition, 191; Aldine edition and Wright's edition, 243; their happily chosen plan, 267; *House of Fame*, 268; *Monk's Tale*, 218; *Romaunt of the Rose*, language of, 3, 227; *Sir Thopas*, 2, 218.

Chaucer Society, 2, 190, 243.

Cheeriness of Francis Sales, 1, 64.

Cheese with power to turn men into beasts, 3, 169.

Cheever's *Accidence*, 2, 33.

Cheiron, his autobiography imagined, 4, 206.

Chelsea public library, address at the opening of, 7, 95–118.

Chesterfield, Lord, on Dante, 5, 36.

Chevy Chase, 2, 399.

Chicago Convention of 1864, 6, 191.

Chidley, Mrs. Katherine, Masson's description of, 5, 259.

Child, F. J., his Chaucer studies, 2, 191.

Childhood, recollections of, 2, 21.

Children, action of the imagination in, 3, 122; all geniuses at first, 4, 204; effect of teaching by rote, 5, 178; their natural healthy desires to be satisfied, 7, 114.

Chivalry of the South, 6, 99; made real in the verses of the Trouvères, 299.

Choice of words, 5, 346. *See also*, Diction.

Chorus, Greek, its commonplaces, 2, 176.

Christ, Edward Howes on the true idea of, 4, 58; Dante on his relation to the Roman Empire, 5, 42; brought, not peace, but a sword, 6, 13; his true second coming heralded by the progress of democracy, 379; the first true democrat and the first true gentleman, 7, 18.

Christian idea in literature, contrasted with the Pagan idea, 5, 136; embodied by Dante, 169.

Christians, inconsistencies of, seized upon by scoffers, 6, 14.

Christianity, intensifies self-consciousness, 2, 175; revolutionizes Art in the *Divina Commedia*, 5, 52; its history not concession, but aggression, 6, 13; its spirit characterized, 19; its power irresistible, 20; the gains of eighteen centuries, 29.

Christmas, the customs and feelings of the season, 7, 219.

Church, the, driven to maintain its power by arousing fear, 3, 210; its discussions out of touch with the World, 4, 153; Dante's view of, 5, 148; the first organized democracy, 7, 11; Wordsworth's attitude toward, 128.

Church and State, Dante's theory of, 5, 43, 66.

Church of England. *See* England, Church of.

Church-going in Italy, 1, 171.

Church-wardens, 1, 209.
Churchyards, desecration of, Webster's lines on, 2, 316.
Churchill, an example of short-lived popularity, 2, 56; Cowper on, 56.
Cibber, on the periwig, 3, 76; on Dryden's Rhodomontades, 92 n.
Cicero, his twaddle about Greek literature and philosophy, 1, 121.
Ciceroni in Italy, 1, 160.
Cid, Song of the, 2, 117; 7, 142.
Cigars, Prof. P.'s practice with regard to, 1, 60.
Cimabue, 5, 4; Dante said to have been his pupil, 11.
Cinchona, its properties made known by Sir K. Digby, 4, 66.
Cinthio, Giraldi, 8, 218.
Cintra, Convention of, Wordsworth's pamphlet on, 5, 213.
Circe, Bodin on, 3, 169.
Cities, failure of universal suffrage in, 7, 7; democracy in small cities, 21; the dangers of, from ignorance and poverty, 23.
Citizenship. *See* American citizenship.
City and country, Cowper on, 1, 351.
City in winter, 1, 368.
Civil service, the shortcomings of the spoils system and the absurd deductions from it, 7, 260; the abuses to be rooted out at their origin, 261.
Civil war, an impartial history of, impossible, 6, 162; American ideas of, 313.
Civil War, American. *See* American Civil War.
Civilization, the decay of, 6, 379; the means of its progress, 7, 206; its moral and its æsthetic elements, 207; the need of cultivated men, 209; literature as a mark of, 276. *See also*, American civilization; Culture; Progress; Society.
Civilized man confronted with the forest solitudes and with his real self, 4, 8.
Civita Vecchia, proposed railroad to, 1, 179; quarrel between an Italian landing and the custom-house officer, 198; the road from, to Rome, 223.
Clark, Sir James, Keats's physician at Rome, 5, 338.
Clark, Charles Cowden, of Enfield, John Keats at his school, 5, 319; lent Keats Spenser, 321.
Class legislation, 7, 210.
Classic defined, 4, 222.
Classics, superstitions attaching to, 2, 167; the debt of modern literature to, 206; the study of, 7, 198; not properly "dead" languages, 198; Greek and Latin, 307; true use of, 310. *See also*, Greek; Latin.
Classical antiquity not rated at its true value, 1, 249.
"Classical" English recommended as a model by the older critics, 3, 4.
Classical quotations, relish for, 2, 167.
Claude, 2, 259.
Claudian, Dryden on, 3, 100.
Clearness necessary to good writing, 2, 469.
Clergy of New England, 1, 51; 2, 24; 7, 174; in 17th and 18th centuries, 186.
Clerk of the Weather, 1, 266.
Cleveland, President, his ancestors, 7, 188; greeting to him at the Harvard anniversary, 215; a representative of Americanism, 223; his character, 223; his message on the tariff, 224, 225.
Clio, her gossip, 2, 16.
Clothes, 1, 320; interpenetrated with the nature of their wearers, 62; ready-made, 114.
Clothes of the soul, lines on, 1, 5.
Clothes-line in the wind, Percival's blank verse compared to, 2, 105.

Clotho, 1, 185.
Clouds, 2, 209; at Subiaco, 1, 216; before a snow-storm, 359.
Cloud-shadows, 1, 206.
Clough, A. H., on the atmosphere of Cambridge, 1, 15; at sea, 123; his true expression of the tendencies of his time, 1, 319; 2, 158.
Clown in English and Spanish tragedy, 2, 169; his absence in America, 6, 302.
Clytemnestra, likeness to Lady Macbeth, 3, 271.
Coach ride up the Sebasticook Valley, 1, 79. *See also*, Stage-coach.
Coarseness of the 18th century, 7, 69.
Cobham, Lord, letter to Pope, 3, 108 n.
Coddington, William, the Anabaptist Quaker, his account of Hugh Peter, 4, 36; extracts from his tiresome correspondence with Winthrop, 73.
Coercion, the exercise of legitimate authority, 6, 66, 82; the theory of, in the Border States, 102; the right of, admitted by the framers of the Constitution, 180; McClellan's opinions on, 203.
Coffee-houses, 1, 344.
Coffin, Gower's style compared to a, 2, 227.
Coincidences, 6, 156.
Coke, Lord, 4, 76.
Cold, its demoralizing effect, 1, 344.
Coleridge, Hartley, 4, 193.
Coleridge, S. T.: address in Westminster Abbey, 7 May, 1885, 7, 81–91; a faithful friend to his readers, 82; his metaphysics, 83; his critical power, 84; imagination constantly present in his work, 85; his poetry, 86; charm of his diction, 87; compared with Dante, 89; his failings as a man, 90; his genius, 91; his fine metrical sense, 2, 107; his view of religion, 3, 107 n; a verse taken from Spenser, 4, 265; familiar with the Inferno only of Dante's works, 5, 36; his communistic dreams, 5, 195 n; his friendship with Wordsworth, 198; his influence on Wordsworth, 235 n; his vaticinations, 6, 155; his study of Greek literature, 7, 200; his sense of harmony and melody, 282; on Shakespeare's style, 285; little influenced by Milton, 8, 126; *also*, 2, 223, 468 n; 3, 51 n, 299; 4, 164, 193, 310; 5, 240, 290 n; quoted, 4, 230; 5, 166 n; 7, 88.
on winter, 1, 344; on the halo seen in winter, 373; on borrowing, 2, 194; on English verse, 238; on Chapman's Homer, 318; on Dryden's and Pope's satire, 3, 98 n; on genius, 98 n; on toleration, 4, 152; on Dante's Satan and Milton's Lucifer, 5, 53; on Dante, 55; on Wordsworth, 195 n; on prose and poetry, 207; on Pascal, 7, 89; on *Don Quixote*, 153; on unfamiliar names, 180; on Donne, 187.
Scott on, 7, 86.
Ancient Mariner, 5, 200; 7, 87; Wordsworth on, 5, 230 n; *Catullian Hendecasyllabics*, 4, 235; *Christabel*, 7, 89; *The Friend*, 5, 214; *Wallenstein*, 7, 86.
College buildings, American, ugliness of, 1, 77.
College life, memories of, 2, 41.
College town. *See* University town.
Collins, William, his harmony and classical elegance, 2, 410; Spenser's influence upon, 4, 320.
Odes, 2, 410; *Ode to Evening*, 1, 296.
Colonna, visit to its ruins, 1, 184.
Colonna family, stronghold of, in Olevano, 1, 205.

Color, appreciation of, 1, 295.
Colored soldiers, 6, 156, 207.
Columbus, 3, 219; 7, 13; did not make the United States his only object in discovering America, 2, 16.
Columbus, the great horse, 1, 45.
Comets, Dryden's lines on, 3, 54.
Commencement. *See* Harvard College — Commencement.
Commerce, 2, 23; distinguished from trade, 23; its debt to Florence, 5, 4 n; the influence of, 8, 154.
Common sense, imagination and, 1, 352; 7, 84; characteristic of the Anglo-Saxon, 2, 212; 7, 97; Addison on, 2, 459; of the Puritans, 4, 83; of Johnson and Lessing, 123; 7, 241; in American politics, 6, 332; in literary criticism, 7, 282, 283; *also*, 6, 138.
Commonplace, the, 5, 293; Spenser a standing protest against the tyranny of, 4, 320; within reach of us all, 8, 49.
Commonplaces, 7, 4.
Communication, generosity of, 2, 142.
Communism, 7, 35; rarity of the practical kind, 4, 207; of Coleridge and Southey, 5, 195 n.
Comparative anatomy, Coleridge's criticism compared to, 7, 85.
Comparisons. *See* Similes.
Compensations of Providence, 2, 353.
Composition, Wordsworth's and Keats's methods, 5, 331.
Compromise, of fatal augury where slavery is concerned, 6, 11; compared to quack cements, 12; fostered in American politics by slavery, 26; impossible with rebels, 78; like Spalding's glue, 95; not to be considered in matters of honor and right, 196, 204; learned from the original conditions of the American government, 7, 22; its place in politics, 22.
Compton, Bishop, 2, 19.
Conceits, 2, 336; 3, 274.
Concert of the spheres, an Italian guide's remarks upon, imagined, 1, 168.
Concord in 1775 the beginning of the Revolution, 6, 107.
Condescension, 1, 220.
Condescension in Foreigners, On, 1, 293–332.
Confession, attended in order to obtain a certificate, 1, 171; the Devil asks the privilege of, 3, 176.
Confessional, 1, 231.
Confiscation of property, 6, 277.
Congress, compared to a boy's debating-club, 6, 25; the best men not sent to, from the North, 166; residence as a qualification for, 167; 7, 260; speeches in, really addressed to the member's constituency, 6, 326; *also*, 7, 26.
Congressional Globe, 4, 261.
Congreve, 2, 428; 3, 65, 109; on Dryden, 3, 97 n, 112.
Conscience, 6, 159; the flaming sword of, 13; the good taste of the soul, 7, 213.
Consciousness, national, 8, 180.
Conservatism, of Dante, 5, 51; as shown by members of the American Tract Society, 6, 15; the result of holding office, 24; claimed by three American parties in 1860, 34; the result of ownership, 35; of democracies, 94; *also*, 38, 44, 51.
Conservative temperaments, effect of progress on, 1, 51.
Consistency, instinct of, 5, 189; commonly considered of more importance than statesmanship, 6, 327.
Consolation, commonplace its twin sister, 3, 270.
Conspicuousness, 4, 69.

Constables, 4, 69, 71; of Cambridge, 1, 27.
Constantine, donation of, Dante on, 5, 143.
Constitution, men in good health unconscious of having, 6, 7.
Constitution, American. *See* United States — Constitution.
Contemplation, Dante on, 5, 109.
Contemplative life, the path of the old Mystics to, 1, 145.
Contempt of court, not wearing one's coat a ground of arrest, 1, 29.
Continuity of character exemplified in Horatio, 3, 305.
Continuity, historic, its effect on national individuality, 7, 272.
Conventions of the "transcendental" times, 2, 133.
Conventional life, Pope its peculiar poet, 2, 434.
Conventional taste, 2, 415.
Conventionality, Protestants against the religion of, 6, 308.
Conventionalities, 6, 237.
Convents, instances of demoniac possession in, 3, 181.
Conversation, its proper measure, 1, 3; at night over the fire on the hearth, 10; J. F.'s favorite topic Eternity, 57; compared to a sawmill, 73; the pendulum species of, 89; on the weather, 92; on old times, 173; of the monologue variety, in Haydon's painting-room, 5, 326. *See also*, Dialogue.
Conversion, the American Tract Society's attitude toward, 6, 8, 10.
Conviction, 6, 220; emotion mistaken for, 4, 193.
Cookery and good writing, their common principles, 3, 30.
Cooking, the saleratus period found on Moosehead Lake, 1, 98.
Cooper, J. F., 7, 115; his conception of the poetic side of early American history, 4, 8.
Copley, Anthony, a passage of Shakespeare's traced to, 2, 351.
Copley, John Singleton, character of his painting, 1, 40.
Copperheads, 6, 374.
Copyright, Milton on, 8, 119.
Corey's Hill seen at twilight, 1, 294.
Corneille, 3, 287; Voltaire on, 56. *Cinna*, 3, 75; *Pertharite*, 62.
Cornell, Ezra, anecdote of, 7, 116.
Cornwallis, the, in Cambridge, 1, 42.
Correctness in literature, 4, 160.
Correspondence, 2, 463.
Cortona, 1, 218.
Coryate, Tom, brought the fork from Italy, 1, 151.
Cosmopolitanism, 2, 147.
Costume in the drama, 3, 292, 293.
Cottle, Mr., publisher of Wordsworth and Coleridge, 5, 199, 200.
Cotton, the single product of South Carolina, 6, 72.
Cotton, Charles, 8, 94; his style, 3, 42; on winter, 347; a man of genius, 8, 98; his treatise on fly-fishing, 98.
Cough, Temple of, at Tivoli, 1, 157.
Count de Gabalis, the sylphs in Pope's *Rape of the Lock*, taken from, 2, 442.
Country, the idea of, 2, 91; love of, 92; 6, 219. *See also*, Patriotism.
Country charm of the literature of old times, 1, 274.
Country choirs, 1, 83.
Country dwellers, their meteorological ambitions, 1, 263.
Couplets, 3, 70, 73; Dryden on, 49, 51.
Courage, 6, 108; 7, 224.
Couriers, Englishmen the prey of, 1, 148; their percentage on their employer's money, 177.

Courts of law not infallible, 6, 46.
Courtesy, 2, 46; of the town-constable in Cambridge, 1, 28; its essentials found among Maine woodmen, 113.
Courtier whose thighs leaked bran, 4, 27.
Cowley on solitude, 2, 145; Dryden's opinion of, 3, 30 n, 39; his faults, 39 n; a student of Spenser, 4, 319; *also*, 2, 55; 7, 130.
Cowper, his "taller thought," 1, 27; his borrowing from Thomson, 351; the best of our descriptive poets, 352; his likeness to Rousseau, 4, 211; influence on Wordsworth, 5, 190; compared with Wordsworth, 225; his style compared with Milton's, 277; his poetry admirable in its own middle-aged way, 8, 4; poet of Nature in domestic moods, 16; *also*, 1, 259, 343; 2, 109, 233.
on winter, 1, 349, 353; on the country and the city, 351; on snow, 358; on Churchill, 2, 56; on Dryden, 3, 111; on Milton's prosody, 5, 300; on Gray, 8, 31, 46.
Homer, 2, 323; Coleridge on, 318; *The Winter Walk*, 1, 350.
Cox, Julian, her confession of witchcraft and trial, 3, 146.
Crabbe, 2, 233; his descriptions of character, 261.
Craigie, Andrew, of Cambridge, and his wife, 1, 55.
Craik, Professor, English etymologies of, 3, 229 n.
Crashawe, Richard, 8, 88.
Crawford, the sculptor, his studio in Rome, 5, 339 n.
Creation parodied by artifice, 3, 256.
Creative faculty of Shakespeare, 2, 308.
Creative genius, Browning on, 7, 62.
Creative intellect, how distinguished, 2, 230.
Crébillon *fils*, 2, 72.
Credit, its invention by the Florentines, 5, 3.
Credulity, its different manifestations, 3, 115; of the 17th century, 181.
Creeds, their tendency to become dead formulas, 6, 45.
Crime, and sin, identical with Dante, 5, 135 n; its punishment often delayed, 6, 158; humanitarian view, 7, 153; as a subject for tragedy, 8, 235.
Critic, his position compared to that of an Italian guide, 1, 168; compared to an alchemist, 4, 65; the first essential of, 8, 203.
Criticism; modern criticism regards parts rather than wholes, 2, 59; its function to sweep away the false and impure, 160; requires absence of prepossessions, and also certain fixed principles, 3, 247; its standards still furnished by Greek literature, 252; comparison inappropriate in judging works of art, 276; destructive and productive criticism, 290; a wise scepticism needed, 307; its duty to look at all sides, and give judgment of the whole, 25; its higher wisdom the capacity to admire, 55; Lessing on its method, 4, 104; the rights of friendship in, 133; apt to reverse the miracle of the archangel's spear, 134; fixed principles not a help to production, 159; produces correctness but not taste, 160; the elements of a sound judgment, 5, 175; cruelty of, 324; in the eighteenth century, 346; want of a recognized standard, 7, 72; the so-called constructive criticism, 148; subjective, as untrustworthy as it is fascinating, 281; common sense in, 282, 283.

Carlyle's method and aims, 2, 63; Thoreau's lack of critical power, 140; Leigh Hunt's method, 230; Emerson's criticism, 396; Montaigne the first modern critic, 4, 157; Coleridge's power, 7, 84. *See also*, American criticism; English criticism; French criticism; German criticism.
Crocodile, its generation described by Lepidus, 4, 61.
Cromwell, Oliver, Dryden's stanzas on the death of, 3, 19; verses addressed to, 26; his gentler qualities in Marvell's *Elegy*, 27; Hugh Peter at his funeral, 4, 36; Roger Williams's references to, 38; William Hooke's reference to his desire to retire to private life, 39; the dissolution of Parliament in 1655, 34; dissolution of the Rump Parliament in 1653, Haynes's account, 41; Maidstone's description of, 43; learned tolerance by the possession of power, 46; Hooke's account of his death, 47; his opinion of Carlyle imagined, 72; Auchinleck's saying on, 5, 262; his policy toward Independents and Presbyterians, 6, 212.
on the Millennium, 4, 37; on the disorders of the army in the West Indies in 1655, 42.
Cromwell, Richard, his abilities described by Hooke, 4, 48.
Crotchet, the nucleus of a sect, 8, 115.
Crowne, John, reminiscences of, in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, 3, 46 n.
Cruelty caused by religious differences, 3, 184; caused by fear, 185.
Crusaders, unwitting service of the, 8, 155.
Crustacean natures, 1, 51.
Cuba, the proposal to purchase, 6, 176.
Cultists, 2, 415.
Culture, 4, 96; its most precious property, 7, 209; many-sidedness the essence of, 333. *See also*, American culture; Civilization.
Cumberland, people of, 5, 196.
Cumber-minds, 5, 280.
Curculio in a plum, the priest in a diligence compared to, 1, 178.
Currency, American. *See* American currency.
Currier's shop in Cambridgeport, 1, 34.
Curtis, George William, anecdote of, 7, 116.
Cushing, Caleb, 6, 96, 111.
Cushing, General, his fears of secession, 6, 50.
Cusk, 1, 116.
Custom, 7, 130.
Custom-house at Civita Vecchia, quarrel over the duty on a parrot, 1, 199.
Cynicism, the corruption of exuberant humor, 2, 76; further characterized, 84.

Daemonic, Alcott's favorite word, 1, 53.
Daisies on Keats's grave, 5, 340.
Damianus, Peter, 3, 170.
Damn, as pronounced by the painful Mr. Perkins, 4, 17.
Dampier, Captain, on the natives of Timor, 3, 248.
Dampness at sea, 1, 122.
Dana, Chief Justice Francis, arrested a butcher for contempt of court, 1, 29.
Dana, Richard Henry, his first essays at navigation, 1, 33.
Dance of Death, Carlyle's view of life, 2, 77.
Dancing, the American Tract Society's attitude toward, 6, 4, 7.
Danger and opportunity, 6, 78.
Daniel, Samuel, his poetic style, 3, 226; his language, 4, 238; character of his verse, 239; accent, 5, 307; a master of style, 7, 319;

quoted, 3, 72; 4, 239; 7, 59; *also*, 8, 191; Bolton on, 4, 238; Wordsworth on, 238 n.
Civil Wars, 4, 239; *Defence of Rhyme*, 240, quoted, 7, 319; *To the Countess of Cumberland*, 4, 239; *Musophilus*, 239.
Danish sagas, 3, 208.
DANTE, 5, 3–170; the associations of Florence, 4; the bust of Dante in the Museum, 6; date of his birth, 6, 95 n; his ancestors, 8, 145 n; his horoscope, 8; his tutor Brunetto Latini, 8; his father's death, 9; his studies and wanderings, 10, 152 n; character of the time, 12; the few well-ascertained facts of Dante's life, 13; enrolled in a Florentine guild, 15, 59 n; the political factions of Florence, 15; Dante prior in 1300, 17, 74; his exile in 1302, 17; his subsequent wanderings, 20; his death at Ravenna, 24; his tomb, 24 n, 30; epitaph, 25; contemporary accounts of him, 26; the sorrow and labor of his life, 28; the feeling in Italy after his death, 29; lecturers on Dante appointed in several Italian cities, 31; French opinions of Dante, 32; German study of him, 34; English study of him, 35; his writings autobiographic and parts of a mutually related system, 37, 63; at once a clear-headed politician and a mystic, 38; his allusions to his exile, 39, 74; his politics, 39, 73, 116 n; his employment of Latin and Italian, 44 (2, 225); the theme of his writing righteousness, 44, 109; his knowledge of science, 45; his philosophy, 46, 60, 78; the first purely Christian poet, 49, 132, 169; his power of absorption and assimilation, 51; not a mere partisan, 51, 144; his consciousness of a divine mission, 51, 69; marks the transition between two ages, 52; his moral isolation, 53; the wide range of his influence, 54; his critics, 55; the imagination and the religious sentiment united, 58, 132; the poetic power always present, 59; the continued misunderstanding of his work, 61; the unity of his various works, 63; his character as shown in his works, 64; his hatred of sin, 64, 70; his logic, 65; believed in righteous anger, 72; and in a divine order in the universe, 72, 135 n; his lofty principle, 73; the chronology of his opinions, 73; his breadth of view, 77; his attitude toward philosophy, 78, 109; the stages of his intellectual and moral growth, 85, 114; the tales of his amours groundless, 86, 97; after the death of Beatrice he gives himself up to an active life, but is recalled by her to the contemplative, 87, 95; the Lady of the *Convito* and the Lady of the *Vita Nuova* reconciled, 89; another theory on the Beatrice of the *Purgatorio* and the *Vita Nuova*, 103; familiar with the Wisdom of Solomon and with the Scriptures, 111 n; and with French and Provençal poetry, 112 n; his prose style illustrated from the *Convito*, 112; his love of fame, 114 n; possibly present in Rome in 1300, 116; his studies in Paris, 123 n; the intense realism of his imagination, 124; his power of generalizing his special experience, 129; his relation to literature, 129; the creative faculty wanting in previous poetry, 130; character of previous sacred poetry, 132; the Christian idea contrasted with the Greek, 134; the freedom of the will the corner-stone of his system, 141, 148; his theory of society, 142; his orthodoxy, 148; makes exceptions to the absolute authority of the church, 149; his idea of God

in relation to the heathen, 151, 79 n; his teaching compared with that of the Sufis, 158; is led to faith by the unsatisfactoriness of knowledge, 159; his vision of the Divine, 162; originality of his genius, 163; his view of man and nature, 164; the secret of his power, 164; his living influence, 169; his message, 169; a sunrise at sea compared to his style, 1, 128; his story easily believed in his own time, 133; his human forest suggested by the olive-trees near Tivoli, 166; the Sasso di Dante, 250; his fiery rain, 362; his theories abstract, 2, 115; his range narrow but deep, 136; his idealization of woman, 197; a passage translated by Chaucer, 242; his verse not uniform in elisions, etc., 247; 5, 300 n; his allegory, 2, 265; his lines on the lark traced to Bernard de Ventadour, 351; his boast that no word made him say what he did not wish, 327; Spenser familiar with, 4, 250 n; appropriateness of his family arms, 5, 59 n; individual rather than self-conscious, 311; the instinct of personification recognized by, 7, 127; his style, 312; *also*, 2, 83, 148, 263; 3, 226, 242; 4, 163; 5, 258, 268, 309; 7, 61, 173, 208, 276.

compared with Chaucer, 2, 218; with Milton as to his work, 5, 53; in the circumstances of his life, 278; in character, 311; to the Hebrew prophets, 51, 69; with Spenser, 106 n; with Shakespeare as to subject, 169; with Coleridge, 7, 89.

on romances of chivalry, 2, 203 n, 217; on the vulgar tongue, 3, 224 n; on expression and conception, 233; on indecision of character, 300; on the love of wisdom, 5, 11, 109; on his own wanderings, 20; on the delights of virtue, 64 n; on Boethius and Augustine, 75; on old age, 75; on the beautiful, 77 n; on his own greatness, 77 n; on philosophy, 78, 98; on the allegorical exposition of his poems, 80; on the allegory in the Gospel account of the three Marys at the tomb of Christ, 81; on the double use of the mind, 80; on the soul's relation to God, 83; on the nature of his love for Beatrice, 85; on the active and the contemplative life, 88, 98; on allegorical composition, 91; on Virgil, 94 n; on theology and the sciences, 98; on the pursuit of truth, 99; on Aristotle and Plato, 100; references to St. Paul, 100 n; on materialism, 103 n; on religion, 104; on Brunetto Latini, 106 n; on the outward beauty of his verses, 107; on contemplation, 109; on Girard de Borneil, 109 n; on the soul's desire after good, 113; on Rome, 116 n; on translation, 118; on the double nature of man, 120; on the truly dead, 126; on the "second death," 127; on Guido Guinicelli, 131 n; on the relation between Pope and Emperor, 142; on the course of Roman history, 145; on the blessing of peace, 146; on angels, 146 n; on government, 147; on liberty, 148; on the one God worshipped by the heathen under different names, 150, 152; on prudence, 150 n; on the miracles of Roman history, 151; on the state of the heathen after death, 153; on the superiority of the wise to law, 157; on transubstantiation, 162; on the sword of Divine Justice, 6, 158.

Véricour on, 5, 15; Balbo's life of, 20 n, 22; Foscolo on, 22, 47; Boccaccio on, 22 n, 86 n,

123 n; his description of him, 27; Benvenuto da Imola on, 27; Villani's sketch of, 26; Ottimo Comento on, 28; Châteaubriand on, 33; Voltaire on, 32, 56; on the date of his birth, 7; Cornelius Agrippa on, 34; Goethe on, 34; Lord Chesterfield on, 36; Ruskin on, 37, 55; Cantù on, 45; Witte on, 47, 86 n; Rivarol on, 4, 229; on his language, 5, 53, 56; Lamennais on, 55; Schlosser on, 55; Carlyle on, 55, 77 n, 103 n; Coleridge on, 55; Ozanam on, 56, 123 n; Miss Rossetti on his style, 61 n; her comment, 66, 121, 123; Gabriele Rossetti on his exile, 62 n; Buti on his birth, 95 n; on his novitiate in a Franciscan convent, 104; Pietro di Dante on, 104, 129; V. Le Clerc on, 112 n; Wegele on, 123 n; Ruth on, 130 n; Keats on, 275.

Beatrice, her marriage and death, 5, 13; in the *Vita Nuova*, 37; her subtle transformation in Dante's memory, 90; the process of her transformation, 94; her symbolism, 101; in the *Purgatorio* and the *Vita Nuova*, 103; the blending of reality and allegory, 105; her transfiguration begun in the last sonnet of the *Vita Nuova*, 117; *also*, 2, 196, 197; 4, 310; 5, 50, 79 n, 85, 89, 93.

Convito, the authors quoted in, 5, 12; its subject, 44; the prose part later than the *Canzoni*, 90; his opinions develop in the mean time, 90, 93; explains his seeming inconsistency, 96; *also*, 48 n; quoted, 11, 21 n, 64–124 *passim*, 168.

Divina Commedia, the *Inferno* suggested by the prison at Palestrina, 1, 188; value of the *Convito* in illustration, 5, 45; date of composition, 47; its subject stated by Dante, 48; its interpretation, 48, 61, 63; its symbolism, 48; its title, 49; its subject broadly stated, 50; presents an image of the Middle Ages, 50; its scene the human soul, its fifth act the other world, 52, 140; its theme subjective, its treatment objective, 52; in spite of criticisms it remains one of the universal books, 57; its living soul behind its many meanings, 63; its plan and aim, 67; the picture of Hell, 68; the sufferers in the *Inferno* equally divided between the two parties, 74 n; God always the sun, 79 n; the pathos of the closing scenes of the *Purgatorio*, 105; occasional touches of humor, 106 n; the real Beatrice essential to its human sympathies, 108; the punishments of the *Inferno* perhaps suggested by the Wisdom of Solomon, 111 n; the conception first takes definite shape in his mind, 119; the allegory planned out, 122; its primary value as an autobiography, 124; the Other World not primarily a place of *departed* spirits, 125; begun in Latin, 138; its impartiality, 144; its central moral the truth of the incarnation, 162; its meaning, 164; its style, 165; immortality of the poem, 4, 223; conclusion of the *Paradiso*, 7, 128.

compared by Dr. Drake to Darwin's *Botanic Garden*, 5, 36; compared with *Paradise Lost*, 53; compared to a Gothic cathedral, 139.

its many editions and translations, 5, 32; Landino's comment, 46; Longfellow's translation, 89 n.

Sigier, 5, 65; Filippo Argenti, 71; the "donna gentil," 79, 91; Lucia, 79 n; the Lady of the Terrestrial Paradise, 91; Leah, 92; the wood obscure, 123; Frate Alberigo and Branca d' Oria,

126; the "second death," 127; Tristrem and Renoard of the Club, 128; Boniface VIII., 143, 150; Adrian V., 144; Bishop of Marseilles, 148; Mahomet, 149; Ephialtes, 152; Limbo, 153; Ripheus, 154; the inscription over the gate of Hell, 156; Antaeus, 166; Master Adam, 166.
Special Passages: — *Inf.* i. 117, 5, p. 126; ii. 97, p. 79 n; ii. 103, p. 117 n; viii. 40, p. 71; xv. 119, p. 106 n; xx. 30, p. 71 n; xxiv. 46–52 reproduced by Spenser, 4, 298; xxxi. 136–138, 5, p. 166; — *Purg.* i. 22, 27, p. 81; iii. 34–44, p. 100; vi. 118, 119, p. 152 n; xvi. 106–112, p. 142 n; xvi. 142, p. 165 n; xviii. 46–48, 122 n; xix. 19–24, 4, p. 317; xx. 52, 5, p. 74 n; xx. 100–117, p. 152 n; xxiii. 121, 122, p. 125; xxvii. 94–105, p. 92; xxvii. 100–108, p. 88 n; xxvii. 139–142, p. 159; xxviii. 40–44, p. 92; xxix., xxx. compared with a passage in Spenser, 4, p. 309; xxx. 115–138, 5, p. 88; xxxi. 59, p. 87 n; xxxi. 103, 104, p. 92; xxxi. 123–126, p. 105; xxxii. 100–102, p. 93; — *Parad.* i. 70–75, p. 163 n; ii. 7, p. 163; iii. 88, 89, p. 69 n; iv. 40–45, p. 68; iv. 124–132, p. 99; v. 115–118, p. 84 n; xii. 93, 94, p. 143 n; xiv. 96, p. 79 n; xvii. 55–60, p. 28; xvii. 69, p. 73; xix. 82–84, p. 154; xxvi. 107, 108, p. 110 n; xxvi. 134, p. 152 n.
Letters, 5, 46; letter to Henry VII., 21, 59 n; letter to the Florentines, 23; letter to the people of Italy, 42, 59 n; letter to Can Grande quoted, 60, 157.
Minor Poems, 5, 47; perfection of the *Canzoni*, 131.
De Monarchia, its date, 5, 39, 75; its argument, 39; Schlosser on, 42; condemned as heretical, 43; compared with Aristotle and Spinoza, 43 n; its language, 44; quoted, 120, 142, 154, *passim*.
Vita Nuova, the aspiration at its close, 5, 29; its subject, 37; its importance to the understanding of Dante, 38; its date, 38, 116; the last two sonnets as they treat of Beatrice, 116; *also*, 74; quoted, 91. *See also above*, Beatrice.
De Vulgari Eloquio, its text, 5, 43; its subject, 44; *also*, 3, 233 n; 5, 37, 76 n; quoted, 40, 75, 114 n.
Dante, Jacopo di, redeems a portion of his father's property, 5, 23 n.
Dante, Pietro di, on Dante's study of theology, 5, 104; on the "second death," 127; on Dante, 129; his comment one of the earliest, 129 n.
Danton, Carlyle's picture of, 2, 67.
Danyell, an Indian of royal blood, his necessities described by Fitz-John Winthrop, 4, 79.
Dark lady, the, of Shakespeare's sonnets, 8, 256.
Darkness, the fancy active in, 1, 127; 3, 209.
Darwin, Erasmus, the *Divina Commedia* compared to his *Botanic Garden* by Dr. Drake, 5, 37.
Darwinism, 7, 21 n.
Dates, as sold in the Cambridge groceries, 1, 26.
Davenant, Will, 3, 286; taught Dryden to admire Shakespeare, 23; his *Gondibert* characterized, 52.
Davenport, John, account of Hugh Peter, 4, 36; on God's wrath against the Quakers, 77.
Davenport, Rufus, his investments in the Cambridgeport marshes, 1, 34.
David on snow, 1, 358.
Davies, Sir John, 3, 53 n.

Davis, Jefferson, 6, 97, 98, 375, 398.
Daylight gives the supremest sense of solitude, 1, 127.
Deacons, 1, 45; 7, 103.
Dead languages, the classics improperly so called, 7, 198.
Deane, Charles, 7, 177 n.
Death, Winter compared to, 1, 338; Josiah Quincy's remark on, 2, 45; Webster's lines on, 312; Dryden's lines on, 3, 86; Petrarch's longings after, 4, 198; Dante on the truly dead, 5, 126; his lines on the "second death," 127; Keats on, 5, 336. *See also*, Dying.
Death by lightning, J. F.'s feeling about, 1, 57.
Debate of the Body and the Soul cited, 2, 369.
Decameron, price of the, 8, 140.
Declaration of Independence, 4, 86; Rousseau's influence in, 209; embodies Christianity in human laws, 6, 320.
Decorum in poetry, Milton on, 2, 408.
Decorum, public, 3, 67.
Defeated commander, sympathy for, 6, 115.
De Foe, in Pope's *Dunciad*, 5, 462; *Robinson Crusoe* compared with *Don Quixote*, 7, 146; quoted, 3, 126.
Deformities, exhibited by beggars in Roman streets, 1, 245.
Degeneracy in nature and man felt in middle life, 1, 368.
Deipnosophists, 2, 174.
Dekker, Thomas, 8, 189–193; his prosody, 2, 301; on Christ, the first true gentleman, 7, 18; *Old Fortunatus* quoted, 8, 189, 192.
De la Rue, Abel, his confession of witchcraft, 3, 139, 172.
Delaware, importation of slaves into, forbidden in 1787, 6, 173.
Delirium, Sir K. Digby's cure for, 4, 65.
Delusions, the immortality of, 7, 110.
Democracy, its heavy roller does not flatten everything, 1, 296; one cause of foreign misunderstanding of America, 307, 310; in Holland, 309; its noblest development, 310; its significance when it can fight for an abstraction, 325; its dangers and responsibilities better appreciated, 326; its influence on character, 2, 20; its blunders, 47; of the future, the ideal of manhood to be found in, 85; relation to poetry, 115; not the object of the founders of New England, 4, 5; the offspring of Puritanism, 16; 7, 12; its steady growth in New England, 4, 85; Rousseau its foster-father, 4, 209; public corruption the result of private evil, 5, 64; the responsibility of individual voters, 6, 24; 7, 255; hostile to Privilege, not to Property, 6, 35; 7, 7; duty of the people to form opinions on public questions, 6, 46; allegiance to the will of the majority its necessary basis, 59, 165; the question of self-protection, 78; conservatism of, 94; its power to suppress intestine disorder to be vindicated in the Civil War, 110; importance of education in, 166; its strength in allowing every man to rise, 168; its failure prophesied at the opening of the American Civil War, 223; its strength and steadiness proved by the Civil War, 259; usurpation of power impossible, 263; the principle of extending the right of suffrage, 282; bound to be just to all, 319; the old fallacy of the tyranny of, 369; universal suffrage necessary, 371; its advance prepares the way for

the second coming of Christ, 379.
Democracy; inaugural address, Oct. 6, 1884, 7, 3–37; the author's experience of, 6; not hostile to property, 8; the common charge of American responsibility for, 8, 12; the ferment nothing new, 10, 13; first organized in the Church, 11; men beginning to know their opportunity and their power, 12; democracy in America inherited from England, 12; the development of democracy inevitable, 14; the customary charges against democracy, 17; democracy defined, 17, 32; a parable of Jellaladeen applied to, 18; modifications of a pure democracy required in a large country, 19; democracy as embodied in the American Constitution, 21; the experience of small cities unfavorable, 21; its success in America, 22; government by discussion and by majorities, 25; universal suffrage, 26; ductility to discipline somewhat lessened, 29; development of personal independence, 29; reverence for authority declining everywhere, 30; true worth appreciated in, 31; fosters respect for superior virtue, 31; importance of public opinion, 33; significance of Socialism in, 34; the good nature fostered by, 116; its weakness, to be satisfied with the second-best, 204; a failure unless it can produce the highest types as well as a high average, 206; its tendency to overestimate material success, 207; its unsettled problems, 209; the author's address at Birmingham, 237; the weaknesses and perils resulting from its abuse, 238; successful in America before its presence was observed, 250; the duties of individual citizens in, 255; its ideal, 8, 157. *See also*, American politics; Equality.
Democratic party, character in 1860, 6, 31; its position in the North in 1861, 96, 97; its alliance with the Slave power, 176; its awkward position in 1864, 189; its candidates intended to offset each other, 191; the elements of the Chicago Convention, 191; the difficulties of constructing a platform, 193; its only proposal is surrender, 194; its attitude toward secession, 306; in 1866, 329; its contempt for the reasoning powers of the people, 350; in the Philadelphia Convention of 1866, 354; its responsibility for the Civil War, 7, 257.
Demogorgon, 1, 375.
Demoniac possession, the natural tendency toward, 3, 180.
Demosthenes, 4, 183.
Dennis, John, on artifice, 2, 415; Pope's relation to, 463; on Dryden, 3, 13, 111; as a critic, 111; *also*, 2, 425.
Dentition, 4, 195.
De Quincey, 3, 250; on Wordsworth, 2, 142; 5, 219.
Derby, Lord, his Homer quoted and compared with Chapman's, 2, 325; on the United States government, 6, 264.
De Roos, Lord, convicted of cheating at cards, 6, 102.
Description, Shakespeare's power in, 3, 261; the introduction of unmeaning particulars, 5, 263; Milton's power, 292.
Descriptive poetry, 1, 342; 7, 87; Cowper's the best for every-day wear, 1, 352; diatribe on, 4, 228; Wordsworth's power, 5, 194. *See also*, Narrative poetry.
Desmond, Countess of, 5, 246.
Despotisms, 7, 255.
Despots, 7, 25.
Devil, Mather on, 2, 284; our re-

lations with, in modern times, 4, 4. *See also*, Satan.
Devils, the infernal hierarchy, 3, 131.
Dexter, Maine, 1, 82.
Dialogue, the battledoor and shuttlecock style, 2, 177. *See also*, Conversation.
Diana, 3, 166.
Diaries, importance of keeping, 2, 27.
Dickens, *Pickwick Papers*, imitates Cervantes, 7, 164.
Diction, 5, 345; of Emerson, 2, 394; of Coleridge, 7, 87; lack of propriety in, 3, 37.
Diction and speech, 3, 230. *See also*, Choice of words; Style.
Diderot, on French poetry, 3, 79 n; Lessing's debt to, 4, 158, 161 n.
Diet, its influence on the brain, 3, 201.
Difficulty, made the tenth Muse by Voltaire, 2, 415.
Digamma in the Sirens' lay, 1, 59.
Digby, Sir Kenelm, his theory of association, 1, 71; both a writer and a soldier, 2, 19; on witchcraft, 3, 199; sends curious prescriptions to J. Winthrop, Jr., 4, 65; seeks books for Harvard College, 66; his politics, 66.
Dignity of man, 2, 146.
Dilettante, the moral, 4, 197.
Dilettantism, its beginning, 5, 52.
Diligence from Tivoli to Rome, 1, 173, 178. *See also*, Stage-coach.
Dilke quoted on Keats's betrothal, 5, 334.
Dimmesdale, Mr., in Hawthorne's *Scarlet Letter*, 4, 211.
Dinner at the inn in Palestrina, 1, 189.
Dinners, 2, 29.
Diphilus the Labyrinth, 2, 133.
Diplomacy, the principle of paper money in, 6, 360.
Discipline as exercised by President Kirkland, 1, 50.
Discontent, underlying all great poetry, 2, 114; wholesome, 399.
Discussion, slavery has no claim to immunity from, 6, 17; the life of free institutions, 39.
Disease, satisfaction of finding a long name for, 7, 9.
Disputes of Italians, 1, 196.
Disraeli, Isaac, 2, 468; his herbarium of Billingsgate, 4, 148.
Distance estimated by one's feelings, 1, 102.
Divine judgments made to work both ways, 4, 76.
Divorce, Milton's demand for easier, 5, 309.
Dixon, Hepworth, on the typical America, 1, 281.
Dixon, James, servant of Wordsworth, 5, 173 n.
Dobson, Austin, his life of Fielding, 7, 66.
Doctrinaires in politics, 6, 233; 7, 236.
Dodo, 1, 350.
Dodsley's *Old Plays*, 8, 186.
Dogs of the Palestrina inn, 1, 191.
Domes generally look heavy, 1, 242.
Don Quixote; notes read at the Workingmen's College, 7, 141-164. For details, *see under* Cervantes.
Donati, Corso, Dante's connection with, 5, 14; plunders Florence, 24 n.
Doner, Lawrence, the Devil asks to be confessed by him, 3, 176.
Donkey, his bray, 1, 186.
Donkey driving, 1, 208.
Donne, his profoundness, 2, 125; his verse, 248, 250; 5, 300 n; wanting in the higher imagination, 3, 253; his Mistress Boulstred, 5, 328; and Walton, 8, 78, 79; Walton's elegy on, 79, 83, 85; *also*, 2, 153, 311, 430 n; 5, 132; quoted, 7, 98, 170; his *Relic*, 3, 89; *A Vale-*

diction forbidding mourning, 8, 80.
Dryden on, 3, 89 n; Ben Jonson on, 7, 136; Coleridge on, 187.
Doolittle, Mr., Chairman of the Philadelphia Convention, 6, 352.
Doubt, 5, 102; Dante compares it to a sucker, 100. *See also*, Scepticism.
Douglas, Gawain, his translation of the *Æneid*, 4, 228.
Douglas, Janet, her confession of witchcraft, 3, 147.
Douglas, Stephen A., candidate for President in 1860, views of the Constitution, 6, 31; his oratory, 238; President Johnson's allusion to, 356; his character, 358; his canonization a common misfortune, 359.
Downing, Emanuel, 4, 28, 51, 56; letter to Winthrop on the necessity of obtaining slaves, 49.
Downing, Sir George, 4, 29, 35.
Dragon, age of the, 1, 130.
Drake, Dr., compares the *Divina Commedia* to Darwin's *Botanic Garden*, 5, 36.
Drake, Sir Francis, 2, 23.
Drama, a growth, not a manufacture, 2, 169; the demand that all its parts must be in keeping, 3, 292; anachronisms in, 294; the introduction of low characters and comic scenes in tragedy, 296; the moral office of tragedy, 313; it teaches by indirection, 314; cultivation of the character essential to a writer of, 4, 128; difficulty of making a moral theory the object, 5, 199; origin of the modern, 8, 171; the English, 171; the French, 173, 174; the Spanish, 175–177; the Italian, 177. *See also*, English drama; French drama; Greek drama; Spanish drama.
Dramatic poetry, the combination of qualities needed for, 2, 309; distinguished from narrative, 252.
Dramatic unity, Shakespeare's relation to, 3, 288.
Dramatists, Elizabethan, 2, 307, 310; 5, 190; unskilful plots of the secondary English, 8, 230–233.
Drayton, 3, 226; shipwrecked by his choice of subjects, 4, 237; on Sir Philip Sidney, 8, 199; on Marlowe, 208.
Battle of Agincourt, 3, 57; *Moon-calf* cited, 171 n; *Nymphidia*, 2, 462; 4, 238; *Polyolbion* a versified gazetteer, 237; *To the Cambrio-Britons*, 238.
Dreams, visit to Prester John on a giraffe, 1, 97.
Dresden, winter in, 1, 348.
Drinking in the wine-shop of Rójate, 1, 210; Thomas Shepard's letter on, to Winthrop, 4, 49.
Drive from Subiaco to Tivoli, 1, 217.
Drowning, effect on the memory, 1, 39.
Drummond, of Hawthornden, 4, 268; reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 278; quoted, 5, 282 n.
Drunkenness in the Washington Corps, 1, 54; Uncle Zeb's frequent potations, and his difficulties, 103; of Lepidus in *Antony and Cleopatra*, 2, 82.
Dryden, 3, 3–112; his position among English poets, 8; posterity has judged him by his best, 9; the first of the moderns, 10; the character of his age, 10; his own character, 12; his acquaintance with earlier and later writers, 14; his father and family, 14; his reading when a boy, 14; education, 15; poet-laureate and historiographer, 16; marriage, 16; the style of his earliest verses, 17; studied the early poems of Milton,

19; his power of argument, 20; his best work in his old age, 22; the gradual quickening of his imagination, 23; the *sermo pedestris* his natural element, 24; his poetry at its best in translations, 24; compared to an ostrich, 25; early performances of the *obligato* sort, 26; his attitude towards the Restoration, 29; his first work of fine quality in 1663, 29; unevenness of his style, 31, 38; poetical beauty of his prose, 31; failings of his verse, 33, 59, 105 n; the development of his taste traced in his prefaces, 35; his memory for things, not words, 35 n; instances of "bourgeois" diction, 37; his prose style compared with that of others, 42; formed on the usage of the Court, 45; his vein of coarseness, 46; an old gentleman's memories of him in Norwich drugget, 46; his prefaces, 47; his pithy sentences, 48, 84; his eagerness in argument, 50; his inaccuracy, 50; the *Annus Mirabilis* examined in detail, 53; his happy comparisons, 53, 72 n, 82; his frequent borrowing from other authors, 55 n, 58; in poetry he is always emulating some one else, 57; liability to mix prose in his poetry, 59; his plays, 61; the comic ones unsuccessful, 63; their nastiness, 63; 7, 68; his apology for it, 3, 68; defence of heroic plays in the French style, 69; his poor success in following it, 74, 79; had no aptitude for the stage, 80; his apology for his own faults, 80; the admirable single passages in his plays, 82; his persistent capability of enthusiasm, 84; his blank verse, 86; instances of pathos, 86; his sterling sense, 87, 101; fervent rather than imaginative, but often picturesque, 88; his moralizing always good, 90; his plots poor, 92; forbearing in literary quarrels, 93; devoid of jealousy, 94; his satire, 95; the judicious criticism of his prefaces, 99; his influence on English literature, 101; allows himself to fall into verbiage, 102; his Latinisms, 103; his use of English, 105; his conversion to Romanism, 107; the mingled scepticism and superstition of his mind, 108; his personal appearance, 108; the secret of his eminence, 109; his genius, 111; his funeral characteristic of his life, 112; assisted the triumph of French taste in England, 2, 424; his debt to French literature, 4, 158; a pupil of Spenser, 319; prosody, 5, 308; inspired by Shakespeare, 7, 292; wonderfully impressive at his best, 8, 5; his æsthetical training essentially French, 6; his style gentlemanlike, 6; much of his work was job-work, 7; a successful conjurer with vowels, 8; perfected the English rhymed heroic verse, 9; a well of English undefiled, 50.

compared with Pope, 2, 471; 3, 24, 96, 104, 111; with Burke, 9; 8, 6; with Rubens, 3, 26; with Voltaire, 99; with Wordsworth, 7, 137; with Milton, 8, 5.

on the productions of a poet's later years, 3, 22; on the improvement in poets after forty, 22, 40; on his own tastes, 30 n; on hastiness in writing, 31 n; on his own powers, 34; on skill in English composition, 42, 43; on the influence of women in refining language, 44; on quatrains and rhyme, 49, 51; on blank verse, 51 n; on comets, 54; on suicide, 55 n; on the failure of his *Wild*

Gallant, 62; on the corruption of the Court, 65; on his lack of comic power, 68; on contemporary poetry, 70; on rhyme, 70, 71, 86; on French drama, 76, 77; on the character of the French and English languages, 78; on forgiveness of injuries, 94; on the *Rehearsal*, 94; on good nature, 95; on satire, 95; on translation, 101; on the enrichment of English with foreign words, 103; on sublimity, 110 n; on English literature of the Restoration, 2, 423.
on Boileau, 3, 7; on Milton's rhyme, 19; on Shakespeare, 23, 256; on Polybius, 23 n; on Cowley, 30 n, 39; on Homer, 31 n; on Virgil, 32, 99; on Spenser, 35; 4, 319; on Sylvester's Du Bartas, 3, 35; on Swift, 45 n; on Jonson, 57; on his English, 105 n; on Waller, 70; on Racine's *Bajazet*, 77; on Donne, 89 n; on Oldham, 96; on Burnet, 97; on Chaucer, 99; 2, 186; on Claudian, 3, 100; on Theocritus, 99; on Ovid, 100.
Swift on, 3, 5, 45 n; on his prefaces, 47; Gray on, 16 n, 92; 8, 35; Milton on, 3, 25; Johnson on, 54; Pope on, 92, 108; Congreve on, 97 n; Horne Tooke on, 99; Cowper on, 111; Dennis on, 111; Addison on, 8, 8.
Absalom and Achitophel, character of Zimri, 3, 96; Coleridge on, 98 n; *Albumazar* quoted, 57; *Alexander's Feast*, 106; *All for Love*, 80, 91, 256; his finest play, 7, 292; quoted, 3, 81–91; *Amphitryon* quoted, 60; *Annus Mirabilis*, 33, 47; 8, 22; Pepys's comment on, 3, 47; examined in detail, 53; *Astraea Redux*, 20; *Aurengzebe* quoted, 21, 53, 84, 87; *Cleomenes* quoted, 87; *Commendatory verses* prefixed to the Sacred Epigrams of John Hoddesdon, 18; *Conquest of Granada*, 83; quoted, 37, 83; *On the Death of Lord Hastings*, 17; *Don Sebastian*, Horne Tooke on, 92; quoted, 41, 55 n, 87; *Essay on Dramatic Poesy*, 69; *Evening Love*, 64; *Horace, Ode iii. 29*, 24; quoted, 8, 14; *Indian Emperor* acted at Court, 3, 93 n; quoted, 82; *King Arthur* quoted, 41; *Limberham*, 67; *MacFlecknoe* quoted, 80; *Maiden Queen*, 48 n, 49 n, 63; quoted, 83; *Marriage à la Mode* quoted, 90; *Œdipus* quoted, 40, 90; *Poem to Lord Clarendon* quoted, 21; *Religio Laici*, 8, 8; *Rival Ladies* quoted, 3, 83, 86; *Royal Martyr* quoted, 37, 81; *Sir Martin Marall*, Pepys on, 63; *Spanish Friar*, 61, 63; quoted, 61, 89; *Stanzas on the death of Cromwell*, 19, 27, 28; *Wild Gallant*, 62.
Dual nature of life, 4, 212.
Du Bartas, founder of the cultist school, 2, 415.
Du Bellay quoted, 7, 309.
Ducks. *See under* Birds.
Dudley, Gov. Joseph, 4, 85.
Duel declined by Josiah Quincy, 2, 37.
Duke, Alice, her confession of witchcraft, 3, 146.
Dunbar, William, 4, 228; *Dance of the Seven Deadly Sins*, 225; *Merle and Nightingale* quoted, 224.
Dunbar, battle of, 4, 10.
Dunciad. *See* Pope.
Duns Scotus, 2, 280.
Dunton, John, his journey to New England, 7, 181.
Dutch, European ridicule of, 1, 308; their true quality, 308; their democracy the cause of European dislike, 309.
Dutch captain, X's story of, 1, 143.
Duty, neglected, 6, 381.

Duvergier de Hauranne, 1, 317.
Dwight, Timothy, 2, 118; his *Conquest of Canaan*, 200.
Dyce, Rev. Alexander, 2, 313, 351; 8, 187; his excellent editorial work, 2, 354; cited, 380.
Dyer, John, 4, 12.
Dying, 7, 46; the calmness and repose of, 5, 335. *See also*, Death.
Dynamite in the New Testament, 8, 160.

E. K. *See* Kirke, Edmund.
E Pluribus Unum, 6, 57–90.
Early rising, inconveniences of, 1, 79.
Earnestness, 3, 307.
East winds, 1, 41; 7, 14.
Easter at St. Peter's, Rome, 1, 180, 235.
Eating one's words a wholesome diet in some cases, 6, 327.
Eaton, his account of the dissolution of Parliament in 1655 quoted by Mason, 4, 40.
Ecclesiastes, 4, 288; cynicism of, 2, 84.
Ecclesiasticus, the Man of Leisure due to, 7, 267.
Edda age, the sea-serpent a last relic of, 1, 129.
Edda, Elder, 1, 128; 3, 168.
Editing, Mr. Hazlitt's theory of, 2, 373, 386. *See also*, Emendation.
Editor, the, of a modern newspaper, 8, 159.
Editors, Mätzner on, 2, 355.
Editors of early English literature, necessary qualifications of, 2, 287, 295.
Edmondson, William, 4, 75.
Education, undervalued in America, 1, 77; too often cramps and stunts nature, 106; M., a famous river-driver an example of an educated man, 106; in early New England, 4, 19, 22; 7, 178; effect of teaching by rote, 5, 178; the library a means of self-education, 7, 100; the three R's system, 101; the power of thought its highest result, 108; its importance to the state, 117; the tendency to lay the blame for the pupil's short-comings on the teacher, 182; literature not to be sacrificed to language in teaching, 184; literature and philology both to be cultivated, 185; the office of the higher instruction the training of guides for society, 192; liberal studies always to take the lead, 193; usefulness of variety in study, 194; dangers of the voluntary system, 195; the value of compulsion, 196; is learning naturally repulsive to youth, 197; due to faulty methods of teaching, 197; the study of the classics, 198; advantages of study abroad, 201; a college education no longer prized, 204; free public schools desirable, but not free text-books, 205; necessity of an organic relation between higher and lower schools, 205; the general purpose of colleges to train the faculties for the duties rather than the business of life, 211; courses of study to be adapted to the highest level of intelligence, 212; modern books as implements of, 230; sneered at by practical politicians, 233. *See also*, American schools; French schools; Public schools; Scholarship; Teaching; Universities.
Eels, boys scrambling for at the Fountain of Trevi, Rome, 1, 253.
Eger, Sir, and Sir Grine, passage quoted, 2, 224.
Egg-laying creatures, certain generations compared to, 4, 16.
Egotism, 1, 117; 6, 253; of travellers and reporters, 1, 145; intolerant and intolerable, 5, 274.
Egyptian head-dresses in Italy, 1, 202.

Egyptian magicians, 3, 165.
ELECTION IN NOVEMBER, 1860, 6, 23–53.
Election-days in Boston, 1, 23.
Elective system in college, 7, 195, 213.
Elegancy in poetry, Phillips on, 2, 408.
Elegy, on the Snow brothers, 1, 30; generally dreary to write or read, 8, 84; a wholly adequate one, 84.
Elegies, 3, 27.
Elfrida. *See* Mason, William.
Eliot, C. W., President, his administration, 7, 201.
Elisions in Milton's verse, 5, 300.
Ellsworth, Oliver, on the necessity of coercive power in the government, 6, 180.
Elocution, Emerson's manner, 2, 402.
Eloquence, 4, 30.
Eloquent writing, its secret, 4, 175.
Emancipation forced upon the government by the rebels, 6, 207; the only merciful way of punishing the real authors of the rebellion, 215; a powerful minority opposed to, 243; announced as the one essential for readmission to the Union, 290; gradualism an unsuccessful policy, 290.
Embargo, 2, 36.
Emendation of texts, 3, 240 n.
EMERSON, THE LECTURER, 2, 391–404; his attractiveness does not diminish, 391; Roydon's lines on Sidney applied to, 391, 404; the secret of his popularity his wide range, 392; his system need not be analyzed, 392; essentially a poet, 393; proof of his genius, 393; his diction, 394; his power of stimulation and inspiration, 394; his power the result of character, 395; his perennial youth, 395; his lectures in 1868 characterized, 396; the delight of listening to his first lectures, 397; his audiences described, 398; his awakening power, 399, 137; his reminiscences of the intellectual influences of his own life, 400; the country's debt to him, 401; his masculine fibre, 402, 136, 393; his manner of speaking, 402; his speech at the Burns dinner, 403; his Sphinx, 1, 11; typical, to some extent, of American character, 2, 115; the herald of the decease of Puritanism, 135; and the embodiment of its spirit, 136; his artistic range narrow, 136; the sleeping partner in many reform movements, 136; his oration before the Phi Beta Kappa Society, 137; the tendency of his teaching compared with that of Carlyle, 138; Thoreau one of his disciples, 139; popular respect for, 7, 31; set much store by Landor's works, 8, 53; *also*, 3, 44 n; on winter, 1, 346, 355; on Everett's teaching, 7, 189.
Emmanuel College, the delegate from, at the Harvard anniversary, 7, 215.
Emotion mistaken for conviction, 4, 193.
Empedocles, 1, 71.
Empire, Dante on its relations to the Papacy, 5, 142.
Empyrean, Dante on, 5, 60; Dante compares theology to, 99.
Encyclopædias, 7, 109.
End of the world, Dryden's references to, 3, 60.
Endicott, John, 4, 30; on Hugh Peter and Mrs. Sheffield, 32.
Enduring greatness inconsistent with great contemporary influence, 4, 189.
England, effect of the Reformation on the life of, 4, 253; the development of the "English people," 253, 255; the Civil Wars of the Roses a barren period, 255;

Shakespeare on, 256; Spenser's love of, 318; ignorance of America, 6, 264; the "Old Home" to Americans, 7, 44. *See also*, English constitution; English politics.
under Elizabeth, 3, 216, 218; — under the Commonwealth, references to, in Roger Williams's letters, 4, 37; — in 1653, dissolution of the Rump Parliament described by Haynes, 41; — in 1655, Mason's account of the dissolution of Parliament, 40; — in 1658, Hooke's letter on, 45; — in 1659, Hooke's account of the Protector's death and the affairs of the country, 47; — under Charles II., its debauched morals and urbane manners, 2, 421; a period of materialism and insincerity, 426; contrasted with the previous generation, 427; — coarseness of the age, 3, 45; condition of society, 67; — in 18th century, its coarseness, 7, 69; — in 1861, attitude toward America, 6, 96; recognizes the Southern States as belligerents, 306; — in 1869, relations with America, 1, 330.
English Academy, Dryden hints at, 3, 42.
English artist in Italy, 1, 41
English blood, a blood to be proud of, 7, 42.
English Church, its relation to the Roman Church, 2, 5; Lecky on its attitude toward witchcraft, 3, 188 n; Wordsworth a defender of the Establishment, 5, 188.
English Civil War, Maidstone's summary of, 4, 42.
English climate, Charles II. on, 1, 367.
English constitution, 6, 302; 7, 33; essentially democratic, 12.
English court, Swift on the poor
English spoken at, 3, 44; in 16th century, Spenser's warnings against, 4, 247.
English criticism, 2, 62.
English drama, Lamb's criticism of, 3, 66, 247; Voltaire on, 2, 425; Milton on, 5, 310; Elizabethan, 2, 306, 307, 310.
English dukes, 1, 220.
English glees, 5, 289.
English history belongs to Americans *de jure*, but not *de facto*, 2, 5.
English humor appeals to the whole nation, 2, 10.
English humorists, 4, 99.
English landscapes, their associations, 7, 169.
English language, in America, 1, 313; Chaucer's effect on, 2, 225, 234, 235; in its purity never obsolete, 234; Samuel Daniel's influence on, 238; the Teutonic and Romanic elements in, 289; 3, 227; Yankeeisms in Spenser, 4, 315 n; still a mother tongue in Elizabethan times, 2, 322; French words transplanted into, from 1660–1700, 424; Dryden's and Swift's plans for reforming, 3, 44, 45; introduction of various polysyllables, 44 n; danger of Latinisms in, 104; as a vehicle of poetic thought, 215; its character before and after the time of Shakespeare, 216; in Shakespeare's time, 219–221, 265; its gain from the infusion of Latin, 227; the Latin radicals the more familiar, 229 n; its two periods of poetic beauty, 234; Shakespeare's use of, 235; its debt to Wordsworth, 5, 242; *also*, 7, 274.
Dryden on the knowledge of, 3, 42; on the character of, 78; on the use of Latinisms in English, 103; Orrery on mistakes in conversation, 43 n; Swift on its corruption by the Court of Charles II., 44.

English literature, Anglo-Saxon element in, 2, 209; Norman influence upon, 216; Chaucer its founder, 266; the "classical" of the older critics, 3, 4; Jonson on its decline after Shakespeare, 232; its debt to French literature, 4, 157; Spenser's influence upon, 233, 241; its traditions belong to America also, 7, 59, 81.
of 16th century, not fostered by patronage, 4, 252; the outgrowth of national conditions, 253, 255; effect of the Renaissance on, 254; its view of life, 5, 239; quality of its scholarship, 7, 106; — of the Restoration, French influence upon, 2, 418, 424, 428; ashamed of its former provincialism, 421; Dryden on, 423; — of 18th century, moral greatness impossible but intellectual greatness achieved, 2, 428; Keats's opinion of, 3, 7; — of the early 19th century, 4, 256.
English poetry, the present conditions of, 2, 157; its debt to Latin, 289; provinces of the five great poets, 434; the best is understanding aërated by imagination, 3, 31; its apostolical succession, 5, 298; its three reformers, Wordsworth, Keats, and Byron, 342; Keats's poems a reaction against the barrel-organ style, 346.
of Chaucer's time, 2, 221, 263; its narrative qualities, 222; — of the 15th and 16th centuries, 4, 221; — of 16th century, influence of Italian love poetry upon, 232; the period of the saurians, 236; compared to a shuttlecock, 260; — of the 17th century, Dryden on its improvement in his own time, 3, 70; — of the 18th century, 2, 409; contemporary criticism of, 409; Gray's influence on, 410; general discontent at the time of Pope's death, 413; extent of Pope's responsibility for, 434. *See also*, Pope.
English politics, the system of limited suffrage, 6, 284; low condition of, 308; political development, 7, 33.
English prisoners among the Grecian bandits, 1, 314.
English prose, its debt to Dryden, 3, 42.
English prosody, Chaucer's verse, 2, 235; common misunderstanding of, 237; its treatment of final or medial *e*, 243, 246; irregularities of the early versifiers, 248; in Shakespeare's time, 3, 222; Sidney's and Spenser's experiments, 4, 235; Spenser's mastery of, 264; Alexandrines, 266; the Spenserian stanza, 267 n, 293; Milton's versification, 5, 290; the shift of the accent in pentameter verse, 299; elisions in Milton, 299, 305 n; participles in *-ing* normally of one syllable, 301; verses ending in unaccented syllables, 302; the old metrists careful of elasticity, 303; the question of imperfect verses in the old dramatists, 303.
Coleridge on, 2, 238; Masson on, 5, 299; Spenser on hexameter verse, 4, 235. *See also*, Alexandrines; Blank verse; Couplets.
English race, really cares nothing for art, 1, 41; complexity of character, 2, 212; Norman influence upon, 216; its sympathy with the spiritual provincialism of the Jew, 5, 274; its unity, 7, 59, 81. *See also*, Anglo-Saxons.
English Revolution, reaction of the principles of New England seen in, 4, 6; carried by means of a religious revival, 9.
English spelling, early vagaries of, 2, 356.
English tourists on Lincoln's personal appearance, 6, 236.

English tragedy, 2, 169.
English war with Spain, Williams's references to, in 1656, 4, 38.
Englishmen maintain their own standards in spite of their surroundings, 1, 97; their reasons for visiting Italy, 148; lack of sentiment and imagination, 230; with palm-branches in St. Peter's, 231; prefer St. Paul's to St. Peter's, 234; seldom good travellers, but pleasant travelling companions, 234; sensitive to criticism, 306; shocked at American English, 306; the fine qualities of the first-rate variety, 314, 315; their air of superiority in America caused by finding so many poor imitations of themselves, 314; instances of rudeness in America, 318; the old Tory aversion of former times for America, 320; they discover after the Civil War that Americans have a country, 323; must learn to judge Americans on their own merits, 331; their national feeling, 2, 14; their failure to understand Americans, 174; in foreign galleries, 419; their sensitiveness to ridicule, 420; their reserve described by Barclay, 420; their fondness for foreign fashions, 421; their practical quality, 4, 8; their conservatism, 177; hard for them to understand the impulse of southern races to *pose*, 215; distrust of democratic institutions at the opening of the American Civil War, 6, 223; their solidity of character, 301; have developed government by discussion, 7, 25. *See also*, Anglo-Saxons.
Entertaining, the power of, the first element of contemporary popularity, 2, 56.
Enthusiasm aroused by Emerson's early lectures, 2, 399; of the poet, 3, 11; of the Puritans, 4, 83; material for the orator not for the statesman, 6, 220; not to be warmed over into anything better than cant, 229.
Epic in prose created by Fielding, 7, 74.
Epic poetry, its unreality, 4, 307 n; Wordsworth's determination to compose, 5, 224.
Epigram, French fondness for, 2, 414.
Epimetheus. *See* Longfellow.
Epistolae Obscurorum Virorum, 2, 393.
Epitaphs, 3, 96 n; of Keats, 5, 339; near Boston, 7, 55.
Epithets, of poetasters, 1, 86; of Shakespeare, 2, 255; of Chaucer, 259; in the school of Pope, 417; in Dante, Rivarol on, 5, 53, 56; *also*, 3, 4.
Equal rights in the opinion of the founders of New England, 4, 5.
Equality, in America, 1, 220; Dante on, 5, 147; impossible, 7, 34; the popular belief in regard to, 210; its unobserved but steady growth in the American Colonies, 249; its dangers when suddenly acquired by aliens, 250. *See also*, Democracy.
Erasmus, 2, 134; his Latin style, 4, 97; Scaliger on, 3, 24 n.
Error, apt to be but a transitory lodger, 8, 160.
Esprit, lacking in German literature, 4, 95.
Essays on favorite poets, 7, 121.
"Essays and Reviews," 4, 15.
Este, Villa d', in Tivoli, 1, 158.
Esthwaite, his irresolution, 1, 72.
Esthwaite, England, the simple life of, in Wordsworth's boyhood, 5, 178.
Eternity, J. F.'s favorite topic of conversation, 1, 57.
Eulogy, 7, 49; France its native land, 4, 215.

Euripides, 2, 178, 194; instances of quibbling cited, 3, 274 n; gives hints of sentimentalism, 4, 197; *Hippolytus*, 5, 135.
Europe, of value for its antiquity, 1, 10; its problems all solved, and a dead precipitate left, 14; the first sight of, 136.
European history rich in association, 2, 4.
European literature of the 15th century, 4, 222.
Europeans, their attitude of patronage toward America, 1, 314.
Eurydice confounded with Herodias, 3, 167 n.
Eustace on Italy, 1, 152.
Eustathius of Thessalonica on snow, 1, 358.
Eutychianus, the legend of Theophilus, 3, 134.
Evening, approach of, on the road to Subiaco, 1, 211; its magic touch, 295.
Everett, Edward, 6, 364; his translation of Buttman's Greek grammar, 7, 189; Emerson on the enthusiasm of his teaching, 189. *See also*, Bell and Everett.
Every-dayness of phrase in Dryden, 3, 20.
Evidence, circumstantial and personal, 6, 147.
Evil, a cunning propagandist, 5, 157; in itself but a cheat, 6, 160; by nature aggressive, 215. *See also*, Sin.
Evil institutions, effect on national character, 6, 311.
Ewer, Dr., alchemist, 4, 56.
Exclusiveness of Thoreau, 2, 142.
Excuses for failures easily found, 1, 103.
Execution in literature, Byron's judgment regarding, 2, 454.
Exodus, Dante on its interpretation, 5, 48.
Exorcism stopped by Cardinal Mazarin, 3, 181.
Expedients, justice not to be sacrificed to, 6, 290.
Experience, its results of little value to others, 1, 94; 7, 110; individual, in morals, 5, 160; *also*, 164; 7, 234.
Expression, Dante on, 3, 233.
Exuberance in writing, 5, 345.
Eyes, 1, 337.

F. = President Felton.
Fables, 3, 122; 4, 204.
Fabliaus, 2, 209.
Face, changes of expression on, 1, 37.
Fact and truth in poetry distinguished, 5, 208.
Facts, uncomfortable to the sentimentalist, 4, 194; their significance, 6, 161.
Failure, 2, 70.
Fairs, English, Harvard Commencement likened to, 1, 44.
Fairy tales, 7, 14.
Fairies, 3, 116.
Faith, the stage of astrology and alchemy still persists, 3, 183; Dante's teaching on, 5, 159.
Faith and Work, the bases of the Puritan commonwealth, 4, 87.
Faith in God, 6, 161.
Falstaff, 3, 236; his regiment, 6, 66.
Fame, as worn by Washington Allston, 1, 41; as embalmed in bibliographies, 352; immortality of, 361; distinguished from notoriety, 2, 3; in Europe and America, 8; posthumous, 3, 8; *also*, 5, 6. *See also*, American fame.
Fame, literary, frequently of brief duration, 2, 53; what is required to make it living, 55; 4, 189; importance of imagination, 55, and of art, 57; depends on the sum of an author's powers, 58.
Fanaticism, 7, 136; becomes conservatism when established in power, 4, 9; not truly charac-

teristic of the New England Puritans, 9, 12.
Fancy, the rude treatment received by, on entering Rome, 1, 222; its activity in darkness, 3, 209.
Fancy and judgment compared to a rocket and its stick, 2, 58. *See also*, Imagination.
Fancy balls, English, 1, 234.
Farmer on Shakespeare, 3, 266.
Farr, editor of Wither's poems, absurdity of some of his assertions, 2, 286; inaccuracy of his quotations, 288; his misstatements, 288.
Fashion, its power, 2, 419.
Fastidiousness, 4, 175.
Fate, the Greek conception of, 2, 162; 3, 278; 6, 391; the modern recognition of, 2, 163.
Faults, men judged by little faults, 1, 50; expiated by suffering, 7, 90.
Fauriel, on mediæval romances in Provençal, 2, 203; on prosaic poetry, 3, 79 n.
Faust, the spirit of discontent, 2, 165; cited by Walburger as an instance of bodily deportation, 3, 162; Wierus doubts the story, 162 n; one admirably dramatic scene in, 8, 194; *also*, 1, 129; 3, 138; 5, 159.
Faustrecht, 2, 72.
Fay, Dr. E. A., 7, 333.
Fear makes men cruel, 3, 185.
Federalists, 2, 35.
Felicity, lines on, 2, 49.
Fellowships, university, 7, 202.
Felltham, Owen, 2, 342; 3, 106 n.
Felton, President C. C., his laugh, 1, 30.
Fenians, 6, 388; attitude of Congress toward, 393.
Fenianism, 3, 186.
Ferabras cited, 2, 361.
Ferrex and Porrex. *See* Sackville.
Fessenden, Senator, 7, 242.
Feudalism, effect on commerce, 1, 324.
Feuillet, Octave, Sainte-Beuve's nickname for, 7, 71.
Fickleness not fairly to be charged to democracy, 2, 47.
Fiction, the realistic novel invented by Fielding, 7, 74; the novel before Fielding, 74; the reading of, profitable, 114; Cervantes the father of the modern novel, 163; historical fiction, 6, 153. *See also*, French fiction.
Fidelity, characteristic of Prof. Popkin, 1, 60.
Field, Nathaniel, letter by, 8, 294.
Fielding, Henry, Address on unveiling his bust, Sept. 4, 1883, 7, 59–77; his absolute sincerity, 63; his imagination of secondary order, 63; has no tragic power but much pathos, 64; his characters real, but not typical, 64, 74; a humorist, 64; quality of his coarseness, 65; opinions of English literary men on him, 66; Dobson's life of, 66; the few facts of his life, 66; habits of study and industry, 67; his early dramatic pieces show little real knowledge of life, 67; his nature coarse and sensual, but with admiration for the best things of his time, 68; the coarseness of his age, 69; his bluntness of speech more wholesome than the refinement of some modern critics, 69; painted vice as a figure in the social landscape, 70; his purpose moral, 70; acknowledged in his epitaph in Lisbon, 70; his contempt for sentimentality, 71; mistaken estimate of refinement, 71; opinion of Richardson, 71; his love of truth, 71; his force and directness, 72; compared with Hogarth, 72; his work marks an epoch, 73; invented the realistic novel, 74; his Squire Western and Parson Adams, 75, 163; 2, 352; the beauty of his style, 7, 75;

compared with Swift, 76; his character, 76; Cervantes' influence upon, 164; his remarks on travellers, 1, 144; his humor reappears in Carlyle, 2, 65; his humor, 308; *also*, 2, 135, 218, 267; 3, 279; 4, 153.
Thackeray on, 7, 72; Byron on, 73.
Fiesole, 5, 3.
Fifth Monarchy men, 2, 133; 4, 12, 37.
Fighting period of life, 2, 131.
Figures can be made to fight on both sides, 7, 262. *See also*, Statistics.
Figures of speech and figures of statistics, 6, 72.
Filelfo, 5, 31.
Fillmore, Millard, President, 6, 359, 364.
Finance, value of an M. C.'s observations on, 1, 265; generally prudent management of, in towns, 7, 7.
Fine Arts. *See* Art.
Finsbury Circus, 5, 317.
Firdusi, 4, 227; poetry of the Trouvères compared to, 2, 205.
Fire, in a wongen after moose-hunting, 1, 112; at the Sibilla in Tivoli, 172; pleasure of playing with, 238; Virgil's and Ovid's lines on kindling, 372.
Fire on the hearth described, 1, 10; its pleasures in winter, 354.
Fireside voyages, 1, 13.
Fireworks, damp, X's laughter compared to, 1, 141.
Fischer, Peter, statuettes of the twelve apostles, 7, 321.
Fisher, Cardinal, 4, 27.
Fishes' nests in trees, incongruities of life compared to, 1, 51.
Fishing in the Maine woods, 1, 116.
Fisk, James, 5, 72.
FitzGerald, Edward, 2, 320; 7, 86, 316; his masterly translations, 8, 275; on *Don Quixote*, 7, 163.
Flail-beat, 1, 219.
Flame, Washington Allston's face compared to pale flame, 1, 37.
Flaxman, 2, 161.
Fleas, humorous confidences on the subject, 1, 153.
Fleming, Marjorie, her difficulties with the multiplication table, 7, 197.
Fletcher, Giles, 2, 194, 307; 3, 217; 4, 160; his *Purple Island*, 257 n.
Fletcher, John, compared with Shakespeare, 7, 290; *Faithful Shepherdess* quoted, 291 n. *See also*, Beaumont and Fletcher.
Fletcher, Phineas, *Piscatory Eclogues*, 4, 261.
Flint, the age of, possibly before us, 8, 314.
Flip, Porter's, 1, 52.
Flodden Ffeild cited, 2, 379.
Flogging, 2, 292; as a means of education, 33; 7, 197; mnemonic virtue of, 3, 3.
Florence, 1, 224; better liked than Rome, 250; the statues of the Uffizj, 2, 13; its early history, 5, 3; its great men, 4; the Campanile, 4; its political factions in Dante's time, 12, 15; history of, from 1293, 14; the Neri and Bianchi in 1300, 17; its tardy appreciation of Dante, 29; a cenotaph of Dante erected in 1829, 30.
Florida, her proposal to secede absurd, 6, 61.
Floud, Rachel, first wife of Izaak Walton, 8, 81.
Flowers, Keats's enjoyment of, 5, 340.
Floyd, J. B., 6, 99, 105.
Flunkeyism, ideal, of Carlyle, 2, 85.
Flying fish, 1, 124.
Flying horses, children's pleasure on, 1, 45.

Foibles, human, as treated by Shakespeare, 1, 308.
Folk-lore, 3, 116.
Force, brute, Carlyle's belief in, 2, 98.
Force in writing, the secret of, 3, 230.
Ford, John, his plays chiefly remarkable for sentimentality, 8, 311; a master of the trick of falsification, 311; his diction hackneyed, 312; compared with Shakespeare, 312.
Foreigners, On a Certain Condescension in, 1, 293–332; consider that they confer a favor on the country they visit, 298; a German beggar's opinions of America, 303; consider Americans too sensitive to criticism, 307.
Forest of Arden, 1, 116.
Forest primæval, as seen from a mountain-top, 1, 116.
Forgiveness, Dryden's lines on, 3, 85, 94.
Forks brought from Italy by Tom Coryate, 1, 151, 235.
Form, its proper function, 2, 175, 177; in literature, 7, 317, 320; dramatic, 8, 228, 229. *See also*, Style.
Formalism of the later Puritanism, 4, 85.
Forster, Georg, on Ramler, 4, 134 n.
Forsyth on Italy, 1, 151.
Fortescue, General, letter to, from Cromwell (1655), 4, 42.
Fortune, herself the sport of Fate, verses on, 1, 187; lines on, 2, 49.
Fortune, Temple of, at Palestrina, 1, 186.
Fortune-hunters, a way of getting rid of, suggested, 3, 177.
Forum, Roman. *See* Rome — Forum.
Foscolo, Ugo, on Dante, 5, 22; on the condemnation of part of the *Divina Commedia* by the Inquisition, 32; on the date of the *Divina Commedia*, 47; on Dante's critics, 56; on likeness of Milton to Dante, 64; *also*, 162 n.
Fossil footprints, 1, 361.
Foster, John, the hermit of Cambridge, 1, 56.
Fountains Abbey, 1, 50; the dreary white statues, 252.
Fouqué, his *Undine*, 2, 442.
Fourth of July celebrations, 1, 238.
Fowls, 1, 219; at the inn in Palestrina, 189.
Fox, Charles J., compared with Daniel Webster, 2, 7; opinion of Dryden's translation of Horace, 3, 24 n; letter to Wordsworth, 5, 204.
Fox, George, 2, 132; one of his books sent to J. Winthrop, Jr., 4, 74, 75.
France, the suffrage in, 6, 373; the causes of the Revolution, 7, 13; a manufacturer of small politicians to-day, 253.
in 1792, 5, 185; — in 1815, wise reconstructive measures, 6, 391; — in 1861, recognizes the Southern States as belligerents, 306.
Francesca, Dante's tenderness towards, 5, 64.
Francia, Dr., Carlyle on, 2, 73.
Francion, 7, 74.
Francis, St., 7, 145.
Franconia Notch, talk with a man at a saw-mill, 1, 73.
Frangipani, ancestors of Dante, 5, 8.
Franklin, Benjamin, 2, 118, 266.
Frascati, the railroad to, 1, 179.
Fraser, the Scotch gardener in Cambridge, 1, 28.
Fraunce, Abraham, a passage of Milton traced to, 2, 351.
Frederick the Great, his portrait in the Cambridge barber-shop, 1, 25; his treatment of Carlyle imagined, 2, 72; his kingdom, his private patrimony, 91; his contempt

for German literature, 92; the narrow limits of his nature, 92; his popularity, 93; few people attached to him, 93; Knebel's judgment of him, 94; his inherited traits, 94; had no genius but a masterly talent for organization, 95; his contempt for all civil distinction, 95; refuses to appoint Lessing librarian, 4, 140; his preference for French literature, 156.
Free lectures and entertainments, 1, 335.
Free schools, 7, 205.
Free trade, its slow growth in England, 7, 226; in America, 247.
Freedmen, will require special protection, 6, 273; must be made landholders, 279, and voters, 279; their inherent right to suffrage in a democracy, 282; the proposition to settle them by themselves in a separate district, 283; the nation's duty toward, 380, 395; the effect of Johnson's policy upon, 391; compared to the new holders of land in France, 392.
Freedom, Barbour's lines on, 4, 226; Wordsworth's consistent devotion to, 7, 124. *See also*, Liberty.
Freedom of thought, its debt to Voltaire, 4, 209.
Freedom of the will, the cornerstone of Dante's system, 5, 141, 148.
French, Jonathan, minister at Andover, 2, 32.
French Academy encourages the eulogistic style, 4, 215.
French and Italian models, influence of, on early English writers, 7, 313, 314.
French army in Rome, 1, 11.
French cooks, the secret of their art applicable to good writing, 3, 30.
French criticism, 4, 95; its defect, 2, 416; confounds the common with the vulgar, 429.
French drama, effect of the demands of rhyme upon its style, 3, 74; Dryden on, 75, 76; Goethe's study of, 79.
French fiction, of the *corps-de-ballet* variety, 3, 69.
French humor, appeals to the whole nation, 2, 10.
French language, spoken by English tourists and Italian guides, 1, 232; Dryden on its character, 3, 78; unsuited for translating Dante, 5, 34.
French literature, the school of the *cultists*, 2, 415; its quality, 428; its quality of style, 4, 95; its influence on German, and on all modern literature, 157; at one time both grave and profound, 280 n; in the 16th and 17th centuries, 253 n.
French officers in the Revolutionary War, 1, 316.
French poetry, Norman influence upon, 2, 209; rules of pronunciation, 243; Gray on, 3, 79 n; Fauriel on, 79 n; Dante familiar with, 5, 112 n. *See also*, Trouvères.
of 18th century, its style overran Europe, 2, 414; Voltaire's difficulties with, 414.
French politics benumbed by a creeping paralysis, 7, 242.
French prosody, the treatment of final and medial *e*, 2, 243, 246.
French realists, delight in impurity, 7, 69.
French Revolution, Burke's fury against, 4, 175; its symptoms seen in Rousseau's writings, 208; failure of its attempt to make over human nature, 209; prefigured by the giant of Spenser, 318; its political lessons, 6, 229; Napoleon on, 7, 32; Wordsworth's view of, 125; tried to

reform society after the fashion of Don Quixote, 151; *also*, 5, 187; 6, 269.
French Revolutionists aped the Roman republic, 2, 21.
French romance, its long-windedness, 2, 222.
French schools, the teaching in, 7, 203.
French soldiers in Rome, 1, 223.
French standards, English judgment of, 4, 214.
French tragedy, 2, 169; 3, 277.
Frenchmen, their reasons for visiting Italy, 1, 148; American feeling toward, 149; sensitive to criticism, 306; their contempt for Americans, 315; on America, 317; delight in elegantly turned phrases, 2, 414; quality of their intellect, 428; morals said to have been corrupted by America, 7, 8.
Fresh Pond meadows, 1, 296.
Friendship, 4, 200.
Frittata for supper at Subiaco, 1, 215.
Frobisher, Sir Martin, 2, 23.
Froissart, 2, 187; description of a book, 237 n; treatment of final *e*, 247; his *Chronicles*, 6, 150.
Frost, his exquisite handiwork, 1, 369.
Froude on Henry VIII., 6, 153.
Fugitive Slave Law, 6, 364; for runaway states, 68.
Fuller, Thomas, 2, 311; on self-examination, 5; gives an example of retributive justice, 6, 158.
Fulton, 2, 118.
Funerals, 1, 335; the fiend's suggestion at, 3, 180.
Furies *v.* Orestes, before the Areopagus, 3, 177 n.
Furnivall, F. J., founder of the Chaucer Society, 2, 190.
Fuseli, 1, 204; 4, 280 n.
Future life, its necessity recognized by the gentile world, 6, 157.
Gaelic not understood by the spirits, 3, 175.
Gaetani, 1, 156.
Galileo, 3, 232; 6, 17.
Gallatin, Albert, instructor in French at Harvard College, 7, 306.
Gallo-Roman culture, 2, 199.
Gambetta, 7, 253.
Gammer Gurton's Needle, 4, 261; 8, 172.
Gano, 1, 301.
Garden Acquaintance, My, 1, 259–290.
Gardens, Italian, 1, 252.
Gardner, Captain Joseph, 4, 66.
Garfield, J. A., President, address on the death of, London, Sept. 24, 1881, 7, 41; the English expressions of sympathy on occasion of his death, 41, 44; the death-scene unexampled, 45; his good nature, 46; his death truly for his country, 46; his character, 47; completeness of his life, 48; endeared to all men, 48; prayers for his recovery offered in Palestine, 49; his great qualities, 49.
Garfield, Mrs., her devotedness, 7, 43.
Garibaldi, his career in Sicily watched with interest, 6, 23.
Garinet quoted, 3, 200.
Garrick, anecdote of his counterfeiting drunkenness, 2, 82; in *Hamlet*, 3, 292; omitted the gravediggers' scene, 296.
Garrow, translation of the *Vita Nuova*, 5, 39.
Garth, Dr., suggests the addition of the sylphs to the *Rape of the Lock*, 2, 442.
Gascoigne, 2, 245; 4, 231; quoted, 2, 382.
Gatehurst, house of Sir K. Digby, 4, 66.
Gawayne cited, 2, 364.
Geese. *See under* Birds.
Gellert, 4, 155; Mozart on, 2, 178.

Genealogies made to order, 1, 353.
General, sympathy with, in defeat, 6, 115; idealized by his country, 116.
Generalities, 7, 219.
Generosity of American rich men, 7, 115.
Genezzano, visit to, 1, 194–202.
Geniality, 1, 53.
Genius compared with talent, 1, 49; 4, 182; the meaning of the word, 1, 53; neglect by the World not a proof of, 2, 111; does not discover itself, 125; the test of, 185; allowed to repeat itself, 395; the two kinds of, 437; Johnson's theory of, 3, 61.
genius and character, 4, 101; never an impostor, 182, 186; its mastery, 183; the world not ungrateful to, 184; alone exempt from examination of character, 201; Browning on, 7, 62; its creative office in literature, 62; never finds life commonplace, 62; *also*, 2, 258; 3, 288; 4, 122.
of Washington Allston, 1, 41; of President Kirkland, 49; absent in Frederick the Great, 2, 95; of Wordsworth, 112; of Lessing, 4, 161; of Shakespeare, 186; recognized in Keats, 5, 342; of Coleridge, 7, 91.
Gentility, Pope's notion of, 3, 108 n.
Gentlemen, the men specially created to be such, 1, 36; proof in Emerson that Democracy can develop them, 2, 138; drawn by Shakespeare, 3, 318; the end of education to produce true gentlemen, 7, 212.
Geographies formerly works of fancy and imagination, 1, 133.
Geology, influence of its discoveries on human annals, 7, 168; the gigantic runes of, 8, 144.
George III. and his violin teacher, anecdote of, 5, 316; the *Gratulatio* presented to, by Harvard College, 7, 183.
George, Henry, 7, 34.
George Barnwell, a tragedy. *See* Lillo.
German criticism, 4, 95; its burrowing propensities, 92; inclined to over-subtlety, 7, 149.
German humor, 4, 94, 99.
German language, its reaction on style, 4, 93; singular effect of learning, 7, 311.
German learning, supplies lanterns but not the light, 4, 94; like the elephants of Pyrrhus, 96; the world's debt to, 96; its dangers, 7, 184.
German literature, Carlyle's relation to the "storm and thrust" period, 2, 72; Frederick the Great's contempt for, 92; its want of *esprit*, 4, 95; cause of its lack of style, 96; its seeking after some foreign mould, 97; its sentiment, 98; Lessing the first to have a conception of style, 102; value of Lessing's influence upon, 166.
of the 18th century, a pretentious sham, 4, 154; its pedantry and provincialism, 156; its relation to French, 157.
German Muse, 4, 115.
German poetry, the romantic movement, 2, 178.
Germans, their reasons for visiting Italy, 1, 148; sensitive to criticism, 306; their contempt for America, 315; their idea of humor, 2, 67; their fondness for mare's-nests, 4, 92; supply raw materials for other minds to work upon, 94; their want of tact, 97; their national stoicism, 164.
Germany, love of country impossible in, in the 18th century, 4, 137; the political condition of the United States before the war compared to, 6, 386.

Gervinus, on Shakespeare, 3, 291; 4, 93; on Wolfram von Eschenbach's Parzival, 5, 133.
Gessler's hat, 4, 154.
Gesta Romanorum, 4, 184.
Gesticulating students, 1, 18.
Gettysburg, 1, 297.
Gevaudan, the wild beast of, 3, 171.
Ghiberti, 5, 4.
Ghosts. *See* Apparitions; Haunted houses.
Giant, Canadian, at Commencement, 1, 45.
Gibbon, 4, 179.
Gifford, William, 5, 328; the best editor of early literature, 2, 354; abuse of Keats in the *Quarterly*, 5, 324.
Gift of tongues, its spread among the transcendentalists, 1, 133.
Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, 2, 23.
Gil Blas. *See* LeSage.
Gilchrist, his controversy with Bowles, 2, 468.
Gill, Alexander, 5, 9.
Giotto, 5, 4; Dante his friend, 11.
Giraldi, 2, 267.
Glacier, encroachments of slavery compared to, 6, 53.
Gladiators, 6, 156.
Gladstone, W. E., 7, 253.
Glanvil, Joseph, accounts of witchcraft, 3, 144; on the alleged transportation of witches, 162; believed in witchcraft, 188; his *Sadducismus Triumphatus*, 4, 14.
Glass model of a ship in the Cambridge barber's shop, 1, 25.
Glaucus, 2, 55.
Glees, 5, 289.
Gleim, Johann Wilhelm Ludwig, 4, 131, 133; Lessing's advice to, 137.
Gliddon, 6, 270.
Glory, departed, its ghost lingers, 1, 225. *See also*, Fame.
God, the Emperor of Heaven in Dante's idea, 5, 145 n; Dante's vision of, 162; the methods of the divine justice, 6, 158. *See also*, Providence.
Godeau, on snow, 1, 358.
Goethe, the imaginative quality in his works uniform, 2, 62; his influence on Carlyle, 62; his comedies dull, 110; his struggle to emancipate himself from Germany, 115; Carlyle and Emerson both disciples of, 138; a European poet, 158; Schiller's verses to, quoted, 161; uncontemporaneous nature, 3, 10; essentially an observer, and incapable of partisanship, 216; got his knowledge of classics second hand, 266; attracted to alchemy, 4, 55; lack of coherence in his longer works, 97; early notes to Frau von Stein, 98; in *Werthermontirung*, 99; grandness of his figure, 102; sacrificed morality to poetic sense, 128; his visit to Gottsched, 154; takes pleasure in his hypothetical despair, 195; paid slight attention to Dante, 5, 34; early love of Gothic, 137; possibly influenced Wordsworth, 203; compared with Wordsworth, 240; his teaching of self-culture, 7, 125; *Faust* and *Iphigenie* contrasted, 318; lacking in dramatic power, 8, 194; *also*, 2, 44, 134, 195, 256, 400; 3, 242; 4, 105, 119, 142 n; 5, 53, 249.
on the failure to escape one's own shadow, 1, 145; on Italy, 151; on snow in sunshine, 349; on the German idea of humor, 2, 67; on the office of the Muse, 88; on Milton's *Samson Agonistes*, 171; on thinking pen in hand, 3, 35; on the French drama, 79; on the distinction between the ancient and modern drama, 278; on Shakespeare, 285, 289; compares a poem to a painted window, 289; on destructive and productive criticism, 290; on

Hamlet, 312; on Lessing as a genius, 4, 168; on Shakespeare, 7, 297; on the study of the ancients, 326.
Achilleis, 2, 167; 3, 267; *Faust*, written without thought of its deeper meaning, 316; the second part, 2, 178; 4, 97; 5, 34; *Götz von Berlichingen*, 3, 285; *Harzreise im Winter*, 1, 349; *Hermann und Dorothea*, 2, 167; 3, 266; *Iphigenie*, 2, 171; *Roman Idylls*, 167; *Ueber allen Gipfeln*, 5, 191; *Werther*, 4, 194; *Wilhelm Meister*, 97.
Wordsworth on, 5, 203.
Götz of the Iron Hand, Carlyle's type of the highest, 2, 72.
Goffe, Colonel, of Deerfield, 2, 26; Prof. P. compared to, 1, 59.
Gold of the poet, 2, 54.
Golden age, behind every generation, 2, 77.
Gold-fish in a vase compared to self-absorbed travellers, 1, 10.
Goldsmith, his figure of the 'lengthening chain,' 3, 49 n; his description of a mutual admiration society, 4, 135; Wordsworth familiar with, 5, 180 n, 181; his influence on Wordsworth, 190, 191; his admirable style, 7, 320; on Gray, 8, 38, 39; *also*, 2, 258, 267.
Deserted Village, 2, 174; 5, 191; *Traveller*, 191; *Vicar of Wakefield*, 2, 83; 4, 97.
Golias, Bishop, 1, 50; 7, 182; his motto appropriate for Americans, 1, 234.
Gongora, poet of the cultist school, 2, 416.
Gonzales, Manuel, on servants in London, 4, 53.
Good, in itself infinitely and eternally lovely, 6, 160; its conquests silent and beneficent, 215; the, in men, is immortal, 8, 256.
Good luck, 5, 215.
Good nature, 7, 46; Dryden on, 3, 95; fostered by a democracy, 7, 116.
Good society, 1, 307; Dante's notions of, 5, 69, to be found more easily in books than in the world, 7, 102.
Good taste the conscience of the mind, 7, 213; an acquisition as well as a gift, 8, 191; a powerful factor of civilization, 202.
Goodliness of the world, 1, 295.
Goose, Mother. *See* Mother Goose, 2, 237.
Gorboduc. *See* Sackville.
Gosling, Lady, her obituary, 4, 155.
Gothic cathedral, impressiveness and nobleness of, 1, 242; unmatched in ancient art, 249; the visible symbol of an inward faith, 5, 137; compared to the *Divine Comedy*, 139.
Gothic, lack of agreement with the Roman, 1, 227.
Gottsched, Lessing on, 4, 106; Goethe's visit to, 154; his *Art of Poetry*, 155; his service to German literature, 155.
Gout, 7, 10.
Government, Dante on, 5, 147; Machiavelli on the duration of, 6, 44; the absurdity of the *laissez-faire* system shown by Buchanan, 59, 69; stability the first requisite of, 81; extent of dominion an advantage, 81; bound to enforce its laws, 90; an oligarchy built *on* men and a commonwealth built *of* them, 109; the resources of prestige and sentiment greater for an hereditary ruler, 227; self-defence its first duty, 228; that which makes a nation great in every fibre to be preferred to that which produces great men, 264; the Anglo-Saxon mind prefers a practical system, the French a theoretical,

268 ; in the Old World and in the New, 308 ; resides in the rights of all, 373 ; the duties distinguished from the rights of self-government, 373 ; the failings of all forms of, 7, 25 ; government by discussion and by a majority of voices, 25 ; men of ability sure to govern in the end, 28 ; the name of the system unimportant, 32 ; unwritten constitutions, 33 ; the true function of, 8, 161. *See also*, Politics ; Statesmanship.

Governor of Massachusetts, his appearance on artillery-election days, 1, 20.

Gower, Chaucer on, 2, 218 ; his dulness, 226 ; his use of rhyme, 227, 234 ; *also*, 245.

Grace at the Harvard Commencement dinners, 1, 48.

Graduate, oldest surviving, his advantages, 1, 48.

Grafty, Mrs., of Craven St., Finsbury, her recollections of Keats, 5, 320 n.

Grahame, on winter, 1, 354.

Grandier, Urbain, witnesses at his trial, 3, 175 ; the object of a conspiracy, 181.

Grandiloquent style, by whom used, 4, 73.

Grangier, first French translation of Dante, 5, 32.

Grant, General, Lincoln's remark in relation to, 3, 64 n.

Grant, James, his *Newspaper Press* cited, 8, 132.

Granuffo in Marston's *Fawn*, 2, 295, 302.

Gratis-instinct in human nature, 1, 337.

Gray, Thomas, 8, 3–50 ; a rare combination of genius and dilettantism, 17 ; an artist in words and phrases, 17, 37 ; birth and education, 17, 18 ; his quarrel with Horace Walpole, 18 ; a conscientious traveller, 19 ; a tint of effeminacy in his nature, 19 ; his imagination passive, 20 ; letters quoted, 23, 24, 30–37, 40 ; at Cambridge, 24 ; his flowering period, 25 ; his natural indolence, 28 ; his melancholy, 29 ; his minute care in matters of expression, 36 ; the charm of his *Elegy*, 38 ; influenced by Pindar, 39 ; underrated by Johnson and Wordsworth, 41–46 ; helped himself from everybody, 45, 46 ; but the result is always his own, 46 ; stanza omitted from the *Elegy*, 47 ; wrote less and pleased more than any other English poet, 50 ; a teacher of the art of writing, 50 ; his use of vowel sounds, 230 ; his art, 2, 57 ; fondness for Latin poems, 167 ; inspired by Collins, 410 ; Wordsworth's debt to, 411 n ; 5, 181 ; his taste, 2, 411 n ; Spenser's influence upon, 4, 320 ; occasional touch of coarseness, 7, 69 ; *also*, 1, 351 ; 2, 109, 266 ; 7, 131. on Dyer, 2, 411 n ; on Dryden, 3, 16 n, 92 ; on French poetry, 79 n ; on first thoughts, 225 n ; on the condition of the English colleges, 7, 182. Bonstetten on, 8, 20 ; Dr. Johnson on, 24, 41, 42 ; Sainte-Beuve on, 27 ; Cowper on, 30, 46 ; Wordsworth on, 42–46 ; Sir James Mackintosh on, 44. *Progress of Poesy*, 2, 410 ; — *Sonnet on the Death of West*, 411 n ; quoted, 8, 42.

Grazzini, 2, 267.

Great deeds, the ghosts of, haunt their graves, 1, 225.

Great men, seldom discovered in their own lifetime, 1, 38 ; 4, 38 ; the result of combining every one's reminiscences of, considered, 1, 39 ; Boswell's predilection for, 148 ; in America, 2, 13 ; characteristics of, 3, 13 ;

the valet de chambre estimate of, 4, 201; their parentage and early surroundings, 5, 182; stories of their childhood, 320 n; their production the glory but not the duty of a country, 6, 264; 7, 254; their effect on history, 110; the importance of, 254; *also*, 2, 13; 7, 49.

Great Public Character, A [Josiah Quincy], 2, 3–49.

Greatness, seems a simple thing to itself, 2, 125.

Greek architecture, sameness of effect in public buildings, 1, 249; its completeness, 5, 136.

Greek art, 2, 258.

Greek drama, its conventional forms not applicable to modern drama, 2, 169; the modern opera and oratorio compared to, 170, 171; *Samson Agonistes*, its best modern reproduction, 171; objections to servile copying of its form and style, 175; difficulty of regaining the Greek point of view, 175; the three stages of Greek tragedy, 178; its simplicity in form, not in expression, 3, 258; parallel passages noted in Shakespeare, 270; contrasted with the modern in its motive, 278; its personages types, not individuals, 279; keeps its hold on men's minds, 287; its simplicity, 5, 134; its relation to the higher powers, 135; its completeness, 136.

Greek gods in Greek literature, 5, 135.

Greek ideal, the striving after, 2, 161.

Greek language, the study of, 7, 198; its flexibility and precision, 199.

Greek literature, Cicero's twaddle about, 1, 121; the best attitude toward it, 2, 165; its relation to modern literature, 165–178; probable truth of modern imitations, 174; in what respects it should be followed, 177; its quality, 3, 250; misfortune of applying it to drill in grammar, 251; still furnishes the standards for modern work, 252; Prof. Popkin's appreciation of, 7, 183; its living quality, 199; value of the study of, 200. *See also*, Classics.

Greek sculpture, 5, 4.

Greek thought contrasted with modern thought, 2, 175.

Greeks, their artistic nature, how to gain a true conception of, 1, 9.

Greeley, Horace, his intimate knowledge of our politics, 6, 170; his *The American Conflict* contrasted with Pollard's *Southern History*, 163; its style, 170; its fairness, 170.

Green, Christian, witch, 3, 146.

Greene, Robert, 8, 187.

Greenough, the sculptor, 7, 182.

Greenville, Maine, reached late at night, 1, 83.

Greenwood's museum in Boston, 1, 24.

Gregariousness of men, 3, 198.

Gridiron, its use unknown in northern Maine, 1, 79.

Grief idealized, 2, 31; expressed in elegies, 3, 27; desiring other company than its own, 4, 192.

Grimes, Senator, 7, 242.

Grimm, Baron, anecdote of Garrick and Préville counterfeiting drunkenness, 2, 82; his style in French, 4, 97; on Lessing's Fables, 131; story of the Parisian showman, 6, 31.

Grimm, Jacob, on the mandrake's groan, 2, 304; on the survival of heathen divinities, 3, 131; on the raven, 155; on the use of broomsticks by witches, 164; his opinion of the English language, 8, 201.

Groceries in Cambridge, 1, 26.

Grouse cooked before the fire, 1, 100.
Growing-pains, 7, 14.
Groyne, The, or Coruña, 1, 29.
Guarini, Jonson on, 4, 263 n.
Guelfs and Ghibellines in Italy in 13th century, 5, 15.
Guest, Edwin, verse-deaf, 2, 246.
Guides in Italy, 1, 160; their office deadly to sentiment, 168; demands for more payment, 207; delightful absence of, in an American town, 218.
Guido's Hours, Spenser's verses compared to, 4, 272.
Guido Novello da Polenta, 5, 22, 24.
Guinicelli, Guido, 5, 131 n.
Guizot, on the measure of endurance of the United States, 7, 252.
Gunpowder, 3, 129.
Gurowski, Count, on absence of singing-birds in America, 1, 281.
Guy-Fawkes procession succeeded by the Cornwallis, 1, 42.
Guyot, 1, 316.
Gymnasium, 1, 219.

Habakkuk cited as an instance of corporeal deportation, 3, 161.
Haddock, James, apparition of, 3, 126.
Hadrian, his villa in Tivoli, 1, 162; why he took three days to reach it from Rome, 182.
Hagerdorn, 2, 110; Lessing's regard for, 4, 156.
Hailes, Lord, on Dunbar's *Dance of the Seven Deadly Sins*, 4, 225.
Hair, Washington Allston's, 1, 37.
Hair-cutting in the Cambridge barber's shop, 1, 24.
Hakluyt's Voyages, the language of, 3, 220; 5, 284.
Hale, E. E., on orioles' nests, 1, 279.
Hales, Mr., on the date of Spenser's birth, 4, 243 n.
Hall, Bishop, Milton's quotation of lines from, 5, 286; his *Satires*, 286 n; quoted, 7, 313.
Hallam on Oldham, 3, 96.
Halliwell, J. O., editor of Marston's works, his poor English, 2, 290; his vague notions of Latin, 292; his bad editing, 292; his emendations and explanations, 301.
Halpine, Major C. G., on Spenser's Rosalinde and on his wife, 4, 244 n.
Halpine, Rev. N. J., his *Oberon*, 4, 244 n.
Hamlet, dallies with suicide, 2, 126; on ghosts, 3, 130; a fat, inconceivable, 8, 171. *See also*, Shakespeare.
Hammond, Mr., proclaims the accession of King Cotton, 6, 28.
Hamon's picture of wise men before a Punch's theatre, 2, 83.
Hancock, Gov., 1, 28; J. Quincy's account of a dinner by, 2, 28.
Hard-headed people, 7, 114.
Hares, Dr. Kitchener's dictum on, 4, 205.
Harney, General, 6, 76.
Harrington, Sir John, on poetry, 5, 235.
Harrison, General G., 4, 37.
Hartington, Marquis of, at a public ball in New York, 1, 318; presented to President Lincoln, 318 n.
Harvard, John, his bequest the nucleus of Harvard College, 7, 100; *also*, 172.
Harvard College, uniform of the scholars, 1, 18; Massachusetts Hall occupied by Burgoyne's soldiers, 18; the Latin oration, 18; "parts" for Exhibition or Commencement rehearsed in the Gravel-pit, 18; the impressiveness of the President and Governor, 20; the wood fires of former days, 32; the Triennial Catalogue, 47; President Kirkland, 49; functions of the Presi-

dent in old times, 50; the college fire-engine, 55; the Med. Facs., 54; fight between the students and the soldiers on training-day, 59; its influence on Boston, 4, 23; the education given in the last century, 33; President Quincy, 40; Quincy's History of, 43; books presented by Sir K. Digby, 66.

Harvard College: address on the 250th anniversary, Nov. 8, 1886, 7, 167–215; the character and purpose of its founders, 170, 174, 178, 213; the feelings of her sons in returning to their Alma Mater, 171; the straitness of its early means, 171; the founders commemorated in the words of the Preacher, 172; the significance of the anniversary, 173; the founding of the College secured the intellectual independence of New England, 174; the circumstances of its foundation, 174; the influence and character of the clergy, 175; the training of Indian youth one object, 179; the professors underpaid and overworked, 181; condition of the college in 17th and 18th centuries, 181; the students safe from any contagion of learning at some former periods, 182; the *Gratulatio* and the Whitfield controversy as indications of the state of learning, 183; the chief service of the College to hand down the tradition of Learning, 183; letters not neglected for mere scholarship, 183; influence of the College on the character of New England, 185, 203; the new learning from Germany early welcomed here, 188; the conditions of American life not then favorable for the larger university life, 189; the recent expansion of the College toward filling University functions, 190, 201; the mottoes of the College, 190; the functions of a university and the aims of teaching, 191, 209, 211; the teaching of the Humanities to remain predominant, 193, 212; the elective or voluntary system, 194, 213; danger of pushing it too far in the present transitional condition of the College, 195; the administration of President Eliot, 201; advanced courses to be pushed on into the post-graduate period, 202; fellowships desirable foundations, 202; influence of the College on preparatory schools, 206; its duty to produce cultivated men, 206, 209, 212; its general purpose to train the faculties for the duties rather than the business of life, 211; welcome to the guests present, 214.

Commencement, the great Puritan holiday, 1, 18; 7, 186; Lewis, the brewer's handcart, 1, 23; the two town constables at the meeting-house door, 27; respect paid the governor, 28; its sights and pleasures described, 44; old graduates at, 47.

Harvard, the sloop, 1, 32.

Harvard Washington Corps, President Kirkland's remark to, 1, 53; its vagaries, 54.

Harvey, Gabriel, 5, 16, 45; introduced hexameters, 4, 235; Nash on his hexameters, 236 n; his self-absorption, 243 n; the finer passages in his prose, 244 n.

Harvillier, Jeanne, her trial for witchcraft, 3, 191.

Hastiness in writing, 3, 31 n.

Hastings, Lord, Dryden's verses on the death of, 3, 17.

Hatem Tai's tent, 1, 298.

Hathaway tried for witchcraft, 4, 8.

Hats, Prof. P.'s collection, 1, 60; bandit hats, 210.

Haunted houses, Pliny's story of, 3, 127. *See also*, Apparitions.
Havelok, 2, 208.
Hawkes, Henry, on the cities of Mexico, 1, 133.
Hawkins, Sir John, account of the Canaries, 1, 133.
Hawkins, Sir Richard, 2, 23.
Hawkins, Rev. William, son-in-law of Walton, 8, 99.
Hawkwood, Sir John, 1, 325.
Hawthorne, on England, 1, 306; the unwilling poet of the Puritanism of the past, 2, 136; a descendant of one of the Witchcraft judges, 4, 25; his intuitive appreciation of New England life, 60; his treatment of hereditary vices, 2, 163; the *Marble Faun*, 163; the character of Mr. Dimmesdale in the *Scarlet Letter*, 4, 211; the *Scarlet Letter* cited, 8, 194; *also*, 1, 296.
Haydon, on the lofty purpose of Wordsworth and Keats, 5, 323; on Keats's depression, 326; on his eyes, 341; quoted, 4, 130.
Haying, in northern Maine, 1, 82; in the Seboomok meadows, 104.
Haynes, John, on the dissolution of the Rump Parliament in 1653, 4, 41; on a catechism denying the divinity of Christ, 46.
Hazlitt, W. C., his *Early English Poetry* in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 281; edition of Webster, 313; examples of blunders, 314; his edition of Lovelace, 337; his absurd emendations, 337; his notes, 343; his rash conceit, 354; his lack of taste and discrimination, 355; further instances of his incapacity, 357; his insinuations against Wright and Warton, 365; his editorial method characterized, 386; his edition of Herrick, 356; on Ritson's editing, 367; on Spenser's allegory, 4, 285; *also*, 5, 275.
Head-dress of Italian peasant women, 1, 202.
Heath, John Francis, 8, 55 n.
Heathen, Dante on their state after death, 5, 153.
Heathen divinities. *See* Pagan divinities.
Heather, its American substitute, 1, 84.
Hebrew, believed to have been spoken by God himself, 7, 305.
Hebrew literature, 5, 137.
Hector, 2, 31, 83.
Hecuba, 4, 26.
Heeren, Bancroft's translation of, 7, 189.
Heidegger, Dr., 2, 35.
Heine, his airy humor, 2, 67; turned the Gods of Greece to good account, 3, 131; on the nature of woman, 166; his style, 4, 96; his want of inward propriety, 100; his cynicism, 167; his profound pathos, 7, 65; influenced by Spanish romances, 142; the first English translation of, 189; hated the Romans for inventing Latin grammar, 197; *also*, 1, 340; 2, 134, 195.
Helen of Kirconnel, Wordsworth's version compared with the original, 5, 229 n.
Helen of Troy, 1, 106.
Helias, St., 3, 178 n.
Hell, imagined as the reverse of Heaven, 3, 156; Dante's picture of, 5, 68; Marlowe on, 69.
Heminge and Condell, 3, 238.
Henchmen, 1, 208.
Henry IV. of France at Ivry, a Roman policeman compared to, 1, 254; compared with Lincoln in character and circumstances, 6, 233.
Henry VII., Emperor, his expedition to Italy, 5, 21; his death, 22.
Henry IX. of England, so-called, 2, 5.
Hens. *See* Fowls.

Heraclitus, 1, 196.
Herakles and Samson, 2, 172.
Herbert, George, character of his poems, 2, 281; *also*, 430 n; quoted, 7, 198.
Herbert, Sir Henry, on two of Massinger's plays, 8, 296, 297.
Herbert of Cherbury, Lord, on riding, 4, 319.
Herder, 4, 99, 155; his love-letters, 143.
Heredity, 2, 210; influence of, in great men, 5, 182; makes all men in a sense coeval, 7, 168. *See also*, Ancestry.
Heresy, Selden on, 4, 152; Dante had no sympathy with, 5, 148.
Heretics, the persecution of, 3, 184; Lessing on, 4, 132.
Hermit, who became a king, a mediæval apologue, 6, 3.
Hermit instinct strong in New England, 1, 56.
Hero, Carlyle's picture of, 2, 70; a makeshift of the past, 85; eagerly accepted by a nation, 6, 116.
Herodias in legend, 3, 166.
Herodotus, Plutarch on, 1, 305.
Heroic treatment demanded for trifling occasions, 6, 243.
Heroism the touch of nature that makes the whole world kin, 7, 45.
Herrick, Hazlitt's edition of, 2, 356; *also*, 4, 160; 5, 191; *On Julia's Petticoat*, 3, 36.
Hertzberg, Wilhelm, Geoffrey Chaucer's Canterbury-Geschichten, 3, 183, 191.
Hesperides, apples of, true poems compared to, 4, 223.
Heylin, Dr., on French cooks, 3, 30.
Heywood, Thomas, on the uses of the poets, 8, 315.
Heywood's *Woman killed with kindness* quoted on the condition of prisons in Old England, 1, 188; his *Four P. P.* quoted, 2, 374.
Hibbins, Mr., 4, 32.
Higginson, T. W., preacher and soldier, 2, 19.
Highlanders. *See* Scotch Highlanders.
Hildesheim, Bishop of, his demoncook, 3, 175.
Hill, Aaron, Pope's correspondence with, 2, 465.
Hippocrene, 5, 280.
Hippolytus. *See* Euripides.
Hirschel lawsuit, Lessing employed as a translator in, 4, 119.
Historian, what constitutes the triumph of an, 8, 73.
Historians, Raleigh's warning to, 3, 276; 4, 282 n.
Historic continuity, its effect on national individuality, 7, 272.
Historical composition, the value of anecdote and scandal in, 2, 16; the modern fashion of picturesque writing, 5, 252; the value of contemporary memoirs, 253; 6, 297, 298; the so-called dignity of, often mere dulness, 5, 255; the Johnsonian swell of the last century, 255; importance of good taste in, 255; value of personal testimony, 6, 147; distorted by bad logic and by the style of the writer, 149; truth of circumstance combined with error in character, 150; the annalist's method, 150; the "standard" histories, 151; the poet's view of, 152; the historical romance, 153; the epic style, 153; the partisan method, 153; the forlorn-hope method, 153; the *a priori* fashion, 153; the ancient method, 340.
Historical insight, 2, 91.
Historical romance, 6, 153.
History, its key to be found in America, 1, 14; without the soil it grew in, its shortcomings, 136; cycles in the movement of, 225; 6, 155; events gain in

greatness from the stage on which they occur, 2, 6; its field generally limited, 10; Carlyle's scheme of, 78; the place of popular opinion in, 78; the hero in, 85; its humors, 4, 26; made largely by ignoble men, 247; manipulation of, 6, 120; contemporary evidence to be taken with caution, 148; no absolute dependence to be placed upon, 154; difficulty of forecasting events, 154; coincidences and parallelisms of history, 156; the hand of Providence in, 157; man's part in the operations of the loom of time, 161; the changes in the moral and social conditions of nations, 161; historical characters compared with imaginary, 7, 99; the teaching of, 110; its periods short in comparison with geological antiquity, 168; the study of, 212; Burke's view of, 241; *also*, 5, 164. *See also*, Antiquity; Biography; Past.

Hoar, Senator, 7, 249.

Hobbes, 5, 270; Pope's Essay on Man distilled from his *Leviathan*, 2, 448.

Hodgson, Captain, 4, 10.

Hogan Moganships, 1, 173.

Hogarth, 3, 288; compared to Chaucer, 2, 255; compared with Fielding, 7, 72.

Hogs, Gilbert White's observations on, 1, 260.

Hohenzollerns, Carlyle's admiration for, 1, 323.

Holbein, 1, 308.

Holda, 3, 166.

Holding up the hand, Mr. Hazlitt on, 1, 384.

Holmes, Dr. O. W., 5, 248; on physiological changes, 1, 297; 7, 54, 100.

Holt, Chief-Justice, belief in witchcraft, 4, 14.

Holy Grail, legends of, 5, 133.

Homekeeping youths, 1, 9; 7, 201.

Homeliness of Anglo-Saxon poetry, 2, 233.

Homer, Keats should have translated him, 2, 321; Chapman's reverence for, 321, 322; the different conceptions of his metre, 322; fond of assonances, 323; his verse compared to the long ridges of the sea, 323; his simplicity, 324; passage of Spenser suggested by, 4, 297; inferences as to contemporary manners unsafe, 307 n; his homeliness, 6, 299; his imaginative power, 7, 61; the canorousness of his verses, 327; *also*, 2, 114, 268; 3, 242; 7, 276.

Dryden on, 3, 31 n.

Chapman's translation. *See* Chapman's Homer.

Odyssey, 2, 205; 5, 241; the true type of the allegory, 285.

Homeric translation. *See* Translation of Homer.

Honesty, intellectual, 4, 132.

Honor, sense of, Davenant's line on, 3, 53 n.

Hood quoted, 6, 210.

Hooke, William, 4, 51; letters on English affairs, 45.

Hooker, 5, 270.

Hooker, Richard, 8, 89.

Hooks and eyes, the millennium dependent on, 2, 132.

Hope, Pope's lines on, 2, 453.

Hopkins, the witch-finder, 3, 173.

Hopkins, Bishop, 6, 270.

Horace, a poet and a soldier, 2, 19; President Quincy's fondness for, 34; the one original Roman poet, 199; Dryden's translation of Ode iii. 29, 3, 24; sentiment of, 4, 195, 196; Daniel's amplification of Integer Vitae, 240; and Malherbe compared, 8, 49; *also*, 4, 223.

on winter, 1, 346 ; on hastiness in writing, 3, 31 n ; on the punishment of crime, 6, 157.
Horizon at sea, 1, 127.
Horrible and Terrible, Aristotle's distinction between, 2, 310.
Horse and Hattock, witch formula, 3, 166.
Horse in green spectacles, the public compared to, 2, 414.
Horses, indication of senility in, 1, 164 ; those who have to do with them the same everywhere, 174 ; in pagan mythology, 3, 154.
Horseback riding at Tivoli, 1, 163.
Horse-chestnuts in blossom, 1, 16.
Hortop, Job, account of the Bermudas, 1, 132.
Hospitality, of woodmen, 1, 113 ; reciprocal, 190 ; in earlier days, 2, 29.
Hot weather, satisfaction of seeing the thermometer higher than ever before, 1, 264.
Hotels, lack of comfort in American, 1, 91 ; 4, 82 ; the touters of rival hotels, 7, 256.
Houghton, Lord, on the parentage of Keats, 5, 316, 317 ; on the effect of the *Quarterly* article on Keats, 327.
House-moving in America, 1, 149.
Howell, James, 7, 100 ; cured by Sir K. Digby, 4, 66.
Howells, William D., 7, 100.
Howes, Edward, his letters to J. Winthrop, Jr., on alchemy and other mysteries, 4, 54 ; urges tolerance, 57 ; on the true shape of Christ, 58 ; a true adept of the hermetic philosophy, 59.
Howgall, Francis, 4, 74.
Hroswitha, treated the legend of Theophilus, 3, 134.
Hubb, Herr, his so-called comic poem, 4, 99.
Huc, Father, 3, 224.
Hudson, the railway king, 7, 30.
Huet, 1, 12.
Hughes, Mr., on Spenser's measure, 4, 295 n.
Hughes, Thomas, 1, 320.
Hugo, Victor, his idea of the poet's function, 2, 122 ; on Shakespeare, 3, 286 ; the representative of sentimentalism, 4, 214 ; his *Marion Delorme*, 7, 147 n ; compared with John Webster, 8, 252.
Human imperfection, 2, 90.
Human life, Dante on the course of, 5, 113.
Human mind, Dante on its double use, 5, 80.
Human nature, the most entertaining aspect of nature, 1, 137 ; and the most wonderful, 2, 148 ; hard to find, but good company, 1, 142 ; its sameness, 306 ; the gratis-instinct, 335–337 ; its ideal, 2, 70 ; Carlyle's disdain of, 89 ; its modification by habit, 175 ; the attempts to make it over, 4, 209 ; Dante on its double end, 5, 120 ; as an element in the making of history, 6, 156 ; the instinct that embodies and personifies abstract conceptions, 7, 127. *See also*, Life ; Man ; Soul.
Human reason, Carlyle's contempt for, 2, 73.
Human wit limited in quantity, 7, 34.
Humanitarianism, 7, 21 n.
Humbug, the English vocabulary incomplete without, 1, 230.
Hume, David, 4, 162 n.
Hume, the spiritualist, 3, 204 n.
Humor, Yankee humor displayed in the Cornwallis, 1, 42 ; the German idea of its essence, 2, 67 ; without artistic sense degenerates into the grotesque, 68 ; its essential, 76 ; essential to the composition of a sceptic, 5, 51 ; of a heavy man, 255 ; sense of, 7, 3 ; distinguished from mere fun, 8, 282.
of Carlyle, 2, 65, 66, 76; of Heine,

67; of Cervantes, 68; 7, 145, 156, 295; of Rabelais, 2, 68; of Shakespeare and other writers, 307; 7, 65, 295; of Emerson, 2, 398; of Richter, 4, 94; wanting in Spenser, 283; instances of, in Dante, 5, 106 n; absence of the sense of, in Wordsworth, 7, 134. *See also*, American, English, French, German humor.
Humors, more common in old times, 1, 62.
Humors of character, preserved by an academic town, 1, 55.
Humors of history, 4, 26.
Humorist, the never quite unconscious, 7, 64.
Hunt, Gov., on the main object of the Constitutional party of 1860, 6, 34.
Hunt, Leigh, 2, 255; his critical method, 230.
on America, 1, 324; on Spenser, 4, 294 n; on Wordsworth's eyes, 5, 219; on Keats's sensitiveness with regard to his family, 317; on Fielding, 7, 66.
Huon of Bordeaux, 2, 29.
Hurd, 4, 162 n.
Hurry, of the present day, 1, 20; of American life, 78; characteristic of the Anglo-Saxon, 157.
Husking-bee, 1, 219.
Hutchinson, Mrs., reference to, in Edward Howes's letter, 4, 58.
Hypochondria, 3, 124.

Iago. *See* Shakespeare — *Othello*.
Ice on the trees, 1, 363; Ambrose Philips's description of, 363.
Iceland, Northmen in, 2, 216.
Ideal, the, in Thoreau's writings, 2, 151; in Emerson's lectures, 397; the ideal and the real, 3, 288; in literature, difficulty of attaining, 4, 239; needed as a basis for the real, 7, 19; as real as the sensual, 98.
Ideal life constantly put forward by Emerson, 2, 401.
Ideal truth, art a seeking after, 2, 151.
Ideas, the world's stock limited, 2, 75.
Identity, 1, 297.
Ignorance, a certain satisfaction in, 1, 142.
Ilexes at Subiaco, 1, 216.
Iliad, power of the, 7, 318.
Illumination, Chaucer's pictures of life compared to, 2, 222.
Images of Langland, 2, 231; Dryden's use of, 3, 41.
Imagination, the fine eye of, needed by a traveller, 1, 6; driven out by the public school, 129; wanting in modern travellers, 132; faith in, preserved by the Roman Church, 229; common sense sublimed, 352; essential to enduring fame, 2, 55; not to be increased by study and reflection, 61; in a Scotchman, 86; Collins on, 410; ignored by French criticism, 416; Wordsworth the apostle of, 437; its action as a mythologizer, 3, 121; its higher creative form, 248; distinguished from fantasy, 250; its laws to be most clearly deduced from Greek literature, 250; its secondary office as the interpreter of the poet's conceptions, 259; the life-giving power in poetry, 4, 223; its office in literature, 243; attempts at, by an unimaginative man, 5, 255; must not be furnished with a yard-stick, 293; its full force found only in three or four great poets, 7, 60; works of, have a usefulness higher in kind than others, 60; its uplifting and exhilarating effect on the moral and intellectual nature, 60; the bestower of originality and genius, 61; in lower natures, combines with the understanding and works through obser-

vation, 61; its importance taught by Coleridge, 84; the world of, 98, 113; homeliness of, in popular tales, 103; applied to the domain of politics by Burke, 241; relation between it and Form, 8, 229. *See also*, Fancy.
Wordsworth's lack of, 2, 54; of Burke, 57; of Shakespeare, 57, 255; 5, 292; of Goethe, 2, 62; of Carlyle, 68, 80; its quality in Thoreau, 140; of Chaucer, 255; of Dryden, 3, 23; of Spenser, 4, 310; of Dante, 5, 124; of Milton, 292; its quality in Keats, 343; of Fielding, 7, 64; of Coleridge, 85; shown in Cervantes' characters, 155.
Imaginative creations, 7, 156.
Imaginative literature, its place in a public library, 7, 113.
Imaginative work, its inner quality accessible only to a heightened sense, 7, 150.
Imagines of the Romans, a substitute proposed, 2, 353.
Imitation, 2, 310; produces the artificial, not the artistic, 165; the fascination of, 166; the great poets not susceptible of, 3, 256. *See also*, Originality.
Immigration, its dangers, 7, 250.
Immortality of fame, 1, 361.
Imola, Benvenuto da. *See* Benvenuto.
Impartiality impossible in time of civil war, 6, 162.
Imperfection of human nature, 2, 90.
Impracticable, the, always politically unwise, 6, 241.
Imprecations of an Italian guide, 1, 204.
Impressions, their value, 3, 247.
Impressment, 2, 36.
Incarnation, The, 5, 160.
Incongruities of life, 1, 52.
Inconsistency of Dryden, 3, 35; Petrarch the perfection of, 4, 197; a necessary incident of political life, 6, 240.
Inconstancy, Webster's lines on, 2, 311.
Indecision of character exemplified in Hamlet, 3, 300.
Independence, of Lessing, 4, 117; developed in a democracy, 7, 29.
Independent in Politics, The Place of the: address April 13, 1888, 7, 233–268; defined, 238; his office to denounce abuses in political methods, 245; needed to moderate between parties, 258; the reform of parties to be wrought by, 259; denounced for advocating civil service reform, 261.
Indian Mutiny, 1, 314.
Indian nomenclature, 1, 86.
Indians, American, anecdote of one who preferred hanging to preaching, 1, 43; the Puritan conversion of, 289; Pope's lines on, 2, 452; the legend of the werwolf found among, 3, 171; supposed to worship the Devil, 187; their capture advocated in order to exchange them for negroes, 4, 50; as servants in early New England, 51; royal and noble titles applied to, by the early settlers, 78; Williams's opinion of them, 80; he declines to sell them coats and breeches, 80; become romantic as they cease to be dangerous, 81; in Harvard College, 7, 179.
Indifference of men of the eighteenth century, 8, 11–14.
Indignation, 1, 304.
Indirectness, its office in descriptive writing, 3, 262.
Individualism of modern literature, 2, 124.
Individualization makes sympathy more lively, 6, 298.
Indolence, a master of casuistry, 8, 24.
Inevitable, arguments with, 7, 14.
Infallibility, 4, 27.

Infernal hierarchy, 3, 131.
Influence abiding after death, 4, 168.
Ingenuous, our youth no longer so, 1, 135.
Inhabitiveness, the author's, 1, 12.
Injustice, 6, 311.
Inns, of Cambridgeport, 1, 33; in Palestrina, 187; in Olevano, 205; cleanliness of Italian inns due to English travellers, 234. *See also*, Taverns.
Inquisition of the 13th century the beginning of systematic persecution for witchcraft, 3, 184.
Inscriptions, Assyrian and others, 1, 115; the mad desire to decipher them, 2, 353.
Insight, 2, 195.
Inspiration, 3, 284; 5, 209; handy for a political speaker to have, 7, 235; more convenient than knowledge, 235.
Instinct, Pope's lines on, 2, 448.
Institutions too changeable to preserve the memory of statesmen, 1, 115.
Intellectual ancestry, 5, 341.
Intellectual dyspepsia of the transcendental movement, 2, 132.
Intellectual natures, 5, 327.
Intensity in Wordsworth's higher moods, 5, 231.
Intensity of phrase affected by modern poets, 2, 58.
Interludes, the training-schools for actors, 8, 171; not easy to read, 172.
Intolerance itself to be tolerated, 4, 78.
Invention, 2, 193.
Ireland, his clumsy forgery of Vortigern, 7, 289.
Ireland, Alexander, *Book-lover's Enchiridion*, 7, 95.
Ireland, in 16th century, 4, 245; independence of England not desired, 6, 83; its economic condition in Arthur Young's time, 279.
Irishmen, prejudice against, in the North, 6, 283; anecdote of an Irishman newly arrived in New York, 7, 23; on the worn-out farms of Massachusetts, 23; in America, 265; their fidelity and self-sacrifice toward Ireland, 266. *See also*, Fenians.
Irish pride of ancestry, 4, 24.
Iron, man's sympathy for, 1, 138.
Irony of Hamlet, 3, 308.
Irrepressible conflict, the, 6, 40.
Irresolution, the consequences of, displayed in Hamlet, 3, 317.
Irving, Edward, Carlyle on his singularities, 2, 87.
Irving, Washington, divined and illustrated the humorous side of early New England history, 4, 7; his *Knickerbocker* imitates Cervantes, 7, 164.
Isaiah, 5, 51; 7, 137, 235.
Islands in Moosehead Lake, 1, 99.
Israelites and the Pilgrims compared as to influence on the future, 4, 3.
Italian acting, 1, 207.
Italian and French sources drawn from by early English writers, 7, 313, 314.
Italian beggars. *See* Beggars, Italian.
Italian dialects, Dante's work on, 5, 43.
Italian exiles drawn to Dante, 5, 62.
Italian gardens, 1, 252.
Italian history in relation to Dante, 5, 140.
Italian inns, their cleanliness due to English travellers, 1, 234.
Italian language, Dante's use of, 5, 44.
Italian literature, the *Convito* the first Italian prose, 5, 45.
Italian peasants, 1, 172, 193; reading of, 185; in out of the way towns, 208.
Italian politics illustrated by the feeling at Tivoli against Rome, 1, 159.
Italian prima donna, her careless pity

for her American audience, 1, 315.
Italian prosody, elisions, 5, 300.
Italian towns, individuality of, 1, 249; rivalry of, 2, 10.
Italian vetturini, 1, 174.
Italian women, 1, 172, 201; their unsophisticated consciousness, 222.
Italians, their lavishness of time, 1, 156; their disputes, 196; on the mail-packet from Leghorn to Civita Vecchia, 198; pleasure in escaping a payment, 200; their feeling toward the pope, 240; their way of doing nothing, 243; a vociferous people, 250. *See also*, Romans.
Italy, Leaves from my Journal in, 1, 121–255; reasons for visiting, 147; its peculiar magnetic virtue, 148; its special charm to Americans, 148; pleasures of living in, 149; the sense of permanence, 150; compared to a beautiful woman, 150; ancient and modern writers on, 150; guides, 160, 168; the ruins adopted by Nature, 166; church-going, 171; railroads, 179; reading, 185; picturesqueness of the inaccessible mountain towns, 203; Roger Ascham's opinion of, 2, 435.
Ivy, on the Villa of Hadrian, 1, 162; at Subiaco, 215.

J. F. = John Foster.
J. H. = John Holmes.
Jacie, Henry, letter on the destruction of Bores by the King of Sweden, 4, 76.
Jack, Colonel, 1, 344.
Jackson, General, 1, 36; 6, 85.
Jacobitism compared to modern superstition, 3, 120.
Jacob's ladders, climbers on, easily get a fall, 1, 169.
Jamaica, 6, 389; the imagined negro plots in 1865, 3, 186; lessons of emancipation in, 6, 372.
James I. of England convinced of the reality of witchcraft, 3, 160.
James II. of England, 6, 392.
Janus Bifrons, 1, 66.
Jarley, Mrs., 5, 263.
Jean Paul. *See* Richter.
Jefferson, Thomas, 4, 86, 179; J. Quincy's reminiscences of, 28; devised the theory of strict construction, 6, 181.
Jehan d'Arras, *Melusine*, 2, 264.
Jehoiada-boxes, 1, 44, 198.
Jellaladeen, a parable of, 7, 18.
Jerome, St., believed in a limitation of God's providence, 1, 117.
Jesuits, popular opinion of, in Italy, 1, 171.
Jews, their national egotism found sympathy in Puritan England, 5, 274; the prejudice against, 7, 15; sincerity of converted Jews tested, 259.
Job, Book of, 1, 342.
John XXII., Pope, 5, 29.
John, King of Saxony, on Dante's politics, 5, 40; on Dante's Catholicism, 43.
John of Leyden, 3, 284.
Johnson, Andrew, President, on the Stump, 6, 325–346; his allusion to his own humble origin, 325; his speech on Feb. 22, 1866, 328; his loyalty, 328; his mistaken conception of the President's office, 329; his right to his own opinions, 334; should not appeal to the people against their representatives, 334; the meetings to "sustain" him, 335; he assumes sectional ground, 336; fictitious address to a Southern delegation, 340; the clown of the Philadelphia convention circus, 351; his appearance as a mountebank, 351, 357, 362, 363; relation to the principles of the Convention, 354; incidents of his speech-making tour, 355; Pontifex Maximus at the canonization

of S. A. Douglas, 359; the unsavory memory of his career, 364; his arguments on the questions of reconstruction, 365; threatens the forcible suppression of the Congress, 369; his policy, 375; his agrarian proclamation, 375; hailed by the South as a scourge of God, 377; his foolish policy awakens the people to the gravity of the situation, 383; his misconceptions and delusions, 383; his policy compared to that of James II., 392; his earlier attitude toward the South, 393; impeachment deprecated, 397.

Johnson, Reverdy, 6, 356; on the relations of England and America in 1869, 1, 330.

Johnson, Dr. Samuel, his critical power, 3, 54 n; his *Life of Dryden*, 54 n; theory of genius, 61; dined heartily for threepence, 4, 116; poverty of, 119; compared with Lessing in learning and critical power, 123, 166; epigram from Spenser, 249 n; his verse, 5, 346; his views of America compared with Burke's, 7, 241; his treatment of Lycidas, 283; on the rupture between Gray and Walpole, 8, 18; criticisms of Gray, 24, 41; *also*, 1, 269; 2, 212, 266; 3, 10, 37; 4, 265; 7, 108.

on Pope, 2, 467; on his *Essay on Man*, 449; on his sincerity, 463; on Milton's *Lycidas*, 3, 20; on Dryden, 54; on Shakespeare, 236; on love, 4, 143; on Rousseau, 176; on Burke, 7, 85.

Joinville, 2, 6.

Joke, Francis Sales's way of taking everything, 1, 65; the Chief Mate's appreciation of, 139, 141.

Jones, Paul, picture of his fight in the Bonhomme Richard in the Cambridge barber's shop, 1, 25.

Jongleurs, 2, 263.

Jonson, Ben, his verse, 2, 246; characterized, 307; heavy without grandeur, 309; Dryden on, 3, 57, 105 n; his dramas compared with Shakespeare's, 280; his critical power no help to him as a dramatist, 4, 159; his lyrics, 160; his debt to Spenser, 267 n; his theory of dramatic construction, 8, 231; *also*, 2, 19; 3, 9; 4, 269, 310.

on Bacon, 2, 403; 3, 232; on rhymesters, 72; on Marston's neologisms, 223; on Shakespeare, 225 n, 232; on the decline of eloquence, 233; on Spenser's children, 4, 257 n; on his allegory in the *Faery Queen*, 278 n; on Guarini's language, 263 n; on Donne, 7, 136.

Jourdain, M., 8, 170.

Jourdain de Blaivies, passage quoted, 2, 206.

Journal in Italy and elsewhere, Leaves from, 1, 121–255.

Journalism, 5, 196; 7, 3. *See also*, Newspapers.

Juan, Don, 1, 129.

Jubinal, Achille, 1, 345.

Judæa, its place in the world of thought, 7, 208.

Judas, the apostle, 6, 150.

Judd, Sylvester, his *Margaret*, 1, 357.

Judges chosen by election in some states, 7, 29.

Judgments, divine, made to work both ways, 4, 76.

Judgments, human, a man judged by his little faults, 1, 50; Shakespeare on, 3, 68.

Junius, Dr. Waterhouse's observations upon, 1, 63.

Justice, sense of, 2, 98; in the soul and in action, distinguished by Rousseau, 4, 192; more merciful than pity in the long run, 5, 156.

K. = President Kirkland.
Kaiser, Rothbart, 8, 61.
Kalewala, 2, 152; 3, 123.
Kannegiesser, translation of Dante, 5, 34.
Kansas, 6, 48.
Kant, on the accumulating records of history, 7, 173.
Katahdin, Mt., seen from Moosehead, 1, 85.
Kay, Sir, 2, 119.
Keane, Counsellor, his pig, 2, 6.
Kearney, Commodore, 6, 76.
KEATS, JOHN, 5, 315–347; his parents, 316; his love for his mother, 318; education, 319; his school-fellows' opinion of him, 319; Mrs. Grafty's reminiscences of, 320 n; apprenticed to a surgeon, 321; reads Spenser, 321; his sympathy for Chatterton, 322; his other reading and first publication, 322; *Endymion* (1818) and the abuse it received, 323; his case compared with Milton's, 323; his ambition to be a great poet, 323, 325; his suffering from the vulgarities of the reviews, 324; his name unfortunate, 325; the effect of the fortunes of his book on him, 326; in Haydon's painting room, 326; the moral and physical man perfectly interfused, 327; his own opinion of *Endymion*, 328; on his own method of work, 329; his character and manner of working compared with Wordsworth's, 330; first symptoms of his hereditary disease, 332; his passion for a woman, 332; his own description of his passion, 332; his betrothal, 334; his work from 1818 to 1820, 334; the first hemorrhage and the journey to Italy, 335, 336; letters quoted expressing his despair at the separation from Miss ——, 337, 338; at Rome, 338; the end, 339; his grave, 340; his personal appearance, 340; criticism of his poetry, 341; superabundant in language, 341; originality, 341; compared with Wordsworth and Byron, 342; his poetic imagination, 343; an example of the Renaissance, 344; power of assimilation, 344; self-denial in use of language, 345; power of poetic expression, 345; his poems a reaction against the barrel-organ style of poetry, 346; the greatness and purity of his poetic gift, 347; should have translated Homer, 2, 321; learned to versify from Chapman, 329; denunciation of 18th century style, 3, 7; studied Dryden's versification, 7 n; Spenser's influence upon, 4, 320; his style compared with Milton's, 5, 277; early maturity of his style, 7, 287; *also*, 2, 223.
on Chapman's Homer, 4, 254; on continuations of an ancient story by great poets, 275; on a line of Shakespeare's, 5, 235 n; on the imagination, 344.
Endymion, 5, 323, 328, 345; 2, 255; — *Hyperion*, 5, 334, 345; — *Lamia*, 335, 345; — *Lyrical Ballads*, 324; — *Odes*, 345; — *Ode to a Grecian Urn*, 192 n; — *Sonnets*, 345.
Kemble, John, in *Macbeth*, 3, 293.
Ken, Anne, second wife of Izaak Walton, 8, 81.
Kent, men of, their tails, 1, 134.
Kepler, 3, 232.
Ketch, Jack, 3, 95.
Kidd, Captain, 6, 149.
Kineo, Maine, 1, 91.
Kineo, Mt., 1, 85; ascent of, 114.
Kings, their Sacred Majesty ridiculed by the Dutch, 1, 309; Browning's picture of a king, 2, 89; 7, 25.
Kirke, Edmund, probably the same as Spenser, 4, 263 n.
Kirkland, President, his character,

1, 49; his appearance, 50; unsuited to his time, 51; anecdotes of him, 52; his manner of praying, 54.
Kleist, Lessing on, 4, 103 n; Lessing's friendship with, 131.
Klopstock, 4, 155; Lessing on, 106; Wordsworth's interview with, 5, 201.
on the German Muse, 4, 115.
Klotz, Lessing's criticism of, 4, 134.
Knebel, his judgment of Frederick the Great, 2, 94.
Knight of Courtesy, Hazlitt's and Ritson's editions of, 2, 368.
Knights of Labor, 7, 222.
Knives, the Chief Mate's appreciation of, 1, 138.
Knowledge, elements of, 1, 9; that which comes of sympathy, 3, 269.
Knowledge and learning, 4, 118.
Know-Nothings, 6, 388.
Knox, John, 4, 210.
Kobes I., Emperor, his speeches compared to President Johnson's, 6, 356.
König, Eva, Lessing's wife, 4, 142.

L. S. = Leslie Stephen.
Labor, cheap, importation of, 7, 264.
Labor-saving contrivances, 2, 11.
La Bruyère on witchcraft, 3, 199.
La Chevrette, Hermitage of, 2, 147.
La Fontaine, 4, 134.
Lager-beer and brandy, the Dutchman's distinction, 1, 152.
Laing, editor of Dunbar's works, 4, 228.
Lake, its uncanny noises on a freezing night, 1, 375.
Lamartine, 1, 343; 4, 179, 211, 217; autumn compared to, 1, 339; resents the subsidy granted him by the Senate, 4, 202.
Lamb, Charles, his defence of the comedy of the Restoration, 3, 66; his criticism of the English dramatists, 247; Wordsworth's friendship with, 5, 209; *also*, 1, 363; 2, 275, 277; 6, 164.
on Webster, 2, 310; on Spenser, 4, 291; on Wordsworth, 5, 214.
his *Essays of Elia*, 7, 100.
Lamb, Charles and Mary, 5, 184 n.
Lamennais on Dante, 8, 55.
La Motte Fouqué. *See* Fouqué.
Lamps, alchemists', Pope's teaching in the *Essay on Man* compared to, 2, 448.
Lance-rests, 2, 364.
Land, Henry George's theories of, 7, 34.
Land companies. *See* American land companies.
Land speculations, Rufus Davenport's, in Cambridgeport, 1, 34.
Landino, comment on Dante, 5, 46.
Landor, Robert, his *Fountain of Arethusa*, 8, 65.
Landor, Walter Savage, Some Letters of, 8, 53–68.
Landor, his works highly esteemed by Emerson, 8, 53; his stately eloquence, 54; theatrical and uppish, 56; his fondness for writing Latin verse, 57; his characters are images rather than persons, 58; sued for libel, 58; his remoteness from the real world, 58; nothing in him at second hand, 59; his English pure, harmonious, and sonorous, 59; some of his shorter poems perfect, 59; his politics, 60; his books good for reading aloud, 61; his biography by Forster, 61, 63; collected edition of his works, 61; Lowell's only meeting with, 61; his personal appearance, 62; Carlyle's opinion of, 63; his Fiesolan villa, 63; story of his throwing his cook out of a window, 63; his extravagant opinion of Prince Louis Napoleon, 64; his Merino sheep "stolen"

by George III., 64; memory and imagination mixed in him, 65; his enthusiasm over his brother's *Fountain of Arethusa*, 65; his judgment of Wordsworth, 66; his adoption of ancestors, 67; his *Gebirus Rex*, 2, 167; his pseudo-classicism, 173; his blank verse, 5, 224; his style compared with Milton's, 276; *also*, 2, 161.
on great men, 3, 13 n; on mingling prose with poetry, 59; on Spenser, 4, 320; on Wordsworth, 5, 226; on Napoleon III., 6, 155; on Coleridge's criticism of *Don Quixote*, 7, 154.
Imaginary Conversations, 8, 55, 58.
Landscape, described by Chaucer, 1, 342; 2, 259; value of human associations in, 7, 169. *See also*, Nature; Scenery; Views.
Landscape-gardeners of literature, 3, 110.
Langland, 2, 221; compared with Chaucer, 228; his verse, 230; charm of his language, 233.
Piers Ploughman, as an example of popular poetry, 2, 233; reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 279; its language, 3, 227; cited, 2, 362; 3, 132.
Language, growth of, 2, 144, 225; must catch its fire from the thought behind it, 160; life may be breathed into, by a great poet, 201; compared to the soil, 207; what a man of genius may do for it, 226; of rustics, 240; reformed by example rather than by precept, 429; Renan on the development of, 3, 104 n; value of its living quality, 220; meaning of a "living" language, 220; intimate relations of language and thought, 221; its subtle relations with verse, 228; made classic by great poetry, 235; its office in poetry higher than in prose, 266; playing upon words characteristic of some passions, 273; its purity dependent on veracity of thought, 4, 215; Bellay on innovations in, 314; when archaisms are permissible, 315; power of, 5, 346; value of the study of, 7, 112; literature not to be sacrificed to, in teaching, 183; the teaching of, 198; benefits of knowing a foreign, 314, 315; helpfulness of translating, 315, 316. *See also*, Accent; Apostrophe; Assonance; Spelling; Words and expressions.
Languages, foreign, power of acquiring, 2, 127.
Langue d'oïl, its advantages over the Provençal, 2, 207.
Lapland night, the genius of Washington Allston compared to, 1, 41.
Larks. *See under* Birds.
Lassel cited on the meaning of *flutes*, 2, 344.
Lassels, Richard, on Italy, 1, 150; cited, 7, 314.
Last looks, 1, 178.
Latin, its use by Chaucer's cock, 4, 113; long equivalent to "language," 7, 308; an infallible pickle for thoughts, 308.
Latin elements in English, 2, 289; 3, 227; more familiar than the Teutonic, 229 n.
Latin literature, 2, 199; the later poets, 200. *See also*, Classics.
Latin quotations sure to be applauded, 1, 19.
Latin verse-composition, 2, 167.
Latini, Brunetto, 2, 203 n, 350; 5, 106 n; Dante's tutor, 9.
Laud, Archbishop, 4, 35.
Laughter, of President Felton, 1, 30; of the Snow brothers, 31; of Francis Sales, 64; that of X, the Chief Mate, described, 141.
Laura, 2, 196.
Laurels of the Villa d' Este, 1, 158.
Law as a training for politics, 6, 238.

Laws, Spinoza on the strength of, 6, 45.
Laws of Nature personified and worshipped of old, 1, 163.
Lead, proper for "Essays," 7, 121.
Leaders not provided for every petty occasion, 2, 90.
Leaders who do not lead, 7, 267.
Lear, 2, 311.
Learning, suspected of sorcery in the Middle Ages, 3, 136; Lessing on its uses, 4, 123; of Johnson and Lessing compared, 123; made more accessible by short cuts to information, 7, 101; *also*, 5, 51. *See also*, Education; Knowledge; Pedantry; Scholarship.
Learning and wisdom, Dante distinguishes between, 5, 97.
Leaven, 5, 261.
Leaves from my Journal in Italy and elsewhere, 1, 121–255.
Lecky, W. E. H., on witchcraft, 3, 188 n; on Peter of Abano, 193 n; on Wierus, 193.
Le Clerc, Victor, 2, 191; on Dante, 5, 112 n.
Lecturers, 1, 336.
Lecturing, 2, 391; the law of, 8, 167.
Lee, joint author with Dryden of *Œdipus*, 3, 40.
Legends, their growth and their fate, 3, 168; of saints and martyrs, 5, 133.
Legislation must be based on the understanding and not on the sentiment, 6, 240; dangerous consequences of ill-considered, 8, 117.
Leisure, needed in travelling, 1, 147; of the beggar aristocracy, 299.
Leisure class, a bane if it have not a definite object, 7, 267.
Lenz, 4, 142 n.
Leo VII., Pope, believes the story of the actor changed into an ass, 3, 169.
Leonardo, Aretino, on the date of Dante's birth, 5, 7; on the death of Dante's father, 9.
Leopoldo, guide in Tivoli, 1, 156, 160; his early education, 170.
Lepidus, his account of the crocodile, 4, 61.
Le Sage, 3, 279; *Gil Blas*, 7, 74.
Lessing, G. E., 4, 91–169; his fame survives the assault of four German biographers, 92; his great qualities, 101; the defence of Truth always his object in writing, 105; his intellectual ancestry, 105; characterized by force rather than cleverness, 107; the sources of his inspiration, 108; his ancestry, 112; his relation to his father, 113; his early education, 114; at Leipzig, 114; at Wittenberg and Berlin, 116; his Anacreontics and sermons at home, 115; his letters home, 117; his early scepticism, 117; his cheerful self-confidence, 117; his independence, 117; arranges Rüdiger's library, 118; his early range of scholarship, 118; his life pure, 119; his poverty, 119; his relations with Voltaire in the Hirschel lawsuit, 119; at Wittenberg in 1752, 121; his father's efforts to put him into a profession, 121; his mind always growing and forming, 122; compared with Johnson in learning and critical power, 123; in Berlin at literary work from 1752 to 1760, 124; his cheerful, manly nature, 124; shown by extracts from his letters, 125; compelled to literary drudgery at times, 126; his attitude toward it, 127; his opinion of dramatic writing, 128; defends his neglecting poetry for philosophy, 129; the training of his critical powers, 130; the firmness and justice of his criticisms, 130; his friends in Berlin, 131; his restlessness there, 131; his

passion for truth, 132; his friends' lack of appreciation of his position, 133; removes to Breslau in 1760, 136; a member of the Academy of Sciences of Berlin, 136; his feeling toward the Seven Years' War, 137; his patriotism shown in the warfare against French taste, 138; his life in Breslau, 138; refuses to bind himself to an official career, 139; returns to Berlin, 140; becomes theatrical manager at Hamburg, 141; appointed librarian of the Duke of Brunswick, 142, 146; his betrothal, 142; letter from Boie relating to, 142 n; his wife and their love-letters, 143; her death and Lessing's sorrow, 143; his life at Wolfenbüttel, 146; troubled with hypochondria, his cure for it, 147; his controversial writings, 148; his craving for sympathy in his later years, 149; his last letter to Mendelssohn, 149; his attitude toward theology, 150; alike indifferent to clerisy and heresy, 153; condition of contemporary German literature, 153; his debt to French literature, 158; his influence on European literature, 158; the source of his critical power, 161; the quality of his genius, 161; his power of dramatic construction, 162; a great prose writer, but not a poet, 163; his minor poems, 164; his continuous growth, 165; the life-giving quality of his thought, 166; his supreme value as a nobly original *man*, 166; his value to German literature, 166; a seeker after Truth, 168; Coleridge's debt to, 7, 84; as a critic, 284; *also*, 2, 134; 3, 99.

on Pope, 2, 470; on French drama, 3, 79; on Shakespeare, 290; on Kleist, 4, 103 n; on the critic, 104; on his own failures, 105; on Gottsched, 106; on Klopstock, 106; on Voltaire, 120; on his own education, 123; on the use of learning, 123; on different ways of earning one's living, 127; on his hack-work, 127; on the value of character, 128; on the cultivation of poetry, 129; on Thomson, 130; on Smollet's *Roderick Random*, 130; on heretics, 132; on the "whole truth," 132; on his criticism of Klotz, 134; on his wife's death, 144; on bearing grief, 145; on orthodoxy and sectarianism, 150; on his debt to Diderot, 161 n; on his *Dramaturgie*, 165; on seeking after truth, 167.

Stahr's Life of, a panegyric rather than a biography, 4, 102; furnishes little material for a comparative estimate, 104; its faults and shortcomings, 107; its excellences, 108; Evans's translation, 109, examples of mistranslation, etc., 109; further references to Stahr's work or opinions, 105, 120, 121, 136, 137, 138, 140, 145, 146, 150, 152, 158, 159, 164; Macaulay on, 4, 104; Goethe on, 162 n; 168.

Anti-Götze pamphlets, 4, 103, 149; — *Contributions to the History and Reform of the Theatre*, 107; 127; — *Dramaturgie*, 141, 158, 165; — *Emilia Galotti*, 148, 161, 163; — *Fables*, Grimm on, 131; — *Laocoön*, 129, 138, 166; — *Letters on Literature*, 103, 129, 130, 158; — *Lillo*, 108; — *Minna von Barnhelm*, 138, 161, 162 n; — *Miss Sara Sampson*, 108; — *Nathan the Wise*, 149, 162 n, 163, 164; — *Young Scholar*, 114.

Letcher, Governor, 6, 102.

Letters, 2, 463; misdirected, men compared to, 1, 300.

Le Verrier, discovery of Neptune, 6, 149.
Levity, 4, 280 n.
Lewis, the brewer in Cambridge, 1, 22; on Commencement days, 46.
Lexington, 1, 225, 297.
Lexington, battle of, reminiscences of survivors of, 6, 148.
Leyden, John of, 4, 13.
Liberal education, why so called, 3, 251.
Liberal studies, 7, 193, 212.
Liberty, Puritan ideas of, 4, 13, 87; Dante on, 5, 148; its principles cannot be sectional, 6, 46. *See also*, Freedom.
Librarians, modern, contrasted with earlier, 7, 101.
Library of Old Authors, Review of, 2, 273–387; the authors reprinted, 278; the editing, 282; general lack of accuracy, 288.
Libraries, 1, 326.
Libraries, Books and; address at Chelsea, Dec. 22, 1885, 7, 95–118.
Libraries, public, their office to spread the pleasures of scholarship and literature, 7, 97; an instrument of the higher education, 100; modern improvements in the administration of, 101; the books which should be found in, 109; their contribution to the welfare of the state, 117; as monuments of their donors, 117.
Lichen, yellow, on stone walls, 1, 194.
Lichtenberg, on ancient literature, 3, 254; on Garrick in *Hamlet*, 292.
Lictors, educational, 2, 292.
Lieberkühn, his theory of translation, 4, 110.
Life, continually weighing us, 1, 305; as the subject of poetry, 2, 114; demanded by the transcendental reformers, 134; Chaucer's and Dante's views of, 219; Dryden's line on, 3, 84; its dual nature, 4, 212; the sentimentalist's view of, 213; the voyage of, 5, 140; its essential underlying facts alone make character, 315. *See also*, Human nature; Society.
Liffert, 4, 142 n.
Lighthouse compared to Carlyle's teaching, 2, 89.
Lights in the windows, 1, 294, 373.
Lillo's *George Barnwell*, Lessing influenced by, 4, 108.
Lilly, his dramatic works reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 281; *also*, 2, 416.
Limbo of Dante, 5, 153.
Limiters, Chaucer's satire on, 2, 232.
Lincoln, Abraham, 6, 219–256; his reception of the Marquis of Hartington, 1, 318 n; his Americanism, 2, 12; 6, 236; his reply when Gen. Grant was accused of drinking too much, 3, 64 n; his administration sure to be conservative, 6, 51; his character and experience, 52; his inaugural in 1861, 100; his reply to McClellan's charge of lack of support, 137; his policy compared with McClellan's, 201; his moderation and considerate wisdom, 211; compared with Cromwell, 211; his wary scrupulousness followed by decided action, 212, 232; the qualities which make him a great statesman and ruler, 226; the peculiar difficulties of his task, 228, 230; his policy tentative to begin with, 231; knows how to seize the occasion when it comes, 232; has kept his rather shaky raft in the main current, 233; in character and circumstances compared with Henry IV. of France, 233; no apostasy or motives of personal interest to be charged against him, 235; contemptuously compared to Sancho Panza, 235; his personal appearance, 236;

his previous training and experience, 238; his debate with Douglas, 238; his policy to aim at the best, and take the next best, 239; his want of self-confidence and slow but steady advance, 239; his tenderness of nature without sentimentalism, 240; his rule to be guided by events even at the cost of delay, 240, 251; his attitude toward slavery, 241; his policy in emancipation dictated by prudence, 244; his original policy in regard to the war, 248; the tone of familiar dignity in his public utterances, 252; his confidence in the right-mindedness of his fellow men, 252; his character appeals even to the most degraded, 253; his policy that of public opinion based on adequate discussion, 253; absence of egotism, 253; the representative American, 254; the most absolute ruler in Christendom on the day of his death, 255; the feeling called out by his death, 255, 300; his power rested on honest manliness, 255; reluctant to overstep the limits of precedent, 318; always waited for his supplies to be on hand, 333; his definition of democracy, 7, 18; popular homage to, 31; a truly great man, 254; the English of, 8, 202; *also*, 6, 142.

Linguisters, 2, 235.

Lintot, the bookseller, 2, 467.

Literary fame. *See* Fame, literary.

Literary history, the mere *names* of, 2, 55.

Literary popularity. *See* Popularity, literary.

Literary sense of Chaucer, 2, 229.

Literary simplicity, 2, 58.

Literary vanity, 2, 350.

Literature, absorbed unconsciously, 1, 136; immediate popularity and lasting fame contrasted and discussed, 2, 54; importance of naturalness, 60; the favorable conditions for, 113, 118; its present tendency to lose national characteristics, 117; its staminate flowers, 136; its higher kinds dependent on the character of the people and age, 170; distinguished from rhetoric, 195; Byron's opinion in regard to execution, 454; the vitality of true literature, 3, 251; its idols become companions as one grows older, 278; its drudgery as a profession, 4, 126; the periwig and the tie-wig style, 154; the quality of nationality in, 227; 7, 141; difficulty of attaining the ideal, 4, 239; the everlasting realities in, 242; source of its vigor, 252, 253; of the 15th century, 255; the distinction of Form and Tendency, 5, 57; the Christian idea contrasted with the Pagan, 136; value of character in, 168; the heroic age of the folio past, 248; is its importance overvalued? 7, 59, 60; the office of creative genius in, 62; the difference between realistic and typical characters, 64; its benignities, 97; the conditions of permanence in, 130; the four cosmopolitan authors since Virgil, 131; the German word *Dichtung*, 143; the deeper qualities of books not accidental, 150; characters drawn by observation and those created by the imagination, 155; the pedigrees of books, 164; not to be sacrificed in the teaching of language, 183; the place of Plato and Aristotle in, 199; dependent on a national consciousness and a sense of historic continuity, 273; necessary to a nation's equipment, 274; the products of isolation in, 274; its place in the general estimation, 276; an index of civilization, 276; its influence on the course of history, 276; the re-

cord of a nation's life, 277; speaks in the universal tongue, 336; becomes more melancholy as it becomes more modern, 8, 140; no advance in, since the Greeks, 154; early, in France, 173; *versus* newspapers, 307. *See also*, American, English, European, French, German, Greek, Italian, Latin, Modern, *and* Spanish literature; — *also*, Allegory; Classics; Drama; Fables; Fabliaus; Fairy tales; Fiction; Historical composition; Imagination; Poetry; Provincialism; Satire; Style.

Littleton, case of pretended possession in, in 1720, 3, 204.

Lobster, Doctor, and the perch; fable in verse, 1, 94.

Lochinvar, 2, 117.

Loggers of Maine, 1, 86.

Logging on a frosty morning, 1, 90.

Lombard churches, 1, 241.

London, 1, 224.

London smoke, 1, 371.

Loneliness of the Ponte Sant' Antonio near Tivoli, 1, 167. *See also*, Solitude.

Longevity, 2, 45; competition in, among college graduates, 1, 48; its usual character, 2, 25.

Longfellow, his *Hiawatha*, 2, 171; — *Epimetheus*, 3, 36 n; his lectures on Dante, 5, 36; translation of the *Divine Comedy*, 5, 36, 89 n; — *Wreck of the Hesperus*, 4, 229.

Longing, 1, 222.

Longinus, 1, 204; references to, in mediæval literature, 2, 361.

Loom of time, man's share in its operations, 6, 161.

Lord of Misrule, procession of, Carlyle's view of life, 2, 77.

Lord's prayer, test whether a witch could repeat it, 3, 147.

Lorenz, Mdlle., Lessing's passion for, 4, 116, 119.

Loudon, Masson's reference to, 5, 262.

Loudun, the witchcraft troubles at 3, 181.

Louis, St., of France, 2, 6.

Louis XIV. of France, his influence on French literature, 4, 253 n; Thackeray's picture of, 6, 150.

Louis XVI. of France, mourning for, 1, 66.

Louis Napoleon, 7, 30; 8, 64.

Louis Philippe, 6, 157.

Louisiana, her proposal to secede absurd, 6, 61.

Louisiana purchase, J. Quincy's opposition to, 2, 37.

Loupgarou, 3, 168, 171.

Lovat, Simon, *Lord*, 3, 294.

Love, Webster's and Butler's lines on, 2, 312; Dryden's lines on, 3, 85; Spenser's lines on, 4, 251; his idea of, 280; Dante's conception of, 5, 109; Keats's description of his own state, 332.

Love at first sight, 2, 34.

Love of Amos and Laura, The, 8, 77.

Love of country, 2, 92; 6, 219. *See also*, Patriotism.

Lovelace, reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 281, 336; his three short poems which deserve to live, 335; the rest of his work worthless, 336; compared with Prynne, 4, 82.

Love-letters of Lessing and Eva König, 4, 143.

Lowell, Charles Russell, moose-hunting, 1, 112.

Lowell Institute, lectures at the, 8, 168.

Loyalty, to natural leaders, 2, 90; the sentiment developed into a conviction by the Civil War, 6, 263. *See also*, Patriotism.

Lucian, on apparitions, 3, 125 n; story of the stick turned water-carrier, 166.

Luck, its share in ephemeral success, 2, 56.
Lucky authors, 2, 335.
Lucretius, 7, 136; on the sea, 1, 121; his invocation of Venus, 2, 200; quoted, 5, 163 n.
Ludicrous, the, Germans less sensible of, 4, 98.
Ludlow, 4, 10.
Lumberers' camp, life in, 1, 86.
Lumbermen, require ready-made clothes, 1, 114. *See also*, Woodmen.
Lure, Guillaume de, burned at Poitiers in 1453, 3, 192.
Luther, on the children of witches, 3, 171; story that he was the son of a demon refuted by Wierus, 172 n; story of a demon who was *famulus* in a monastery, 177; *also*, 2, 163, 214; 4, 101; 5, 272.
Luxembourg, Maréchal de, the Devil flies away with him, 3, 138.
Lycanthropy, common belief in, 3, 170.
Lycaon, King, 3, 168.
Lyceum, as a substitute for the old popular amusements, 1, 43.
Lydgate, 2, 227, 245; his *Craft of Lovers* quoted, 249.
Lying to a witch on her trial justifiable, 3, 190.
Lyman, Theodore, his seat at Waltham, 2, 28.
Lynch-law not to be tolerated in affairs of government, 6, 87.
Lyndhurst, Lord, 2, 8.
Lyon, Dr., alchemist, 4, 56.
Lyrical cry, 3, 59 n.
Lytton, Baron. *Pelham*, 2, 86.

Macaulay, his sources, 2, 17; his estimate of Lessing, 4, 104; his historical method, 6, 153; on Charles Blount, 8, 125.
McClellan, General, his Report, 6, 115–143.
McClellan or Lincoln? 1864, 6, 189–215.
McClellan, popular enthusiasm for and confidence in, 6, 117; failure of the Peninsular campaign, 118, 132; publishes his Report as a political defence, 119, 137, 139; his reputation compared to a rocket, 119; his delay and indecision, 120, 128; his military duties interfered with by political aspirations, 122, 125; the flattery heaped upon him, 123; his judgment affected thereby, 123; hampered by his great reputation, 124; undertakes to advise the President on political matters, 125; growth of his egotism, 126; the personal sacrifices and patriotism of which he boasts, 126; repeated demands for reinforcements, 128, 133; his exaggerated estimate of the opposing forces, 129, 132; his plan of campaign impracticable, 130; his conceptions vague, 130; his expectations of the Peninsular campaign disappointed, 131; his adhesiveness of temper, 132, 134; his retreat well conducted, 134; the effect on the spirit of the army, 134, 138; no lack of support from the Administration, 136; his unbecoming charges on it, 137; his deficiencies as a leader, 138; his qualifications as a Presidential candidate, 139, 191; the platform of 1864 dangerous ground for him, 194; his disingenuous treatment of the platform, 198, 213; his policy compared with Lincoln's, 202; his theories in regard to coercion confused, 203; has not been called upon to put his political theories into practice, 202; his attitude toward slavery, 203; fails to realize the changes wrought by the war, 204, 209; views on the

conduct of the war, 206 ; his policy of conciliation futile, 208, 214 ; office not to be given him as a poultice for bruised sensibilities, 209 ; relation to the Democratic party, 213 ; his election would be an acknowledgment of the right of secession, 213.
McDonald of Glenaladale, 6, 396.
McDowell, General, his silence under slanderous reproach, 6, 121 ; his part in the Peninsular campaign, 132, 133.
Macer, 6, 156.
MacHeath, 6, 194.
Machiavelli, 1, 58 ; 4, 157, 205 ; 5, 275 ; on the recalling of the exiles to Florence in 1311, 5, 21 n ; on the natural term of governments, 6, 44 ; on three kinds of brains, 7, 212.
Mackintosh, Sir James, on Wordsworth, 8, 44.
Madden, Sir Frederick, 2, 367.
Madison on the right of coercion, 6, 180.
Mæcenas, villa of, at Tivoli, 1, 157.
Maelstrom in Worcester's Geography, 1, 135.
Mätzner on editors, 2, 355.
Maggot in the brain, 2, 121, 132 ; 4, 74.
Magic, its power to give life to inanimate things, 3, 165 ; the Devil's school of, in Toledo, 178.
Magnanimity, 6, 376.
Mahomet in the *Divine Comedy*, 5, 149.
Maidstone, John, 4, 42.
Mail-bag, lost from a stage-coach, 1, 80.
Mail-carrier in Italy, 1, 193.
Maine dew, 1, 92.
Maistre, Joseph de, 3, 26 ; on Protestantism, 4, 9 ; on what a man should know, 7, 191.
Major, John, on Izaak Walton's business, 8, 82.
Majorities, government by, Pollard's objections to, 6, 165.
Makeshifts, the American habit of acquiescing in, 7, 251.
Malahoodus River, moose-hunting on, 1, 109.
Malediction, Italian, the universal, 1, 204.
Malherbe and Horace compared, 8, 49.
Malone, 2, 277 ; 3, 236 ; 6, 150 ; verse-deaf, 2, 246.
Malory, Sir Thomas, 2, 164 ; his language, 3, 227 n.
Malta, secured by Britannia from the caldron of war, 1, 144.
Malvern Hill, battle of, 6, 134.
Man, reflected in Nature, 2, 149 ; Dante's conception of his highest end, 5, 58 ; the shortness of his days, 7, 169 ; converted into a Perfect Being, 8, 11 ; his development, 146 ; his apprenticeship, 147 ; his inventiveness, 148–151 ; his faculty of organization, 151 ; his necessity of conceiving an ideal, 153 ; his highest distinction and safeguard, 162. *See also*, Human nature ; Society ; Soul.
Mandrake's groan, superstitions concerning, 2, 304.
Manetti on the date of Dante's birth, 5, 7.
Manias, Sir K. Digby's cure for, 4, 65.
Mankind wiser than the single man, 2, 210.
Manliness exemplified in Fielding, 7, 76.
Mannerism and style, 3, 257.
Manners, their decline bewailed by R. M., the Cambridge constable, 1, 28 ; in Boston in earlier times, 2, 23.
Manners and morals under the Restoration, 3, 67.
Many-sidedness, the essence of culture, 7, 333.
Marathon, 1, 225.

Mare's nests the delight of the German scholar, 4, 92.
Marie de France, 2, 208, 222; her treatment of final and medial *e*, 244.
Marini, 2, 416.
Marlay, Chief Justice, congratulates Dryden, 3, 106 n.
Marlborough, 2, 95, 132.
Marlowe, 8, 197–227; his birth and education, 204; his death, 204; a liberal thinker, 205; a lavish and grandiose writer, 206; no characters in his plays, 217; his influence on Shakespeare, 213; on Keats and Milton, 225, 226; unerring in his poetic instinct, 227; his verse, 2, 246; 5, 302, 304; characterized, 2, 307; his unrhymed pentameter, 3, 223; his language, 235; 5, 297 n; on hell, 69.
Drayton on, 8, 208, 209; Chapman on, 209.
Come live with me, 8, 86, 90; *Dido, Queen of Carthage*, 206–208; Dr. Faustus quoted, 5, 285 n; 7, 285; 8, 220–225; Edward II., 8, 213–215; Hero and Leander, 225; Tamburlaine, 5, 298; 8, 206–208; passage taken from Shakespeare, 4, 297 n; quoted, 292.
Maroons, of Surinam, 6, 283.
Marriage ceremony, the "with all my worldly goods," etc., 6, 12.
Marseillaise, 5, 174.
Marshall, Chief Justice, anecdote of, 5, 236.
Marston, his dramatic works reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 281; the editor's poor English, 290; his general incompetency, 293–306; sometimes deviates into poetry, 296; his *Sophonisba*, 296; on slavery, 297; a middling poet, 300; his neologisms, 3, 223.
Martial on snow, 1, 358.
Martin, Martin, his Description of the Western Islands, 1, 131.
Martin's thermometer, 1, 263.
Martineau, Miss, on Wordsworth's conversation, 5, 225 n.
Martyrs, 6, 398; their stakes the mile-stones of Christianity, 13.
Marvell, 3, 66; 5, 50; on the Dutch, 1, 308; Horatian ode, and elegy, 3, 27; on Charles I., 5, 259.
Marvellous, the, its fascination, 3, 203.
Mary, Queen of Scots, in the *Faery Queen*, 4, 283 n.
Maryland, Pinckney's denunciation of slavery in the Assembly in 1789, 6, 172.
Masculine quality of Emerson, 2, 136, 393, 402.
Mason, George, of Virginia denounced slavery, 6, 176.
Mason, Captain John, 4, 66; his account of the dissolution of Parliament in 1655, 40; on disorders of Cromwell's soldiers, 42.
Mason, William, his *Caractacus* and *Elfrida*, 2, 172.
Mason and Dixon's lines not to be drawn in the world of ethics, 6, 9.
Masquerades, English, 1, 234.
Massachusetts, compared with Virginia in its early institutions, 4, 18; the village school-house described, 20; her loyalty to the general government, 6, 84; at the Philadelphia convention of 1866, 352; abolition of property qualification for suffrage, 7, 7; financial probity of the state, 7; Irish peasants on the worn-out farms of, 23; its condition at the time of the founding of Harvard College, 174; the religious enthusiasm and business sagacity of its founders, 177; their public spirit shown in their care for edu-

cation, 178; her debt to the graduates of Harvard, 188. *See also*, New England.
Massachusetts Hall. *See* Harvard College.
Massinger, Philip, his birth and boyhood, 8, 293; his education, 294; his connection with the stage, 296; Sir Henry Herbert's condemnation of two plays, now lost, 296; his probable politics, 297, 299; free expression of his opinions, 298; not unlike Mr. Ruskin on some points, 299; a man of large sympathies, 299; the *Roman Actor* quoted, 300–302; his burial, 303; number of his plays, 303; their excellent qualities, 303, 304; occasional foulness of his lower characters, 305; Lamb's estimate of, 305; his improbabilities never impossible, 308; inferior as a poet, excellent as a dramatist, 309; Coleridge on his versification, 2, 239.
Massinger and Ford, 8, 293–315.
Masson, his edition of Milton. *See* Milton — *Poetical Works*.
his *Life of Milton*, its length and slow accomplishment, 5, 245; the large space occupied by contemporary history, 248; unessential matters treated with too great detail, 249; compared to Allston's picture of Elijah in the Wilderness, 251; his impertinent details of a pseudo-dramatic kind, 253; his unsuitable familiarity, 256; instances of vulgarity of treatment, 257; of attempted humor, 257; his style stilted in speaking of every-day matters, 259; his inappropriate figures, 259; his unhappy infection with the *vivid* style, 262; his minuteness of detail and diffuseness, 264; discusses the possibility of Milton's military training, 266; his fondness for hypothetical incidents, 268; the valuable matter in his volumes, 269; lacks skill as a story-teller, 270; his analyses of Milton's prose writings and of the pamphlets written against him, 276; failure to draw a living portrait of Milton, 278; on Milton's versification, 299; his fruitful researches in regard to Milton, 8, 120; *also*, 7, 286.
Mate, Chief, anecdotes of X, 1, 137.
Material prosperity, danger of an absorption in, 7, 277.
Materialism, 4, 426; the occasion of both superstition and unbelief, 3, 210; Dante on, 5, 103 n.
Mather, Cotton, bewailed the attractions of the tavern, 1, 43; his part in the witchcraft delusion, 4, 15; the *Magnalia*, its vices of style and of thought, 3, 53 n; his pedantry, 7, 181; *also*, 2, 278, 393; 4, 85.
Mather, Increase, on the Devil, 2, 284.
Remarkable Providences, reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 278; the poor English of the editor, 283; his inaccuracies, 284, 288.
Maundeville, Sir John, cited, 2, 372.
Maury, Alfred, on the origin of the witches' Sabbath, 3, 154; on witchcraft, 200.
Mayflower, the ship, 6, 148.
Mazarin, Cardinal, put a stop to exorcism, 3, 181; his motto, 6, 232.
Mazeppa, 1, 163.
Meaning of words, intensity supposed to be gained by mere aggregation, 1, 57.
Mechanics, American, 7, 113.
Medal, the world compared to, 1, 65.

Med. Facs. of Harvard College, 1, 54.
Mediæval art demands revolting types, 5, 68.
Mediæval literature, Ovid's influence on, 2, 195.
Medicine, Bacon on the quack in medicine compared to the practical man in politics, 7, 236.
Mediocrity, the true Valhalla of, 2, 352.
Mediterranean, In the, 1, 136–144; phosphorescence in, 125; the hot nights, 139; the Chief Mate's opinion of, 139.
Melancthon on a possessed girl's knowledge of Virgil, 3, 175 n.
Memoirs, contemporary, their value, 2, 17.
Memory, 7, 83; quickened in process of drowning, 1, 39; whipping a benefit to, 3, 3.
Ménage, his warning against catching fire, 1, 344.
Mendelssohn, Lessing's friendship with, 4, 131; Lessing's last letter to, 149.
Mendez Pinto, Ferdinand, his exaggerations, 1, 7.
Mendicancy, a liberal profession in Rome, 1, 244. *See also*, Beggars.
Mephistopheles, his opportunity, 1, 43; connection with Vulcan, 3, 154.
Mercer, Rev. Dr., of Newport, R. I., gives a bust of Coleridge to Westminster, 7, 81.
Mercy, Langland on, 2, 231.
Merlin, 1, 106; 2, 364; 3, 171.
Mermaid, autobiography of, imagined, 4, 206.
Mermaid Tavern, the, 8, 182.
Merman, Webster's story of a merman bishop, 1, 132.
Merope. *See* Arnold, Matthew.
Metaphor and simile, 2, 430.
Metaphors not arguments, 7, 14; extravagant metaphors in French dramatic poetry, 3, 75. *See also*, Similes.
Metaphysicians, 1, 261.
Meteoric showers, 1, 236.
Meteorological ambitions of country dwellers, 1, 263.
Meteorological observations, 1, 265.
Methuselah, the possibilities of his biography considered, 5, 246.
Metre. *See* English prosody; Verse.
Mexican War, 7, 258.
Mexicans, conversion of, by the Spaniards, 2, 264.
Mexico, 2, 4.
Michael Angelo, the character of his work, 1, 232, 241; his sonnets compared with Petrarch's, 4, 200; his chamber in Florence, 5, 5; his Dawn, 299; *also*, 1, 24; 3, 35; 5, 4, 30, 309.
Michelet, 6, 149.
Michigan, the case of her secession supposed, 6, 67.
Middle Ages, sympathy with, 1, 249; imaged in the *Divina Commedia*, 5, 50.
Middling poets, 2, 300.
Military genius, its two varieties, 6, 118.
Military leader, sympathy for a defeated, 6, 115; idealized by his country, 116.
Millington, Miss, on the Prince of Wales's motto, 3, 230 n.
Millstones, the sympathy of kindred pursuits compared to, 1, 142.
Milo, 2, 258.
Milor in partibus, 1, 148.
Milton, 5, 245–312; his figure invested with a halo of sacredness, 255; his personal dignity, 255, 294; his sense of his own greatness, 258; his manner little affected by other English poets, 264; believed himself set apart for a divine mission, 268, 273; his work as a controversialist desultory and ephemeral, 270; essentially a doctrinaire, 271; his training poetical

and artistic, 272 ; identified himself with his controversies, 272, 274, 310 ; the finer passages in his prose, 272 ; his prose valuable for its style and inspiration, 273 ; his egotism in sympathy with the national egotism of the Jews, 274 ; literature with him an end not a means, 276 ; the formation of his style, 276 ; the circumstances of his life, 277 ; peculiarities of his vocabulary, 279 ; his spelling, 280 ; his avoidance of harsh combinations of sounds, 285 ; his use of the *sh* and *ch* sound, 285 ; a harmonist rather than a melodist, 289 ; his greatness in the larger movements of metre, 289 ; his use of alliteration, assonance, and rhyme, 290 ; not always careful of the details of his verse, 291 ; his imagination diffuses itself, not condenses, 292 ; his fondness for indefinite epithets, 292 ; he generalizes instead of specifying, 293 ; his occasional use of abrupt pauses, 294 ; his respect for his own work, 294 ; the sustained strength of his beginnings, 294 ; parallel passages in earlier authors, 298 ; his elisions, 299, 305 n ; his few unmanageable verses, 304 ; his love of tall words, 308 ; the most scientific of our poets, 309 ; his haughty self-assertion, 309 ; his self-consciousness, 310 ; his grand loneliness and independence of human sympathy, 312 ; his versification, 2, 246 ; 4, 271 n ; 5, 299 ; Marlowe his teacher, 2, 307 ; he dies in obscurity, 407 ; his literary opinions reflected in Phillips's *Theatrum Poetarum*, 408 ; translated, 413 ; regarded theology above poetry, 427 ; studied by Dryden, 3, 19, 50 ; his evident sympathy with Satan, 217 ; quality of his imagination, 260 ; his manner, 260 ; instances of reduplication of sense, 271 ; Roger Williams's notices of, as secretary of the Council, 4, 37 ; a student of Spenser, 264, 267 n, 299 ; gradual change of his opinions, 278 n ; in Florence, 5, 5 ; had read Dante closely, 35 ; the movement of his mind compared to the trade-wind, 228 ; the abuse bestowed upon, compared with the treatment of Keats, 323 ; his work saved by its style, 7, 73 ; in many respects an ancient, 8, 5 ; on copyright, 119 ; his tract on Divorce, 119, 120 ; denounced by the Stationers, 119 ; censor of the press, 122 ; not a democrat in the modern sense, 123 ; his unconscious mental reservation, 124 ; Coleridge on, 126 ; his influence on Burke, 126 ; his prose works never popular, 126 ; his prose often difficult and coarse, 128 ; his blank verse unrivalled, 129 ; a mint-master of language, 129 ; the most eloquent of Englishmen, 130 ; incorrectly taxed with Latinism, 130 ; his unusual English words, 131 ; as an adversary, 131 ; incomparable efficacy of parts of his prose writings, 132.

compared with Shakespeare, 3, 260 ; with Burke in political wisdom, 5, 271 ; with Dante, 53, 64 ; with Dante in the circumstances of his life, 278 ; in character, 311.

on winter, 1, 349 ; on decorum in poetry, 2, 408 ; on Dryden, 3, 25 ; on fugitive and cloistered virtue, 4, 192 ; on Spenser, 277 ; 5, 106 n ; on union with truth, 161 n ; on the collectors of personal traditions of the Apostles, 250 ; on his morning exercise, 265 ; on his political writings, 276.

Dryden on his rhymes, 3, 19 ;

Pope on, 5, 311; Masson's Life of, *see* Masson.
Areopagitica, 8, 115–133; origin of, 120; a plea in his own behalf, 120; part of a larger scheme, 121; embodies the principle of universal toleration, 122; produced little immediate effect, 124; reprinted with preface by Thomson, 126; its spirit, 133; compared with his other tracts, 5, 273; a plea rather than an argument, 275; *Comus*, the Lady (Countess of Carbery) described by Taylor, 2, 459; source of the "airy tongues," 5, 298; History of Britain, 8, 123; Iconoclastes, 119; *Lycidas*, 2, 439; 5, 289; Dr. Johnson on, 3, 20; Masson on the "two-handed engine," 5, 260; verse suggested by Spenser, 4, 269 n; *Nativity Ode*, 5, 289; *Paradise Lost*, compared with the *Divine Comedy*, 53; Keats's comments on, 322; its feeling of vastness, 292, 294; its didactic parts, 295; *Paradise Regained* quoted, 274 n; *Poetical Works*, Masson's edition, 278; his discussions of Milton's language and spelling, 279, 280, 295; the notes very good, 297; the treatment of versification, 299; *Reason of Church-Government*, 8, 127; *Samson Agonistes*, 5, 284 n, 309; its success as a reproduction, not imitation of Greek tragedy, 2, 172; Second Defence, 8, 121, 122; *Solemn Music*, 5, 289; — *Sonnet to Cromwell*, 3, 27; — *Sonnet, When the Assault was intended on the City*, 5, 257.
Mimetic power, 4, 182.
Minerva, in a Paris bonnet, 1, 224.
Miniato, San, the annual procession of monks to, 1, 128.
Minnesingers, 2, 198; sunrise on land compared to, 1, 128.
Mirabeau, Carlyle's picture of, 2, 67.
Mirabeau, Bailli of, on the English political constitution, 7, 32.
Miracle Plays, English, 8, 172; French, 174.
Mirror for Magistrates, 4, 236; 8, 199.
Mishaps, like knives, to be taken properly, 1, 4.
Misjudgment, the right of private, 8, 118.
Misprints, 2, 291; examples of, in Marston's works, 294, 302.
Mississippi steamboats, 2, 168.
Missouri Compromise, 6, 174, 177.
Mobs, 6, 165; Napoleon's rules for dealing with, 103; the only many-headed tyrant, 369; in democratic cities, 7, 21.
Mock-heroic, the, 2, 443.
Models, artists', 1, 210.
Moderation, 6, 391.
Modern civilization, the reaction against its softening effect, 6, 307.
Modern Languages, The Study of, 7, 305–336.
Modern languages, invented at Shinar, 7, 305; add largely to our resources, 325; importance of studying, 331; improvement in methods of teaching, 332, 333; the literature of, 336.
Modern life more prosaic, 2, 18.
Modern literature, individualism of, 2, 124; its self-consciousness, 2, 184; its true origins among the Trouvères, 204; the representation of common sense its office, 459; its extravagance, 3, 256.
Modern Spirit, the, a borrower from the Pied Piper of Hamelin, 8, 141.
Mohra, Sweden, witches of, in 1670, 3, 148.
Molière, accused of plagiarism, 2, 194; his comic power, 308; in-

fluenced by Cervantes, 7, 164; *also*, 3, 279, 287.
Mommsen gives us the beef-tea of history, 2, 17.
Monarchy, Dante on universal, 5, 41; the force of prestige and sentiment in, 6, 227.
Money, its use abjured by some zealous transcendentalists, 2, 132; of a sincere man, 4, 186; effect of the credit system upon, 5, 4.
Monomania of Don Quixote, 7, 158.
Monopodes, 1, 134.
Monotony of the sea, 1, 122.
Monroe, Fortress, 6, 398.
Monroe doctrine to be put in practice by the South, 6, 394.
Monstrosities heralded as wonders, 3, 237.
Montagu, Lady Mary Wortley, 2, 131; 8, 119; Pope's relations to, 2, 464.
Montaigne, in his tower, 1, 129; his objects in travel, 147; in Rome, 250; the Ecclesiastes of the 16th century, 2, 75; his range narrow but deep, 136; his originality, 144; the first modern writer and critic, 4, 157; his confessions, 206; disbelieved in witchcraft, 3, 199; his credulity, 209; his *Essays*, 7, 109; *also*, 2, 17, 148, 275, 392; 3, 232, 277, 296, 302; 4, 204; 7, 200.
on Italy, 1, 151; on France, 306; on suicide, 3, 55 n; on education, 7, 184.
Carlyle on, 2, 63.
Montefiore, Sir Moses, requests that prayers be offered in Palestine for President Garfield's recovery, 7, 48.
Montesquieu, 7, 11.
Monticelli, 1, 172.
Moon, Chapman's line on, 1, 127; its "scoffing away" the clouds, 143; in winter, 374; responsible in some degree for the weather, 2, 210.
Moonlight on the sails at sea, 1, 126.
Moonrise, on the Penobscot, 1, 108; in winter, 374.
Moore, Edward, *Gamester*, the possible source of Lessing's *Miss Sara Sampson*, 4, 108.
Moore, Frank, *Rebellion Record*, its defects, 6, 303; its value, 304.
Moore, Thomas, fondness for similes, 1, 124; his influence traced on J. G. Percival, 2, 108; his friendship with Byron, 4, 180; his pilgrimage to Les Charmettes, 180; his life a sham, 182; *also*, 5, 216 n.
on French heroic verse, 3, 78 n; on Rousseau, 4, 180.
Moosehead Journal, 1853, 1, 71–117.
Moosehead Lake, trip up the lake on a steamer, 1, 84; paddling to the Northwest Carry, 98–102; across the Carry, 102; passage into the west branch of the Penobscot, 107.
Moose-hunting by night, incidents of, 1, 109.
Moral and æsthetic defects, their connection, 2, 69.
Moral dilettante, 4, 197.
Moral forces in war, 2, 79.
Moral laws, 6, 274.
Moral poetry, French success in, 2, 429.
Moral supremacy, 5, 5.
Morals and science, the advance in, compared, 5, 159.
Moralist distinguished from the Artist, 5, 57.
Morality and æsthetics, 4, 185.
More, Henry, on witchcraft, 3, 144, 188; 4, 14; on the stench left by the Devil, 3, 153; on Spenser, 4, 277.
Moretum. *See* Virgil.
Mormonism, its claim to antiquity of no influence, 6, 16.

Morning, at sea and on shore compared, 1, 127; in the Roman streets, 180.
Morra, the game, 1, 180.
Morris, General, passage cited, 3, 275.
Morris, Richard, on Chaucer's verse, 2, 237.
Morse, Royall, the Cambridge constable, 1, 27.
Morton, Eliza Susan, wife of President Quincy, 2, 34.
Mosquitoes in the woods, 1, 100.
Mother Goose, versification of, 2, 237.
Mothers of great men, 5, 182.
Motley, J. L., on the Dutch, 1, 308.
Mountain names, 1, 85.
Mountain towns of Italy, 1, 203.
Mountains, are geological noses, 1, 85; appreciation of their sublimity, 116; the sun as seen from the top of, 126; the bloom on, 137, 156; between Genezzano and Olevano, 202; the fondness for, 337; *also*, 5, 312.
Mouskes, Philippe, his verse, 2, 247.
Mozart, 4, 119; on Gellert, 2, 178.
Mud-wagon, ride in, 1, 82.
Muggleton, 3, 284.
Muggletonians, 1, 46.
Munroe, Mayor, of New Orleans, 4, 71.
Murfreesboro, battle of, 6, 135.
Muse, the, a companion, not a guide, 2, 88.
Muses have no fancy for statistics, 2, 7.
Music, a knowledge of, important to a poet, 2, 410.
Musquash, 1, 267.
Musset, Alfred de, a passage compared with Dryden, 3, 85 n.
Muster, in Old Cambridge, 1, 42.
Mutual admiration, 4, 156.
Mutual admiration society described by Goldsmith, 4, 135.
Mylius, Lessing's tutor, 4, 114
Mylner of Abington, Hazlitt on, 2, 355.
Mysterious, the, its disappearance from the world, 1, 134.
Myths, origin and transformations of, 3, 168.
Mythology, tendency of the mind to assign improbable causes to unaccountable gifts, 1, 106; the imagination the chief agent in the growth of, 3, 121.

Nakedness of mind frequently unheeded, 1, 5.
Names, mountain names, 1, 85; lines on names of places, 86; the associations connected with, 2, 5; Milton's use of, 5, 298; value of, 325; the limitations of, 7, 237.
Nannucci, intorno alle voci usate da Dante, 5, 62 n.
Napier, 1, 105.
Naples. *See also*, Neapolitans.
Napoleon I., his portrait in the Cambridge barber's shop, 1, 25; fails to recognize Bolivar, 2, 16; compared with Frederick the Great, 2, 95; recipe for saving life in dealing with a mob, 6, 103; at St. Helena, 120; the moralist's view of, 159; on the French Revolution, 7, 32; *also*, 4, 179; 6, 30.
Napoleon III., 6, 30, 159; unappreciated before the *coup d'état* of 1851, 155; *also*, 8, 64.
Nares, Archdeacon, 8, 104.
Narrative, who can write it well, 1, 145; wearisome to Carlyle, 2, 81.
Narrative poetry, 2, 252; faults of, 4, 285. *See also*, Descriptive poetry.
Narrow range of many great men, 2, 136.
Nash on Harvey's hexameters, 4, 236 n.
National character, the effect on, of

postponing moral to material interests, 6, 108.
National instinct in the Prussian people, 2, 78.
National pride of the Old World and the New, 4, 3.
National success, the true measure of, 7, 209.
Nationality, its germ in provincialism, 2, 11; hampered in America, 12; in poetry, 2, 114; in literature, tending to disappear, 117; as a quality in literature, 4, 227; 7, 141; the feeling lacking in America before the Civil War, 6, 261; its effect on the life of man, 266.
Nations, their manhood tried by dangers and opportunities, 6, 78; their readiness to accept a hero, 116; symbolized as women, 117; the sins of, 159.
Natural, the meaning in the word varies from one generation to another, 3, 183.
Natural right, the right of superior force is the only, 8, 158.
Naturalness, 2, 147; in literature, 60, 258. *See also*, Unconventionality.
Nature, Moore's view of, 1, 124; the free shows provided by, 337; the love of, a modern thing, 341; modern sentimentalism about, 2, 147; man's connection with, its most interesting aspect, 148; in Thoreau's writings, 153; her indifference to man, 170; Chaucer's love of, 256; ignored by French criticism, 416; the early view of, 3, 122; as viewed by Rousseau and the sentimentalists, 4, 212; its double meanings, 5, 164; Wordsworth on the infinite variety of, 189; its effect on the imaginative and the solitary, 7, 126; descriptions of, as employed by the great poets, 134. *See also*, Landscape; Scenery; Views.
Nature of things, the difficulty of discovering and of accommodating our lives to, 7, 146.
Nature-cure of Wordsworth and others, 5, 238.
Navagero, Bernardo, on the classes in Austria in 1546, 7, 10.
Neapolitans, their laziness, 1, 157.
Neatness, a characteristic of Washington Allston, 1, 36; the faculty of, bestowed by destiny on some men, 37.
Nebuchadnezzar cited as an instance of men turned into beasts, 3, 169.
Neglect not an evidence of genius, 2, 111.
Negro plots in New York in 1741, 3, 186.
Negro suffrage, advocated, 6, 279; insisted upon as essential, 319; demanded by the Radical party, 371; not to be expected from the South itself, 381. *See also*, Reconstruction.
Negroes, effect of slavery upon, 6, 275; prejudice against, less strong at the South, 283. *See also*, Colored soldiers; Freedmen; Slavery.
Nelson, his conception of his country, 7, 127.
Neptune in a *tête-à-tête*, rather monotonous, 1, 122.
Neptune, planet, discovery of, 6, 149.
Nero, Leopoldo's historical scapegoat, 1, 169.
Netherlands, Dante's system compared to the Constitution of, 5, 42.
New England two centuries ago, 4, 3–87; the record of its history in the life of to-day, 3; faith in God, in man, and in work, the spirit of its founders, 4; its history dry and unpicturesque seen from without, 5; the central idea and intention of its founders, 6; reaction of their principles upon

England, 6; the humorous side of its history brought out by Irving, and the poetic by Cooper, 7, 8; the charge of fanaticism unfounded, 9, 12; the founders builders from the beginning, not destroyers, 11; enthusiasts but not fanatics, 12; the settlement of New England a business venture, 12; dealings with sectaries, 13; the witchcraft delusion, 14; decline of Puritanism, 15; New England the outgrowth of English Puritanism, 16; the early establishment of common schools, 19; its far-reaching importance, 22; the "Winthrop Papers," 26; Cromwell's opinion of, 39; the temperance question, 49; difficulties of domestic service, 49; interest in alchemy, 54, 59; Edward Howes, 54; Jonathan Brewster, 59; Sir Kenelm Digby, 65; Captain Underhill, 67; Coddington, 73; the Quakers, 76; the Indians, 79; John Tinker, 81; the decline of Puritan vigor, 84; increase of provincialism after 1660, 84; the interest of New England history gregarious rather than personal, 85; the growth of democracy, 86; the eremitic instinct in, 1, 56; its small place in the world's history, 2, 3; of fifty years ago, 5, 196; the so-called radicalism of, 6, 337; the first settlers a practical though sometimes an impracticable people, 7, 99; early musket-ball currency, 99; Robinson and Brewster on the mutual obligations of the early colonists, 116; Stoughton on the choice material of its planting, 177; made a good market for books by the presence of the College, 181; influence of Harvard College upon, 185; a college education prized in old times, 203; its leading industries being drawn to the South, 264. *See also*, America; American; Massachusetts; Puritans; Yankee.

New England church-architecture, 1, 15.

New England clergy, formerly an establishment and an aristocracy, 1, 51; their character and influence, 7, 175; the clergy of the 17th and 18th centuries, 186; their descendants, 188.

New England life, some sentiment of the sea essential to it, 1, 32; fostered the belief in witchcraft, 3, 186; its intellectual independence secured by the founding of Harvard College, 7, 174; its character in 18th century, 187.

New England pronunciation, 4, 81.

New England school-house described, 4, 20.

Newfoundland, a British parson's prophecy for, 1, 320.

Newfoundlanders say fish when they mean cod, 7, 308.

Newman, the white-and-yellow-washer in Cambridge, 1, 21.

Newman, Cardinal, on Homeric metre, 2, 323.

Newness, unsatisfying, 1, 76.

New Orleans, 6, 389.

Newspaper, suppressed by the General Court of Massachusetts, 8, 116.

Newspaper boy, his mercantile interest in horrors, 1, 75.

Newspaper correspondents, Noah the patron saint of, 1, 123.

Newspaper editor, the, 8, 159, 160.

Newspaper speculations on politics, 1, 265.

Newspapers, American, 2, 119; the public demand for fresh gossip, 6, 296; value of their contemporary picture of life, 297; make the whole nation a great town meeting, 301; give publicity to grievances, 7, 10; their unimportant

and belittling gossip, 106; their power, 210; their references to bribery and political machinery, 244; a needed sanctuary from, 8, 307, 308. *See also*, Journalism.
Newton, Sir Isaac, 5, 45; 6, 17.
New Testament, dynamite in the, 8, 160.
New World epic, its protagonist, 4, 8.
New York, its wrangle with Boston, 2, 10; the imagined negro plots in 1741, 3, 186.
Niagara Falls, the first sight of, compared to the first sight of St. Peter's, 1, 226.
Nibelungen Lied, 2, 117, 3, 168; Frederick the Great's contempt for, 2, 92; published by Bodmer in 1757, 413; its character, 5, 130.
Nicallson, Joseph, 4, 74.
Nicholas, Sir Harris, his Life of Chaucer, 2, 187; his Life of Walton, 8, 77, 78, 81, 83, 101, 104.
Nicknames, 1, 20.
Nicolai, Chr. Fr., 4, 131.
Nightingale. *See under* Birds.
Nightmare, 3, 124.
Nimroud, palaces of, 1, 34.
Noah, remarks on his life at sea, 1, 123.
Noble, Mark, *History of the House of Cromwell*, 5, 212 n.
Noon in St. Peter's, Rome, 1, 235.
Norman crusaders, 1, 325.
Norman Trouvères. *See* Trouvères.
Normans, their influence on the development of epic poetry, in France and England, 2, 208; influence on English character and literature, 216.
Norman-French literature, contempt for emancipated serfs expressed in, 6, 373.
North, the. *See* United States — *North*.
Northcote, his story of the violin-player and George III., 5, 316.
Northmen, 2, 216.
Northwest Carry on Moosehead Lake, 1, 102.
Nose, talking through, 1, 313, 319.
Nostradamus, 6, 155.
Notoriety, 5, 6; in America, 2, 9.
Notoriety and fame, 2, 3; 5, 6.
Nott, 6, 270.
Novalis, 2, 153; 3, 129.
Novels. *See* Fiction.
Novelty, danger of substituting it for truth, 2, 88.
Nursing children, 4, 187.
Nymphidia. *See* Drayton.

Oak, Wordsworth's life compared to, 5, 218.
Oath, manner of taking, 2, 384.
Oaths. *See* Imprecations; Swearing.
Obituary of Lady Gosling, 4, 155.
Oblivion, the next best thing to fame or infamy, 2, 350.
Obscure authors, the reparation time brings them, 2, 349; the pathos of, 351.
Observation, honest, difficulty of securing, 1, 145.
Obtuseness of men to their own follies, verses on, 1, 46.
Occasion. *See* Opportunity.
Occleve, 2, 227; his portrait of Chaucer, 186.
Ocean. *See* Sea.
Odium æstheticum, 5, 173.
Œdipus, the feeling of Laius toward, 1, 308.
Offor, George, editor of Mather's *Providences*, his poor English, 2, 283; his inaccuracies, 284, 288.
Ogier le Danois, 2, 209.
Oglethorpe, 2, 25.
Okey, Colonel, 4, 29.
Old age, 1, 338; of Josiah Quincy, 2, 45; Langland's lines on, 231; Dante on, 5, 75; absence of decided opinions in, 7, 3.

Old Authors, Library of, 2, 273–387.
Old books, 2, 273; the associations clustering about them, 276.
Old English Dramatists, The, 8, 167–196; earlier volume on, 169; who they were, 177; their use of their native tongue, 185; many of them dull, 186; had no dramatic genius, 193; our ignorance of their personal history, 253.
Old Testament, its triumphs of well-measured words, 8, 130.
Old ways, love of, 1, 294.
Oldest surviving graduate, his advantages, 1, 47.
Oldham, Dryden and Hallam on, 3, 96.
Olevano, visit to, 1, 205; the view, 205.
Olive-trees near Tivoli, 1, 166.
Oliver and Fierabras, 2, 205.
Olympic games of the nations, 2, 11.
Omar, Caliph, his example in burning libraries to be followed by politicians, 7, 233.
Oneida, 1, 281.
Onions, 1, 22.
Opera, as an approach to ancient drama, 2, 170.
Opinion, the kinship of, 7, 220.
Opinion, public. *See* Public opinion.
Opinion and affection, Selden on, 4, 133.
Opinions, 7, 193; other people's, 1, 305.
Opium, Coleridge's use of, 7, 90.
Opportunity, 2, 9, 145; 5, 215 n; the imperturbable old clock of, 1, 35; in the lives of men and of nations, 6, 331.
Opportunity and danger, 6, 78.
Oppression, 6, 251; its moral effect on the oppressor, 273.
Optimism of Cervantes, 7, 144.
Orange, Prince of, his camp, 4, 66.
Oratorio as the representative of ancient drama, 2, 171.
Oratory, Emerson's power, 2, 402; popular oratory in the United States, 6, 326.
Orestes, his case brought before the Areopagus, 3, 177 n.
Orford, Earl of, listened to Statius when drunk, 2, 168.
Organ-music, 1, 122.
Origin of man, its diversity proved by the Roman beggars, 1, 242.
Original sin and the Emperor, 4, 27.
Originality, 1, 241; 2, 174; 3, 57, 316; absolute originality impossible, 2, 144; its essential quality, 144, 192, 194; 4, 105; 5, 341; healthiness necessary to, 2, 185; stirred by Emerson's lectures, 397; gets rid of self-hood, 4, 203; the measure of, 260; distinguished from eccentricity, 5, 176; must not be sought, 220; the result of imagination, 7, 61; by itself does not assure permanence, 130. *See also*, Imitation.
of Washington Allston, 1, 41; Thoreau's attempts at, 2, 143; of Chaucer, 263; of Rousseau, 4, 189; of Dante, 5, 163.
Orléans, Bishop of, exposes a pretended case of possession, 3, 206.
Orléans, Ch. d', on winter, 1, 346.
Orr, Governor, 6, 352.
Orrery on mistakes in speaking and writing English, 3, 43 n.
Orthodoxy, Lessing on, 4, 150.
Ossian, Thoreau on, 2, 140.
Ostend Manifesto, 6, 177.
Ostrich, Dryden's style compared to, 3, 25.
Otherwise-mindedness, common to Old England and New England, 8, 115.
Ottimo Comento, on Dante's horoscope, 5, 9; on Dante's separation from the other Ghibellines, 19; on Dante's use of words, 28; quoted, 150.

Out-of-the-way, loved by Thoreau, 2, 143.
Overbury, Sir Thomas, on his milkmaid, 2, 184; his *Characters* reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 278.
Ovid, his failure to compose a treatise on the language of the Getæ, 1, 145; influence on mediæval literature, 2, 195; Dryden on, 3, 99; gives hints of sentimentalism, 4, 197; Spenser in Ireland compared to Ovid in Pontus, 245; *also*, 1, 288, 345.
Owen, Robert, remark to Wilberforce, 8, 115.
Owls. *See under* Birds.
Oxford, Dante's possible visit to, 5, 10; elections at, 6, 284.
Oxford University, Dryden on, 3, 15; the spell of its venerable associations, 7, 169.
Oyster, the traveller beset by *ciceroni* compared to, 1, 160.
Oyster-men in Cambridge, the twin-brothers Snow, 1, 30.
Ozanam, on Dante, 5, 56, 123 n.

P. = Prof. Popkin.
Paddling on Moosehead Lake, 1, 98.
Pagan divinities, their survival in the superstitions of Christianity, 3, 131.
Paganism divides from one's sympathies more than time, 1, 250.
Paine, Thomas, 4, 179.
Painting, Allston the greatest English painter of historical subjects, 1, 40; pyramidal theory of composition, 3, 317. *See also*, Picture galleries.
Palestrina, visit to, 1, 186; the locandiera's praises of her daughter, 221.
Palfrey, estimate of Hugh Peter, 4, 35.
Palm Sunday in St. Peter's, 1, 231.
Palmerston, 2, 8.
Pamphlets, during the English Civil War, 8, 115, 117.
Pan, 5, 228; identified with the Devil by Bodin, 3, 154.
Panaceas, social, 2, 69.
Panic, cruelty the result of, 3, 185.
Pantheism, 7, 126; in Pope's *Essay on Man*, 2, 448, 453.
Panurge, 2, 33.
Papacy, lies dead in the Vatican, 1, 184; Dante on its relations to the Empire, 5, 142. *See also*, Roman Catholicism.
Paracelsus, 2, 167.
Paradise of Dainty Devices, 2, 236.
Parallelisms in history, 6, 156.
Paralogistic reasoning, 6, 157.
Pardoner and the Frere, quoted, 8, 173.
Paris, Dante's possible visit to, 5, 10.
Paris and Helen, 1, 31.
Paris, Gaston, 7, 184.
Parise la Duchesse, 2, 205.
Parker, Theodore, on the conception of democracy, 7, 18.
Parkman, Francis, opinion of the Indians, 2, 181.
Parliament, 7, 26.
Parnassus, its two peaks, 5, 201.
Parody, what is susceptible of, 3, 261.
Parris, minister at Salem, his character, 3, 201.
Parrot, duty demanded for, and consequent quarrel, 1, 199.
Parsons, T. W., translation of the *Inferno*, 5, 36.
Participles in *-ed*, 5, 283.
Particularization, 2, 259; Wordsworth's power of, 5, 227.
Partonopeus de Blois quoted, 7, 309.
Party allegiance, 7, 222.
Party government, in America, 6, 228; its evils, 7, 220; the necessity and the danger of, 256; the necessity for politicians and leaders, 257; the need of a neutral body

of independents, 258. *See also*, Political parties.
Party managers, 6, 351.
Party platforms, 7, 221 ; the strength of, 6, 45.
Parzival. *See* Wolfram von Eschenbach, 5, 133.
Pascal, Coleridge on, 7, 89.
Passages, 2, 59.
Passawompscot, visit at, 1, 218.
Passion, as portrayed by the great masters, 2, 160 ; passion and exaggeration, 424 ; in French literature, 428.
Passions, their freshness and force in Europeans, 1, 200 ; more important to greatness than intellect, 201 ; the expression of, in literature, 3, 258, 273.
Past, the, 2, 398 ; its consecration, 4 ; its life and customs, 27 ; memories of, 41 ; regret for the Good Old Times, 3, 209 ; its cumulative influence, 5, 5 ; looking back upon, compared to looking over the waves, 12 ; its power, 271 ; reverence for, 6, 16 ; its result seen in the present, 7, 151 ; still carried on our crupper, 167. *See also*, Antiquity ; History.
Pastoral poetry, 3, 286 ; 4, 242 ; in Spenser's time, 261 ; the language appropriate for, 262 n.
Pastourelles, 2, 263.
Patchwork coverlet, the work of the Chicago Convention of 1864 compared to, 6, 192.
Pateridge, Sir Miles, 6, 158.
Pathos in dramatic and narrative poetry, 3, 252.
of Lessing's grief, 4, 145 ; of Fielding, 7, 64 ; of Heine, 65 ; in *Don Quixote*, 147.
Patience, 2, 58.
Patricianism, 4, 6.
Patrick, Captain Daniel, 4, 66.
Patriotism, Roger Williams on the quality of, 4, 84 ; in Germany during the 17th century, 137 ; increased and extended by means of the telegraph, 6, 299 ; needed equally in peace as in war, 7, 228 ; its true meaning and value, 266 ; *also*, 6, 219. *See also*, Love of country.
Patronage, the geographical allotment of, 7, 260.
Paul, St., Dante's references to, 5, 101 n.
Paul and Virginia. *See* Bernardin de St. Pierre.
Peace, felt at twilight, 1, 293 ; Dante on, 5, 146 ; not to be purchased by the sacrifice of principle and pluck, 6, 12 ; not the housemate of cowardice, 90.
Pearson, Eliphalet, Principal of Phillips Academy, 2, 32.
Peasants. *See* Austrian peasants ; Italian peasants.
Pebbles on the beach, the lesson drawn from them, 1, 94.
Peculiarities of character less hidden in old times, 1, 62.
Pedagogus, St., 1, 44.
Pedantry, holds sacred the dead shells, 3, 167 ; of German 18th century literature, 4, 156 ; Montaigne began the crusade against, 157 ; the dangers of, 7, 184.
Peel, Sir Robert, gives Wordsworth a pension, 5, 217.
Peele, George, 8, 188.
Pegasus, 5, 317 ; supposed advertisement for, 230.
Pelli as a critic of Dante, 5, 56.
Pendleton, democratic candidate for Vice-President in 1864, 6, 191.
Penitence, Dryden's lines on, 3, 85.
Penn, William, 1, 289.
Penobscot River, the west branch, 1, 107.
Pentameters, rhymed, compared to thin ice, 3, 49 n.
Pepperell, Sir William, 2, 6.
Pepys, the only sincere diarist in English, 1, 146 ; value of his memories, 2, 18 ; his *Diary*, 3,

47 n; his perfect frankness and unconsciousness, 4, 206; *also*, 2, 55, 276.
on Dryden's *Annus Mirabilis*, 3, 47; on the *Maiden Queen*, 48 n; on the *Wild Gallant*, 62; on *Evening Love*, 64; on the *Indian Emperor*, acted at Court, 93 n.
Percival, James Gates, Life and Letters of, 2, 103–127; character of his poetry, 104; comparisons, 105, 106; his failure to learn that the world did not want his poetry, 106; compared with Akenside, 106; a professor of poetry rather than a poet, 107; his faculty artificial, not innate, 107; the literary influences to which he was subjected, 107; his unappeasable dulness, 110; his lack of systematic training, 110; his complaints of neglected genius, 111, 125; the times propitious to mediocrity, 112; hailed by the critics as the great American poet, 119; found tedious by the public, 120; an example of the too numerous class of feeble poets, 123; his miscellaneous equipment for work, 125; his opportunities and failures, 125; his attempt at suicide, 126; as a geologist and linguist, 127.
his *Imprecation*, 2, 108; *Mind*, 106; *Prometheus*, 104.
Perham, 2, 14.
Periodical publication, the fashion encourages sensationalism, 2, 58.
Periphrases, 2, 328, 417.
Perkins, Mr., the painful, 2, 17.
Persecution, Puritan attitude toward, 7, 176.
Persigny, 2, 8.
Personal equation, the, in literary judgment, 7, 326, 327.
Personality becoming of less account, 6, 161.
Personification, 2, 255; 4, 287; alphabetic, 3, 4; the natural instinct for, 7, 127.
Peru, 2, 4.
Peter of Abano, one of the earliest unbelievers in witchcraft, 3, 193.
Peter, St., his miracles in Rome, 1, 182; Southwell's version of his "Complaint," 2, 280.
Peter, Hugh, life and execution, 4, 28; his character, 30; his relations to Mrs. Sheffield, 31; Endicott's comment on, 32; his coquetting with Mrs. Ruth, 33; later notices of, 33; letter desiring an Indian servant, 50.
Petrarch, a sentimentalist, 1, 121; 2, 147; 4, 197; probability of Chaucer's meeting with, 187; his exquisite artifice, 197; Byron on his excellence in execution, 454; his understanding with Death, 4, 198; his moral inconsistency, 199; his sonnets compared with Michael Angelo's, 200; his influence on modern literature, 200; his genuine qualities, 201; *also*, 1, 341; 2, 85, 120; 5, 52.
Africa, 2, 167; *Laura*, 4, 317.
Pettigrew, Colonel, 6, 73.
Peucerus, Gaspar, on lycanthropy, 3, 170.
Pheidias, 3, 257 n.
Phi Beta Kappa Society, Emerson's oration before, 2, 137.
Philadelphia convention of 1866, compared to the Irishman's kettle of soup, 6, 349; compared to a circus, 351; its problem to make a patent reconciliation cement from fire and gunpowder, 353; compared to a ship stuck in a mud-bank, 354; the Resolutions and Address, 354; its real principle the power of the President, 355; its constituents, 355; attitude toward reconstruction, 369; the measures advocated, 389.

Philip, St., cited as a case of corporeal deportation, 3, 161.
Philip II., the ambassador's answer to, 2, 88.
Philips, Ambrose, description of ice-coated trees, 1, 363; his love for nature, 364.
Philisterei, the revolt against, 2, 134.
Philistines, 3, 109.
Phillips, Edward, his *Theatrum Poetarum* reflects Milton's judgments, 2, 407; on true poetry, 408; on the use of rhyme, 431.
Phillips, Wendell, of kin to Josiah Quincy, 2, 32.
Phillips Andover Academy, J. Quincy at, 2, 32.
Philosophical poetry, 7, 135.
Philosophy, Dante on, 5, 78, 98; symbolized by Beatrice in the *Vita Nuova*, 102.
Phineus, 5, 309.
Phœnix, 4, 55.
Phoibos, 2, 176.
Phosphorescence, at sea, 1, 125; 5, 273; verses on, 1, 125; a dirty scum in the daytime, 125.
Physical geography as the tenth Muse, 2, 118.
Pickens, Governor, 6, 89.
Pickens-and-Stealin's Rebellion, 6, 93–112.
Pickering, Sir Gilbert, 3, 16.
Picture galleries, difficulties of uninstructed visitors, 1, 248.
Picturesque, the, its money value in a town, 1, 17; often due to the quarrels of the Middle Ages, 203; the search for, 341; Carlyle's love of, 2, 70; in historical composition, 5, 252; 6, 151; Saint-Simon a master of, 5, 253; the hints given to the imagination, 262; in the civilization of a people, 6, 378.
Pie-plants (rhubarb) of Newman the white-washer in Cambridge, 1, 21.
Pierce, Franklin, letter on free elections, 6, 192.
Piers Ploughman. *See* Langland.
Piety confounded with dulness, 2, 281.
Pigsgusset, 1, 86.
Pike's Peak, 1, 86.
Pilgrim Fathers compared with the Israelites of the Exodus, 4, 3; their conception of a commonwealth, 87.
Pilgrim Society dinners, 4, 5.
Pincio, illumination of St. Peter's seen from, 1, 237.
Pinckney, William, on slavery, 6, 172.
Pinckney, Fort, 6, 73.
Pindar, his influence on Gray, 8, 39.
Pine-tree on the old New England money and flag, 1, 32.
Pine-trees seen against the twilight sky, 1, 108.
Pinto. *See* Mendez Pinto.
Pirates, their cruelty not to be wondered at, 1, 122.
Pisa, 1, 224.
Pisani, 5, 4.
Pitt, 2, 37.
Plagiarism, 3, 58; of the poets, 1, 351; in literature, 192.
Plainness of diction, 5, 341; in the Transcendental movement, 2, 132.
Plancus, Consul, 2, 41.
Plato, Dante's acquaintance with, 5, 46; Dante on, 101 n; compared with Aristotle, 159; *also*, 7, 4, 199.
Pleasantness, 7, 55.
Pliny, story of a haunted house, 3, 127; letter on the eruption of Vesuvius, 6, 297.
Plotinus, his commonwealth of philosophers, 2, 392.
Pluck, Carlyle's idolatry of, 2, 90.
Plurals, 5, 282.
Plutarch, 1, 305; 2, 17; 7, 110; on allegory, 2, 264; a delightful

story-teller, 8, 54; had a true sense of proportion, 72.
Poe, Edgar Allan, economized his inspiration, 8, 81.
Poem, compared to a painted window, 3, 289; compared to the apples of the Hesperides, 4, 223.
Poesy, a divine madness, 8, 4.
Poet, makes people see what everybody can look at, 1, 74; fills language again with the life which it has lost, 228; Victor Hugo's idea of his function, 2, 122; not exempt from the logic of life and circumstance, 123; compared to a silkworm, 194; the structural faculty necessary to, 221; his function to make the familiar novel, 233, 234; must keep alive traditions of the pure, the holy, and the beautiful, 461; question whether Pope be a great poet, 472; Dryden on the product of his later years, 3, 22; his language, 221; his rediscoveries of the world, 286; his creations contain more than he puts into them, 3, 316; two standards for the judgment of, 4, 259; his office to be a Voice, 5, 176; his function, 240; the power of his intellect over his feeling, 330; represents the youth of each new generation, 345; his view of history, 6, 152; not translatable, 8, 274.
Poets, modern poets, 2, 58; their characteristics to be recognized in their earliest works, 61; new poets, 157, 159; character of their debt to their predecessors, 2, 192; those who are good only for spurts, 258; improve after forty, according to Dryden, 3, 40; collections of, 4, 230; futility of critical essays upon, 7, 121; elegiac, 8, 83, 84; the uses of, 315.
Poets, great, Schiller on, 2, 92; extremely rare, 3, 215; the happiness of, 4, 258; all in a sense provincial, 5, 138; their office, 174; Wordsworth on the province of, 202; the exquisite sensibility of, 240; their infinite variety of topic, 7, 4.
Poetic expression, 3, 224; 5, 345.
Poetic form, 2, 175.
Poetic language, 3, 224; its balance of proportions, 231.
Poetical justice, 6, 157.
Poetry, Carlyle's contempt for, 2, 68; its proper object ideal, 77; what is demanded in, in a verse-writing generation, 103; life its only subject, 114; a rooted discontent underlies it, 114; influence of democracy upon, 115; introspection and feebleness of modern poetry, 124; conditions necessary for, 157; the physically intense school, 159; the maidenly reserve of its higher forms, 161; the question of plagiarism in, 192; Romanic tendency to the scientific treatment of, 202; does not spring from the Anglo-Saxon nature, 213; not made from the understanding, 215; the good fortune of early poets, 234; the "spasmodic" school, 309; artifice unsatisfactory, 415; its decline under French influence, 430; unconventionality essential, 430; the supreme function of, 3, 89 n; the action of the imagination in, 121; the quality of vividness of expression in, 249; great poets and secondary intellects distinguished, 257; schools of poetry, 257; the office of language in, 266; not to be pursued as a profession, 4, 126; character of profound poetry, 196; its true vitality, 223; the quality of nationality in, 227; description in, 229; its first duty to be delightful, 230; the conception of, in England, in 16th century, 260; importance of

diction in, 270; the sensuous and the sensual in, 280; value of abundance in, 293; the influence of character in, 5, 168; the question of matter and form, 176; the difference between Fact and Truth, 208; good poetry more fiercely resented than bad morals, 323; instructs not by precept, but by suggestion, 7, 133; of the eighteenth century, wanting in the imaginative quality, 8, 3; indiscretions make the charm of, 5; the difference between it and prose, 49; the neglect of, an unhealthy symptom, 196; as a criticism of life, 313; *also*, 3, 40. *See also*, American, Anglo-Norman, Anglo-Saxon, English, French, German, Provençal, Romance, Scotch, Teutonic poetry; — *also*, Ballad poetry; Descriptive poetry; Dramatic poetry; Epic poetry; Moral poetry; Narrative poetry; Pastoral poetry; Philosophical poetry; Religious poetry; Romantic poetry; Sacred poetry; Sonnet; Troubadours; Trouvères.

Bacon's definition of, 2, 121; Emerson's criticism of, 396; Edward Phillips on, 408; Voltaire makes Difficulty a tenth Muse, 415; Waller on care in writing, 422; Dryden on the end and character of, 3, 71; Fauriel on prosaic passages in, 79 n; Lessing on the cultivation of, 4, 129; Spenser's conception of, 267; Wordsworth's theories of, 5, 204, 223, 232; Sir John Harrington on, 235.

Poetry and prose, danger of mixing them, 3, 59; the distinction between them, 4, 129, 163, 295; Coleridge's distinction, 5, 207; 18th century ideas of their relation, 346.

Poggetto, Cardinal, 5, 29.

Police in Rome, 1, 254.

Polish, Waller on, 2, 423.

Political dogmas, their tendency to become dead formulas, 6, 45.

Political economy, humanity its most important element, 7, 34; value of the study, 111; study of, 212.

Political eloquence, American, 6, 62, 64.

Political evils, the cure of, 1, 311.

Political machinery, 7, 221.

Political meetings, 7, 220.

Political office, the qualifications for, 1, 311.

Political parties, 7, 28; blind to vicious methods employed for their advantage, 244. *See also*, Party government.

Political speculations, possible value of, 1, 265.

Political thinker, Burke and Milton, 5, 271; effect of abstract ideas on, 275.

Political wisdom of Burke, 4, 175.

Politicians, Steele on, 1, 368. Politicians and statesmen, 5, 73; not leaders but followers of public sentiment, 6, 93; the study of political economy recommended to, 7, 222; object to the scholar in politics, 233; call learned men pedants and doctrinaires; 236; required by the system of party government, 257; engaged with the local eddies of prejudice, 267. *See also*, Statesmen.

Politics, subordinate to poetry, 5, 195; its deepest lesson taught by a common danger, 6, 58; difficulty of forecasting events, 155; men taking the place of principles, 162; the qualities necessary for success in statecraft, 226; a rigid doctrinaire an unsafe politician, 233; success obtained by skill in taking advantage of circumstances, 233; a science demanding serious application, 237; trifling considerations to be taken into account, 240; loyalty to great ends, not

obstinacy in prejudice demanded, 241; importance of public opinion, 244; 7, 33; cause and effect proportionate, 6, 249; the sense of personal wrong as an interpreter of abstract principles, 250; equality not conferred by man, 290; the danger of accepting an easy expedient at the sacrifice of a difficult justice, 290; a disproportionate value set upon consistency, 327; national opinions move slowly, 332; the secret of permanent leadership to know how to be moderate, 333; homogeneousness of laws and institutions necessary to strength, 345; the idea of government precedes that of liberty, 345; party managers, 351; parties as the ladders of ambitious men, 361; politicians and statesmen, 362; advantages of a bold policy, 385; the great current of a nation's life, 388; the nobleness of the science, 388; no trick of perpetual motion in, 7, 18; French fallacy in regard to new governments, 20; the effect of party organization, 28; the power of sentiment in, 42; the harmful side of good nature in, 116; the growing aversion to, 210; the practice of nominating men without a "record," 222; acts of official courage rare, but sometimes contagious, 224; a moderated and controlled enthusiasm the most potent of motive forces, 228.

Politics, The Place of the Independent in: address, April 13, 1888, 7, 233–268; the scholar in politics sneered at, 233; Bacon on the practical politician and the empiric physician, 235; defined as the art of national housekeeping, 239; become statesmanship when they reach a higher level, 239; the tricks of management superseding the science of government, 242; the importance of mere manhood developed in the American Colonies, 250; the production of great men the chief duty of a nation, 255; the place of politics in a nation's life, 265. *See also*, Autocracy; Cities; Civil service; Class legislation; Communism; Compromise; Conservatism; Democracy; Diplomacy; Discussion; Equality; Freedom; Government; Independent; Statesmanship.

Polk, James K., 1, 337.

Pollard, Edward A., *Southern History of the War* contrasted with Greeley's *American Conflict*, 6, 163; its style, 164; its picture of the Yankees, 164; on the causes of the war, 164; his democratic principles, 165; quoted, 310.

Pollen, 2, 136.

Polo, Marco, 1, 133; 5, 298.

Polybius, 3, 14; Dryden's judgment of, 23 n.

Pomegranate-seeds of the Arabian story compared to the points of an opponent's argument, 1, 12.

Pomeroy, General, 6, 85.

Pompeii, the Greek artistic nature displayed at, 1, 9.

Pope, Roman, his relations to the people, 1, 235; the mockery of his Easter benediction, 240; the feeling of the Italians toward him, 240; Dante on his supremacy, 5, 43; his election not free from passion and intrigue, 6, 284.

Pope, Alexander, 2, 407–472; his widespread fame at the time of his death, 412; the general discontent with his school, 413; its analogy with the *cultist* school of the 16th century, 415; it degenerates into a mob of mannerists, 437; his poetry gives a faithful picture of the society of his day, 418; circumstances which prepared the way for its popularity,

418; French influence on English literature, 418, 424, 428; Pope the poet of conventional life, 434; the author's early dislike for him, 435; what he represents in literature, 436; Wordsworth's relation to him, 436; Pope's one perfect work marks his genius, 437; his earliest productions marked by sense and discretion and facility of expression, 438; their affectation of sentiment, 438; his terseness and discretion, 441; Pope the true poet of society, 442; the *Rape of the Lock* analyzed, 442; the *Essay on Man*, 447; his accuracy, of expression rather than of thought, 449, 470; his confused logic, 450; his precision of thought no match for the fluency of his verse, 454; his execution over-praised, 454; instances of confused or unsuitable imagery, 455; tempted by epigram or rhyme to false statement, 456; his Moral Essays and Satires, 457; his accuracy in personal description, 458; his ideals of women, 458; had a sense of the neat rather than of the beautiful, 461; the *Dunciad*, 461; his fancy that of a wit rather than of a poet, 462; his personal character, 462; the discomforting consciousness of the public shown by his letters, 464; his relations to Lady Mary Wortley Montagu, 464; his meanness displayed in his correspondence with Aaron Hill, 465; his relations to Addison, 466; his letter to Lord Burlington excellent, 467; the controversy over his poetry, 467; his more ambitious works defined as careless thinking carefully versified, 470; his verse lacking in song, 471; to be ranked with Voltaire, 471; reasons for considering him a great poet, 472; his verse not uniform in elisions, 248; compared with Dryden, 471; 3, 24, 96, 104, 111; a *parvenu*, 98; his notion of gentility, 108 n; a great corrector of his own verses, 8, 37; *also*, 2, 262; 3, 100.

on Addison, 2, 458; on Dryden, 3, 92, 108; on Spenser, 4, 320; on Milton, 5, 311.

Voltaire on, 2, 413; Johnson on, 463, 467; Warton on, 467; Bowles on, 468; Campbell on, 468; Lessing on, 470.

Correspondence, its affected indifference to the world, 2, 438; *Dunciad*, 412; filthy and undiscriminating, 461; *Essay on Criticism*, 440; *Essay on Man* acceptable to men of all shades of opinion, 447; its absurdities, 448; its doctrines from Hobbes and Spinoza, 448; Bolingbroke its inspiration, 449; Pope aware of its dangerous principles, 450; its confusion of logic, 450; lacks *either* clearness of thought *or* sincerity, 454; — *Homer*, 1, 358; 2, 31; Broome's part in, 295; Coleridge on, 318; — *Moral Essays*, 457; — *On the Death of Mrs. Tempest*, 439; — *Pastorals*, 263, 438; — *Rape of the Lock*, 470; unmatched for pure entertainment, 437; analyzed, 441; the machinery of the Sylphs, 442, 444; the mock-heroic treatment, 443; its satiric wit, 444; its pleasing harmony, 445; its perfect form, 447; compared with Drayton's Nymphidia, 462; — *Satires*, 3, 97; full of wit and epigram, 2, 457; the inevitable antitheses, 457; — *Timon*, Coleridge on, 3, 98 n; — *Windsor Forest*, 2, 439.

Pope, General, 6, 118.

Popkin, Professor, reminiscences of, 1, 58; 7, 183.

Populacity, 6, 362.

Popular imagination, homeliness of, 7, 103.
Popular prejudice, the element of truth in, 2, 211.
Popularity, 5, 200; Carlyle on the curse of, 2, 87; of Frederick the Great, 93.
Popularity, literary, what it implies, 2, 54; the power of entertaining its first element, 56.
Pork, salt, eaten with a relish in the woods, 1, 100; Uncle Zeb's theory of, 101.
Porter's flip, 1, 54; President Kirkland tries it, 52.
Portici, 1, 180.
Portinari, Beatrice. *See* Dante — *Beatrice*.
Porto Ferrajo, 1, 198.
Portuguese men-of-war, 1, 124.
Posing, the instinct of southern races for, 4, 215.
Possession, demoniac, the natural tendency toward, 3, 180; contagious in convents and elsewhere, 181.
Posterity forgets those who think most of it, 1, 146.
Poussin, Gaspar, 1, 342.
Poverty, a crime in Pope's *Dunciad*, 2, 462.
Powell, Mary, Masson on her probable appearance, 5, 257.
Power, character of those who have held it, 1, 201.
Powers, Hiram, 1, 366.
Powers that be, egotism of the, 8, 118.
Practical men, 4, 276; 7, 236.
Practicality of Emerson, 2, 392.
Praise when over-hasty apt to become satire, 6, 212.
Prayer, President Kirkland's manner, 1, 54.
Prayer-mill, image of, applied to Carlyle's later writings, 2, 75.
Precedent, its value, 6, 239.
Precision of thought and language, 7, 112.
Preëminence, the satisfaction in, 1, 335.
Prefaces, Swift on, 3, 47.
Prejudices, 6, 148; 7, 115.
Pre-Raphaelite, abuse of the term, 2, 134.
Pre-Raphaelite art, Anglo-Saxon's lack of appreciation of, 1, 218.
Prerogative, 4, 6.
Presbyterian Church recommended the abolition of slavery in 1787, 6, 173.
Presbyterians in England in 1658, 4, 45.
Presbyterianism, Scotch, Carlyle the herald of its decease, 2, 135; and the embodiment of its spirit, 135.
Prescriptions, curious ones sent by Sir K. Digby to J. Winthrop, Jr., 4, 65.
Presence of mind and presence of speech, 2, 47.
President, his humble origin of no importance, but his present character, 6, 325; should be the highest type of American, 326; his position in ordinary times different from what it was during the war, 329, 336; must not take sectional ground, 336.
President, The, on the Stump, 6, 325–345. *See* Johnson, Andrew.
Press, unmuzzled in Holland, 1, 309; the muzzled, 8, 116, 117. *See also*, Journalism; Newspapers.
Préville, anecdote of his counterfeiting drunkenness, 2, 82.
Priapus, 5, 106 n.
Pride of birth, 6, 325. *See also*, Ancestry.
Priestcraft, 4, 6.
Priests, popular opinion of, in Italy, 1, 170; always to be found in a diligence, 178; bitter feeling of a Roman driver against, 183.
Priestley, Dr., 2, 29; 7, 16.
Primrose, Mr., 2, 352.
Printers' blunders. *See* Misprints.
Printing, invention of, its effect, 3,

219; 7, 311; restrained by Parliament, 8, 117.
Prison at Palestrina, like English jails of Queen Elizabeth's time, 1, 188.
Private judgment, 6, 14; in the opinion of the Puritans, 4, 13.
Privileges, 7, 28.
Probables, the casuists' doctrine of, 5, 261.
Professions, the divisions between, stricter in modern times, 2, 18.
Progress, its effect on temperaments which love what is permanent, 1, 51; depends on things of the mind, not on railways and telegraphs, 7, 277.
Progress of the World, 8, 137–164.
Proof-reading in Shakespeare's time, 3, 239.
Proper names, Milton's use of, 5, 298.
Property, the rights of, not threatened by Democracy, 6, 35; 7, 8; a Father of the Church called it theft, 7, 11; its security in America, 24; its part in bearing the burdens of the state, 24.
Property in slaves, 6, 35.
Prophecy, Masson's treatment of, 5, 260; difficulties of, in history and politics, 6, 155.
Prophets, events careless of the reputations of, 7, 7.
Prophets, Hebrew, character of their prose, 2, 280; Dante compared to, 5, 51, 69.
Prophet's breeches, Prof. P.'s *toga* compared to, 1, 60.
Propriety in diction, 3, 37.
Prosaic type of mind, its danger, 2, 215.
Prose, governed by exact laws, 8, 129, 130.
Prose and poetry. *See* Poetry and prose.
Prosody. *See* Alexandrines; Blank verse; Couplets; Elisions; Rhyme; Versification; *also*, English, French, Italian prosody.
Prospero, 3, 244.
Protection, 6, 39; applied to the weather, 7, 8; applied to foreign experience, 234; a policy of robbing Peter to pay Paul, 263; the logical extension of the system, 263; its effects, 263; not the cause of our material prosperity, 264; the policy borrowed from the mediæval guilds, 264.
Protestantism, lacking in materials for the imagination, 1, 230; has blundered in trusting to the intellect alone, 230; no longer protests, 2, 135; Dryden's opinion of, 3, 98 n, 107; De Maistre's charge against, 4, 9.
Protestantism in politics, 1, 321.
Proudhon, 7, 11.
Provence, compared to a morning sky of early summer, 2, 196; absence of national life in, 201.
Provençal language, became purely literary, and so dead, 2, 201; effect of its Roman derivation on literature, 203.
Provençal poetry, its interest as a forerunner, 2, 195; its artificiality, 198, 201, 203; remained a provincial literature, 198; its refined formality the legacy of Gallo-Roman culture, 199; its influence, 203; Dante familiar with, 5, 112 n. *See also*, Troubadours.
Proverbs, 7, 194.
Providence, Jerome's belief in its limitation, 1, 117; Carlyle's impatience with the ways of, 2, 71; Carlyle's cudgel theory of, 85; Dryden on, 3, 48; its operation in history, 6, 157.
Provincialism, contains the germ of nationality, 2, 11; agreeable when it has a flavor of its own, 21; in literature, 198; 7, 141; *also*, 1, 316; 2, 419.

Provincialism of Self, 2, 147.
Prudence, Dante on, 5, 150.
Prussian army, the national instinct in, 2, 78.
Prynne, William, his inscriptions on the walls of the Tower, 4, 82.
Pseudo-classicism, its two forms, 2, 173; the growing distaste for, 415.
Public, the, a dear old domestic bird, 6, 117.
Public debt, the only one absolutely sure of payment, 1, 321.
Public lands, a fair price to be paid for, 6, 278.
Public libraries. *See* Libraries, public.
Public men, 2, 47.
Public opinion, effect on the Yankee, 1, 42; escape from its tyranny in Italy, 149; its power, 2, 78; its efficiency in a democracy, 6, 225; its importance, 7, 33; influence of the telegraph upon, 210; *also*, 3, 198; 6, 159.
Public school has done for imagination, 1, 129.
Public speaking, difficulties of, at the present day, 7, 4.
Public spirit of the founders of Massachusetts, 7, 178.
Pückler-Muskau on England, 1, 306.
Puff, Mr., 2, 431.
Puns, 3, 274.
Punch, attempts at Yankeeisms, 2, 174.
Punch's theatre, Hamon's picture of, Carlyle's histories compared to, 2, 83.
Punch and Judy, 8, 175.
Punishments in Dante and in the Wisdom of Solomon, 5, 111 n.
Puppet-show, the world a, in Carlyle's histories, 2, 83.
Puritan, cares nothing for art, 1, 41; compared with the Cavalier, 4, 82.
Puritan preachers, 4, 17.
Puritan temper Judaized by the English Bible, 5, 274.
Puritans, English, Lecky on their attitude toward witchcraft, 3, 188 n; their change upon coming into power, 4, 9; the builders of America, 16.
Puritans, of New England, their conversion of the Indians, 1, 289; their object and their spirit, 323; the modern charge that they were fanatics, 4, 9; different in their conditions from the Puritans in England, 11; enthusiasts but not fanatics, 12; men of business, 12, 83; their conception of the state, 13, 87; their dealings with sectaries, 13; their narrowness and gloominess, 17; the reality of their political ideas, 17; their view of education, 22; in what respect they were intolerant, 22; not men "before their time," 23; as seen in the "Winthrop Papers," 26; their decline prophesied by Williams, 84; cause of their narrowness, 84; their purpose to clear away abuses, 87; their feeling in founding Harvard College, 7, 170; justly commemorated by their descendants, 171; the noble character and quality of the first settlers, 175; narrowness and formalism of the second generation, 176. *See also*, New England.
Puritanism, tried to drive out nature with a pitchfork, 1, 43; compared to a ship inwardly on fire, 43; Emerson the herald of its decease, 2, 135; and the embodiment of its spirit, 136; Hawthorne the unwilling poet of the Puritanism of the past, 136; its spirit seeking a new outlet in Transcendentalism, 137; anxious for evidence of the supernatural, 3, 187; its attitude toward witchcraft, 188 n; its character shown in the victims of the Salem witch-

craft, 207; the embodiment of Christian truth, 4, 4; not responsible for the witchcraft delusion in New England, 14; the decline of, 15; laid the egg of Democracy, 16; traced in American characteristics, 17; its earnestness, 77; a religion of Fear rather than Love, 77; it became an empty formalism, 85; Spenser's sympathy with its more generous side, 277; its different shades, 278 n; its strength and weakness, 5, 311; the prose of Bunyan and the verse of Milton its great monuments, 312; *also*, 3, 218.
Puseyism, a hint that Protestantism has blundered, 1, 231.
Putnam, Anne, Jr., one of the possessed girls in Salem, 3, 203.
Puttenham on correct English, 3, 222.
Pyrrhus, elephants of, German learning compared to, 4, 96.
Pythagoras, 1, 151.

Quaker grammar, 4, 76.
Quakers, care nothing for art, 1, 41; Coddington sends a defence of, to J. Winthrop, Jr., 4, 74; on the manifestation of God's wrath at the execution of Robinson and Stevenson, 76; Puritan dealings with, not to be lightly judged, 78.
Quarles, his *Enchiridion*, reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 1, 281; examples of his style, 2, 430.
Quarrels, Italian, anecdotes of, 1, 197, 200.
Quatrains, Dryden on, 3, 49.
Quibbles in words, 3, 274.
Quincy, Edmund, his life of his father, 2, 26.
Quincy, Josiah, a great public character, 2, 3–49; his character trained under democracy, 20; his public activity, 21, 25; an antique Roman, 21; the Boston of his early life, 22; the many changes during his lifetime, 24; his family, 25; his life beautiful and fortunate, 26; Edmund Quincy's Life of, 26; his account of his mother, 30; his early education, 32; at college, 33; his marriage, 34; his public life, 35; his thoroughness and earnestness, 36; declines a duel, 37; opposes the Louisiana Purchase, 37; his boldness in speech, 37; Mayor of Boston, 38; arrested for fast driving, 40; President of Harvard College, 41; his endearing peculiarities, 41; his dry humor, 42; his kindness and considerateness, 42; his *esprit de corps*, 42; his literary productions, 43; his industry, 44; his old age, 44; his remarks on death, 45; the value of his life, 45, 48; anecdote of his courtesy, 46; a man of *quality*, 46; never forfeited public respect, 48; lines of Dryden's applied to, 3, 90; on college life, 7, 196.
Quincy, Mrs. Josiah, 2, 34.
Quincy, Josiah, Jr., 2, 25, 29.
Quinquina. *See* Cinchona.
Quintilian on Seneca, 3, 81.
Quixote, Don. See Cervantes.
Quotations, from the classics, the charm of, 2, 167; Dryden's inaccuracy in using, 3, 35 n.

R. = Reemie, the barber.
R—, Mr., of W. = Mr. Ripley, of Waltham.
R. M. = Royall Morse.
Rabelais, his humor, 1, 308; 2, 68; *also*, 2, 264.
Rachel and Leah, 1, 146.
Racine, 3, 287; *Andromaque*, 62 n; *Bajazet*, Dryden on, 77; *Berenice*, Voltaire on, 77.
Rail-riding, riding at Tivoli compared to, 1, 165.

Railroad journey, effects of, 1, 75.
Railroads, American, 4, 82.
Railroads, Italian, how planned and built, 1, 179.
Rain, signs of, 1, 88, 92; ride to Subiaco in, 212.
Rainbow, across the waterfall at Tivoli, 1, 154; Vaughan on, 295.
Rainy day indoors at Kineo, Maine, 1, 92.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, 3, 232; 4, 27; on writing modern history, 4, 282 n; 7, 71.
Rambaldi, Benvenuto. *See* Benvenuto.
Ramesey, Dr. William, on the German tongue and worms, 7, 311.
Ramler, Karl Wilhelm, 4, 131; on Lessing's dangerous way of speaking his opinion, 133; Forster on, 134 n.
Ramsay, Allan, 4, 156.
Randolph, Robert, 2, 342.
Rantoul, Robert, 7, 189.
Raphael, 3, 288.
Raspberries the solace of the pedestrian, 1, 269.
Ravenna, Dante at, 5, 22, 24.
Raymond, Mr., at the Philadelphia convention, 6, 353.
Raynouard's *Lexique roman* cited, 2, 365.
Reaction, 6, 156, 220.
Reading, the habit tyrannical, 1, 93; lack of, in Rome, 185; browsing, 4, 123; the world of thought opened to us by, 7, 102; the choice of, 103; illustrated by the Wallachian legend of Bakála, 103; its influence on character, 104; the way to read, 104; desultory reading unprofitable, 105; harmfulness of reading newspaper gossip, 106; attention to the supreme books or to one great author recommended, 107; desultory reading the only way in which time may be profitably wasted, 108; Bacon on the method and purpose of, 108; value of translations of foreign literature, 111. *See also*, Books.
Ready-made Age, the, 1, 114.
Ready-made clothes, reason of the demand for, 1, 114.
Real, the, distinguished from the actual, 7, 98.
Real Presence typifies the secret of the power of the Roman Church, 1, 229.
Real property, 7, 97.
Realism in Dante, 5, 52.
Realistic novel invented by Fielding, 7, 74.
Realistic school, imaginative creations preferred to, 7, 155.
Reality, Carlyle's loyalty to, 2, 99.
Reason, a finger-post which points where we choose to turn it, 1, 263; its development the highest use of our experience, 2, 90; Dante on, 5, 121; typified by Virgil in the *Divina Commedia*, 122.
Rebellion, 6, 99, 248; to be crushed promptly, 104; the right of, 104.
Rebellion, The, its Causes and Consequences, 6, 147–185. For details, *see* American Civil War.
Rebellion Record. *See* Moore, Frank.
Reconstruction, 6, 258–291; our first duty in respect to, that democracy receive no detriment, 267; a uniform rule not likely to be suitable for all cases, 267; the problem of the negro, 274; confiscation of property unwise, 277; the Southern population to be encouraged to become landholders, 278; the freedmen to be made voters, 279, 289, 319, 343, 371, 380; their inherent right to the suffrage in a democracy, 281; the proposition to settle the negroes in a separate district unwise, 283;

on certain confused ideas in regard to the position of the Southern States, 288, 316; our right to exact indemnity for the past and security for the future, 289, 314, 343, 377, 386; the terms of re-admission to be definitely settled beforehand, 290; temporary expedients to be discarded in favor of an enduring policy, 290; the States to be admitted for the first time to a real union, 316; no hasty compromise to be adopted, 321; its basis changed by the issue of the war, 367; the terms imposed not harsh, 393; the conditions of the franchise not interfered with, 394. *See also*, United States in 1865 and 1866.

Reduplication of sense, instances from the Greek, Shakespeare, and Milton, 3, 271.

Reed, Professor, editor of Wordsworth's *Memoirs*, 5, 212 n.

Reed, of Apollo, and of Pan, 5, 228.

Reemie, the Cambridge barber, 1, 24.

Reeves, 3, 284.

Refinement, its true character, 7, 71.

Reflections in the water, 1, 104; at sunset, 108.

Reformation, its different stages, 3, 218; its effect on England, 4, 253; the germ of political and social revolution, 7, 11.

Reformers, of the Transcendental movement, 2, 133; *Don Quixote* a satire upon doctrinaire reformers, 7, 150; the movement of reforms seems slow to, 261; need to take long views, 262; *also*, 5, 142; 7, 228;

Rehearsal, The. *See* Villiers.

Reimarus, Elise, Lessing's letters to, 4, 144, 149.

Religion, Dante on, 5, 104; Wordsworth's attitude toward, 7, 126; the instinct to fashion God in the image of man, 127.

Religious instinct of the Anglo-Saxon, 2, 214.

Religious poetry, wretched quality of much that is so called, 1, 280.

Religious sentiment, 4, 211.

Rembrandt, 1, 308.

Rembrandt groups in the Cambridgeport inn-yards, 1, 34.

Reminiscences of great men, scantiness of, 1, 39.

Renaissance, 4, 222; Keats a modern example of, 5, 344.

Renan on the development of language, 3, 104 n.

Repeating verses, a little girl's, 1, 221.

Repetition, in public speaking, 7, 5; wearisome and profitless, 122.

Repose of Keats's poetry, 5, 347.

Reprinting worthless books, 2, 337.

Reprints, of old books, 2, 277, 353; value of literalness in, 291, 301.

Republican party, its purpose and position in 1860, 6, 43; its strength in a moral aversion to slavery, 44; its object to hem slavery in, not to abolish it, 51; the only truly conservative party, 53; forbearance and moderation required on the establishment of peace, 285; Seward's relations to, 361; its policy inspired by the people themselves, not by leaders, 387; the attempt to stir up and utilize the passions of the War, 7, 207.

Repudiation, 3, 318.

Reputation, insecurity and importance of, 5, 325.

Resinous perfume of the forest, 1, 105.

Responsibility, freedom from, felt in Italy, 1, 149; personal, 6, 160.

Restoration of buildings, constructive criticism compared to, 7, 148.

Restraint, the hotbed of license, 3, 67.

Resurrection-men of literature, 2, 337.
Retribution, Dante's ideas of, 5, 70; examples of, eagerly recognized, 6, 157.
Retrospective Review, 2, 274.
Reuchlin, 2, 134; his Latin style, 4, 97.
Revelation, Dante on, 5, 121.
Revery, awakening from, 1, 295; compared to fish in a stream, 4, 300.
Revival of letters, 4, 222.
Revivals, 5, 161.
Revolution, American. *See* American Revolution.
Revolutions, the Saxon success in effecting, 2, 215; said never to go backward, 6, 104; moderation in times of, 211.
Revolutionists, foreign, connected with the Transcendental movement, 2, 133.
Revue des Deux Mondes, its accounts of American society, 1, 316.
Rhetoric, its laws, 3, 249. *See also*, Style.
Rhetoric and literature distinguished, 2, 195.
Rhett, Robert, 6, 80.
Rhodes, Hugh, on domestic servants, 4, 53.
Rhyme, in Gower, 2, 226, 234; in the French drama, 3, 74; Milton's use of, 5, 289.
Phillips on, 2, 431; Waller on its necessity in tragedy, 431; Dryden on, 3, 19, 49, 51, 70, 71, 86; Milton on, 5, 310.
Rhyme-wraiths, 5, 290.
Rhymesters, Jonson on, 3, 72.
Rich, Mrs., her appearance, 1, 162.
Rich men, the possibilities of, imagined, 1, 50; in America, 7, 115; libraries and universities founded by, 234.
Richard, Duke of Normandy, arbitrator in a case between the Devil and an Angel, 3, 177.
Richardson, Fielding's opinion of, 7, 71; made long-windedness seem a benefaction, 8, 16.
Richelieu, 1, 98.
Riches, the popular measure of success, 7, 207; their use and their danger, 208. *See also*, Wealth.
Richier, Voltaire's secretary, 4, 119.
Richter, his influence on Carlyle, 2, 65; his humor, 94, 100, 308; his sentiment, 4, 94; influenced by Cervantes, 7, 164; *also*, 4, 119.
Ridicule, sensitiveness to, fostered by provincialism, 2, 420; especially unpleasant in England, 5, 324.
Riding, Spenser on, 4, 319.
Right, the, essential antiquity of, 6, 16; but one natural, 8, 158.
Rights of Man and the wrongs of men, 7, 13.
Righteousness, the theme of Dante, 5, 44.
Rigoux, Maître, name of the Devil in De la Rue's confession, 3, 140.
Rilievo, the bridge between sculpture and painting, 5, 4 n.
Rimbault, Dr., editor of Overbury's works, 2, 282.
Ripheus in the *Divine Comedy*, 5, 154.
Ripley, Mr., of Waltham, at Emerson's lectures, 2, 398.
Ritson, his character, 2, 367; compared with Hazlitt as an editor, 368; his *Bibliographica Poetica*, 4, 221.
Rivalry, a powerful motive with Michael Angelo, 1, 241.
Rivarol, his translation of the *Divina Commedia*, 5, 32; on Dante, 53, 56, 229.
River-driver, description of M., a famous one, 1, 105.
Rivers, with low banks, 1, 108;

sudden rise of, in Italy, 212; Chaucer's best tales compared to, 2, 257; their course compared to that of a great statesman, 6, 241.
Road-making in Cambridge, 1, 17.
Roads, Winter a mender of, in old times, 1, 345.
Robespierre, 2, 67.
Robin, a name for Satan, 3, 145, 174.
Robins. *See under* Birds.
Robins, John, the last great Antichrist of the Muggletonians, 1, 46.
Robinson, Crabb, visits to Wordsworth, 1, 354; on Wordsworth, 5, 208 n, 225 n.
Robinson, John, on the character of the New England state, 7, 116.
Robinson, William, the Quaker, 4, 76.
Robinson Crusoe. *See* De Foe.
Roc, 1, 134.
Rochester, Earl of, 3, 66.
Rocket, fancy compared to, 2, 58; McClellan's reputation compared to, 6, 119.
Rod, Carlyle's increasing employment of the, 2, 72.
Rojas, Fernando de, 8, 175, 176.
Rojate, Italy, 1, 209.
Roland, Song of, 2, 117, 204; 7, 142.
Roman du Renart cited, 2, 364.
Roman de la Rose, the treatment of final and medial *e*, 2, 245; *also*, 264.
Roman army, slaves in, 6, 157.
Roman Catholic church, has not forgotten the eremitic instinct, 1, 56; dead in Italy, 184; what it does for worship, 228; has kept her faith in the imagination, 229; provides for both soul and body in her worship, 229; the understanding her great foe, 230; provides for the childish in men, 231; has adapted herself to the wants and weaknesses of human nature, 231; the heir of many Buddhist forms of worship, 235; its ceremonies not valued by the people, 240; sameness of its ceremonies, 239; its vast estate of tradition, 2, 5; Dryden's leaning toward, 3, 107; attitude of the Amer. Tract Soc. toward, 6, 7.
Roman churches, their clumsy magnificence and want of proportion, 1, 241.
Roman columns, 1, 241.
Roman Emperor, Dante on his supremacy, 5, 43.
Roman Empire, its shadow felt in Rome, 1, 226; Dante's arguments for its universal sovereignty, 5, 42.
Roman imagines, a substitute suggested, 2, 353.
Roman literature. *See* Latin literature.
Roman Mosaic, A Few Bits of, 1, 222–255.
Roman noses, 1, 353.
Roman Revolution of '48, the beggars with invested funds the stanchest reactionaries, 6, 35.
Roman villas, ruins of, 1, 166.
Romans, time of no value to, 1, 156; a grave people since '49, 178; do not value the ceremonies of the church, 240. *See also*, Italians.
Romans, ancient, despised Greek literature, 1, 121; their national feeling, 2, 14; fond of country life, 1, 342; their genius for politics rather than art, 2, 199.
Romance poetry before Dante, 5, 130.
Romances of chivalry, question of the Provençal origin of, 2, 203; Norman influence upon, 209; their long-windedness, 222; the attempt to allegorize them, 264; *Don Quixote* more than a mere parody on, 7, 150; *also*, 2, 263. *See also*, Chansons de geste.

Romantic movement, feebleness and introspection of, 2, 124.
Romantic poetry, German, 2, 178.
Romantic school foreshadowed by Collins, 2, 410.
Romanticism, Lessing the unconscious founder of, 4, 158.
Rome, its early history interpreted by the territory around it, 1, 9; the mother country of every boy, 149; unchanged in most respects, 150; well called the Eternal City, 156; the approach to, in a diligence, 179; scenes of a spring day in, 181; the road to, from Civita Vecchia, 223; the rude shock to Fancy on arrival, 222; the French soldiers, 223, 224; anachronisms and inconsistencies, 224; the presence of the imperial ghost, 225; its solitudes, 225; the laboratory of a mysterious enchantress, 231; the modern churches, 241; the beggars, 242; deformities exhibited in the street, 245; situation of the city and its relation to others in early days, 247; the Villa Albani, 251; the garden of the French Academy, 252; amusing scene at the fountain of Trevi, 253; the police, 254; Dante on, 5, 116 n; on the course of its history, 145; on the miracles of its history, 151; St. Augustine on, 145; Keats's lodgings in the Piazza di Spagna, 5, 338 n.
Capitol, its foundations, 1, 226; *Colosseum*, 241; *Forum*, the deliberate manner of the excavators described, 246; *Piazza Barberina*, 181; *Ponte Sant Angelo*, 224; crowds on, 236; *St. Peter's* as seen from a distance, 179; compared to Vesuvius, 180; disappointment common in the first sight of, 226; Protestant prejudices to be put aside, 228; the throne of a mighty dynasty, 228; the magic circle of a mysterious enchantress, 231; statistics, 232; its temperature different from that of Rome, 233; liked by Americans sooner than by Englishmen, 233; the Easter pomps, 235, 240; noon and twilight effects, 235; the illumination, 236; the *Scalinata*, 210.
Romulus and Remus, 3, 171; 4, 17.
Rosa, Salvator, 1, 342.
Roscoe, 2, 468.
Rosecrans, General, at Murfreesboro, 6, 135.
Roses and cabbages, 1, 393
Rosseter, Bryan, pleads for remission of taxes, 4, 70.
Rossetti, Gabriele, on Dante, 5, 62 n.
Rossetti, D. G, his translations from the Italian poets, 5, 131 n.
Rossetti, Miss M. F., on Dante's style, 5, 61 n; her *Shadow of Dante* commended, 66; on Beatrice in the *Divina Commedia*, 123; on the meaning of the "wood obscure," 123; on Dante's "second death," 127.
Rossetti, W. M., on a passage of Dante, 5, 71 n.
Rotation in office, its absurdity, 7, 260.
Rousseau and the Sentimentalists, 4, 173–217; his political wisdom compared with Burke's, 175; the lasting nature of his influence, 179, 210; the basis of sincerity, beyond sentimentalism and rhetoric, 179, 211; a faith and ardor of conviction in him in spite of inconsistencies, 187; his faith in the goodness of man and God, 188; a good logician, 188; his original power, 189; his influence on contemporary thought inconsistent with enduring greatness, 189; his self-conceit and self-distrust, 190; allowed himself to be worshipped by

women, 191 ; his father's weak moral fibre, 192 ; he mistakes emotion for conviction, 193 ; his self-flattery in believing himself peculiar, 203, 205 ; his confessions, 206 ; 7, 11 ; his inconsistencies and paradoxes, 4, 207 ; his disordered organization, 207 ; the symptoms of the French Revolution seen in his works, 208 ; the foster-father of modern democracy, 209 ; the weak point in his political system, 209 ; his religious sentiment strong, his moral nature weak, 211 ; Cowper his nearest congener in English literature, 211 ; his view of Nature, 212 ; difficulties in judging him, 214 ; allowances to be made for his nationality and training, 216 ; intensity and persuasiveness of his writings, 216 ; never false, 216 ; set the fashion of melodious whining, 147 ; compared with Voltaire as to asceticism, 187 ; made the love of Nature fashionable, 1, 341 ; his sentimentality, 2, 147, 148 ; his fallacies exposed by Spenser, 4, 318 ; read for amusement, 8, 12 ; quoted, 132 ; *also*, 1, 343 ; 4, 262.

on his father's conduct, 4, 191.

Voltaire on, 2, 150; Burke on, 4, 173, 174; Johnson on, 176; Thomas Moore on, 180.

Discours sur l' Inégalité, Voltaire on, 4, 107; — *Letter to the Archbishop of Paris*, 208 ; — *Rousseau juge de Jean Jacques*, 208.

Routine, effect of its removal, 3, 180.

Royalty, its dependence on the tailor, 4, 80.

Roydon, Matthew, his lines on Sidney applied to Emerson, 2, 391, 404.

Rubens, 1, 308 ; compared with Dryden, 3, 26.

Rueda, Loupe de, founder of the Spanish theatre, 8, 176.

Rüdiger, Herr, Lessing arranges his library, 4, 118.

Ruins adopted and beautified by Nature, 1, 166.

Rule, Miss, called Anarchy, 1, 29.

Ruprecht, Knecht, 3, 174.

Ruskin, on Dante, 5, 37, 55 ; on countries without castles and cathedrals, 7, 169 ; *also*, 1, 343 ; 4, 175 ; 7, 113.

Rutebeuf, his miracle-play of Theophilus described, 3, 134; his treatment of final and medial *e*, 2, 246; his *Pharisian* and *Secrestain*, 246.

Ruth, Mrs., Hugh Peter's coquetting with, 4, 33.

Ruth, Emil, on Dante, 5, 130 n.

Rynders, Captain, 6, 193.

S. = Francis Sales.

S., champion of the county = Stedman.

Sackville, Thomas, *Gorboduc* or *Ferrex and Porrex*, 4, 265.

Sacramental wafer, 2, 214.

Sacred poetry before Dante, 5, 132.

Saddles in Italy, 1, 164.

Sagas compared with the Romances, 2, 208.

Sailor, the, his unsteady roll in physical and moral gait, 1, 113.

Sails of a ship in the moonlight, 1, 126.

Saint Elmo's fires, 1, 142.

Saint-Hilaire, Dean of, 1, 56.

Saint John. *See* Bolingbroke.

Saint-Pierre, 1, 343 ; 2, 148.

Saint-Preux, 1, 278 ; his love-letters, 4, 143.

Saint-René Taillandier on the *Divina Commedia* in Spain, 5, 32.

Saint-Simon, true, though not accurate, 2, 17 ; the secret of his art in picturesque writing, 5, 253.

Saint-Vitus-dance, 1, 245.

Sainte-Beuve, on connection with the world, 2, 146 ; his criticism

makes its subject luminous, 4, 95; on Octave Feuillet, 7, 71; on Gray, 8, 27; a detective critic, 254.
Saints, legends of, relation to Ovid's Fasti, 2, 195.
Saints and martyrs, the legends of, 5, 133.
Saïs, the figure at, 1, 7.
Saladin in the miracle-play of *Theophilus*, 3, 134.
Salem, Underhill complains of a lack of military discipline at, 4, 69.
Salem witchcraft, Upham's history of, 3, 200; the character of the minister, Parris, 201; the demoniacal girls in his family, 202; in the light of the Littleton cases in 1720, 204; the trials, 205; the victims all protested innocence, 207; the reaction against it from the people, not the authorities, 208.
Sales, Francis, reminiscences of, 1, 64.
Salt Lake City, 1, 281.
Saltonstall, Richard, letter to J. Winthrop, Jr., on Prynne, 4, 82.
Salvini, as Othello, 7, 300.
Samplers, 1, 221.
Samson compared to Herakles, 2, 172.
Samson, Abbot, in Italy in 1159, 1, 151; prejudiced against French, 7, 311.
Samson Agonistes. *See* Milton.
Sancho Panza. *See* Cervantes — *Don Quixote*.
Sand, George, 1, 343; 4, 179; on art, 2, 151; on autobiography, 4, 203; her coarseness, 7, 69.
Sand, Maurice, his caricature of America in the *Revue*, 1, 316.
Sanderson, Bishop, 8, 91, 105.
Sandras, E. G., *Etude sur G. Chaucer*, 2, 183, 191.
Sandys, Edward, 5, 178.
Sandys, George, 2, 347; 5, 178 n; 8, 97 n.
Sannazzaro, 4, 262.
Sansovino on the date of Dante's birth, 5, 7.
Sant' Antonio, Ponte, expedition to, with Storg, 1, 159; loneliness of the place, 167.
Santo Stefano, 1, 198.
Satan, belief in his power, 3, 131; compared to James II. at St. Germains, 132; the idea of a compact with him developed under Christianity, 133; the contract itself seldom produced, 136; generally the loser by the bargain, 137; confessions by witches of dealings with, 139–153; appearance as a black dog, 139, 144; his names, 140, 145, 154, 155, 172, 174; his appearance described, 140, 146, 149, 152; his appearance as a goat, 142, 154, 158; degraded by popular superstition to a vulgar scarecrow, 153; Dr. More on the stench left at his disappearance, 153; his cloven foot, 154, 155; the raven his peculiar bird, 155; his touch cold or burning, 173; stories of his doings on various occasions, 175; his school of magic in Toledo, 178; worshipped by the Indians, 187; makes no express compact with minors, 191; of Dante and Milton, 5, 53; the symbol of materialism in Dante, 103 n; the first great secessionist, 6, 66. *See also*, Devil.
Satire, 2, 429; of Dante and Chaucer compared, 220; of Chaucer and Langland, 229, 231; of Chaucer, 262; Dryden on, 3, 95; of Dryden and Pope compared, 96; of Fielding, 7, 75.
Saturday Review on American politics in 1861, 6, 94.
Saul seeking his father's asses, Carlyle contrasted with, 2, 76.
Saunders, George, 6, 195.
Sausages, Italian, 1, 148.

Savage, Richard, 4, 178; his Latinisms, 3, 104.
Savagius, Jacobus, wrote a treatise against witchcraft, 3, 195.
Savonarola, 4, 5.
Saxon. *See also*, Anglo-Saxon.
Saxon language, its character, 2, 289; never, to any extent, a literary language, 3, 226; foreign words introduced into, with difficulty, 227; Bosworth on, 231.
Scaliger, J. C., on Erasmus, 3, 24 n.
Scalinata, in Rome, 1, 210.
Scenery, its value often estimated by the cost of the ticket, 1, 71. *See also*, Landscape; Nature.
Sceptical age reads God in a prose translation, 3, 11.
Scepticism, of modern travellers, 1, 131; characteristic of Dryden's age, 3, 11; in the 17th century, 181, 186; the first cousin of credulity, 209; caused by materialism, 210; of Hamlet, 306, 307; Lessing's early scepticism, 4, 117; of Rousseau, 188; dilettantism its twin sister, 5, 52; *also*, 3, 107.
Scheffer, Ary, his *Christus Consolator* in a Prayer-Book without the slave, 6, 10.
Schelling, Emerson before the Φ. B. K. compared to, 2, 137.
Schiller, his Pegasus in yoke, 1, 238; his verses to Goethe quoted, 2, 161; some of his lyrical poems too long, 4, 98; his *Götz* and *Robbers*, 159; Coleridge's debt to, 7, 84; *also*, 4, 119.
on the great poet, 2, 92; on the gods of Greece, 3, 131.
Schlegel, on Shakespeare, 3, 290; Coleridge's debt to, 7, 84.
Schlosser on Dante, 5, 42, 55.
Schmidt, Julian, as a critic, 4, 95.
Scholars, their meddling in politics objected to by politicians, 7, 233.
Scholarship, its riches an enduring possession, 7, 97; its results, 105; necessity of having a definite aim, 107. *See also*, American scholarship; Learning.
School-children in old times, 4, 21.
School-girls' letter style of composition, 2, 257.
School-house, village, described, 4, 20; recollections stirred by, 20.
School-house of Women cited, 2, 370, 385.
Schoolmaster, Carlyle's attitude toward the world compared to, 2, 72.
Schools. *See* American schools; French schools; Public school; education.
Schoolcraft on the legend of the werwolf among the Indians, 3, 171.
Schröder, 3, 289.
Science, its condition in the days of witchcraft, 3, 183; the teaching of, 7, 193; the noblest definition of, 194.
Science, and morals, the advance in, compared, 5, 159; the gift of modern, 8, 146; the advance of, 162.
Sciences, Dante on, 5, 99; their place in a library, 7, 112.
Scientific spirit of the present day, 1, 132.
Scot, Reginald, his *Discovery of Witchcraft*, 3, 195.
Scotch ballad-poetry, 4, 224.
Scotch barnacle, 2, 306.
Scotch gardeners in Cambridge, 1, 28.
Scotch Highlanders, costume changed by law, 4, 80; the clansmen ruthlessly dispossessed by the Chiefs, 6, 390.
Scotch mist, its penetrativeness, 1, 312.
Scotch poetry of the 15th century, 4, 224.
Scotchmen, effect of imagination on, 2, 86.
Scotland, witches burned for the last

time in 1722, 3, 200; its loyalty in spite of rebellions, 6, 82.
Scott, Dr., apparition seen by, 3, 126.
Scott, Sir Walter, his toryism, 2, 89; on Dryden's jealousy, 3, 93; Wordsworth meets him, 5, 210; Wordsworth on, 224 n; on Coleridge, 7, 86; his use of descriptions of nature, 134; the *Antiquary* influenced by Cervantes, 164; *also*, 2, 120, 158; 7, 115.
Scott, General Winfield, 6, 76.
Scriptures, explosive material in the, 8, 118.
Scudéry, Mlle. de, 4, 282.
Sculptors, 1, 366. *See also*, Greek sculpture.
Scurrility, 4, 225.
Sea in the imagination of village boys, 1, 32.
Sea, At, 1, 121–135; best seen from the shore, 121; steam fatal to its romance, 122; a calm described, 122; monotony of the life, 122; the flying-fish, 124; the phosphorescence, 125; moonlight on the sails, 126; the sun, 126; the ocean-horizon, 127; the sunrise, 127; the sea-serpent, 129; anecdotes of the Chief Mate, 137–143; the social proprieties at meal-times, 139.
Sea-captains of the old school, 2, 23.
Sea-moss, the sensibility of great poets compared to, 5, 240; certain thoughts and emotions compared to, 241.
Sea-serpent, not to be lightly given up, 1, 129; an old fisherman on the horse-mackerel theory, 131.
Seashore compared to the boundary line between ideal and matter-of-fact, 4, 221.
Sea-waves, Homer's verse compared to, 2, 323.
Sea-weed at sunrise, 1, 128.
Sebasticook River, 1, 79.
Seboomok Pond, afternoon on its shore, 1, 104.
Secession, the danger of, diminishing in 1860, 6, 49; Buchanan's attitude toward, 60; the right of, untenable under the Constitution, 60, 87; threats of, unheeded at the North, 64; means chaos and rebellion, 66; the principle applied to other relations, 66; the absurdity of the right developed, 67, 246; must not be permitted, 83; the one question in hand at the beginning of Lincoln's administration, 103; the doctrine obliterates every notion of law and precedent, 107; Pollard's attempt to state the grounds of, 163, 164, 165; probably not originally intended by the Southern States, 166, 195; the way prepared for, by political tendencies, 169; traced by Greeley to slavery and the doctrine of state rights, 170; the Southern people educated in the belief in, 182; its assured retribution, 219; the treason involved in, 313; the discussion of, useless after the war, 338; distinction between the right to secede and the ability to do so, 365.
Secession kite, bobs of, 6, 80.
Secessionists. *See* United States — *Southern States.*
Sect, the nucleus of a, 8, 115.
Sectarianism, Lessing on, 4, 150; of the Wordsworthians, 5, 173.
Seeing, the Chief Mate's sharpness of sight, 1, 138.
Séguier, President, on witchcraft, 3, 198.
Selden, on opinion and affection, 4, 133; on heresy, 152; annotations on Drayton, 238.
Self-abasement, 4, 69.
Self-conceit, 2, 121; 4, 190.
Self-confidence of Lessing, 4, 117.
Self-consciousness, 2, 145, 147; 3, 306; intensified by Christian-

ity, 2, 175; of modern imaginative literature, 184; of Milton, 5, 311.
Self-deception an element in the witchcraft troubles, 3, 180.
Self-examination destroys originality, 4, 203.
Self-flattery, 4, 203.
Self-government, 6, 373.
Self-importance, foreign travel a remedy for, 1, 6.
Self-interest, 6, 389.
Self-knowledge, 1, 305; importance of, 4.
Self-made men, 1, 327; 2, 26.
Self-reliance, the argument for, as drawn from the example of great men, 5, 205.
Self-respect of American yeomen, 1, 220.
Self-trust, 5, 201.
Semmes, 6, 379.
Seneca, Quintilian on, 3, 81.
Sensationalism, of modern literature, 2, 58; illustrated by the farmer at the burning of the meeting-house, 59; of Carlyle, 87.
Senses, necessity of educating and refining them, 1, 206.
Sensitiveness to criticism a common failing, 1, 306.
Sensuous and sensual in poetry, 4, 280.
Sentiment, 1, 121; quickly brought down by Humbug, 230; distinguished from sentimentalism, 4, 195; its effect on state policy, 7, 42.
Sentiments and actions, 4, 185.
Sentimentalism, 2, 122; 4, 167; of Carlyle, 2, 70; with respect to Nature, 147; of Burke, 4, 174; as a substitute for performing one's duty, 191; disjoins practice from theory, 192; sentiment distinguished from, 195; little trace of, among the ancients, 196; Petrarch the first modern example of, 197; its sickly taint, 211; courts publicity while shunning the contact of men, 214.
Burke on, 4, 173; Fielding's contempt for, 7, 71.
Sentimentalist, his character to be investigated when he teaches morals, 4, 185; dwells in unrealities, 190; the spiritual hypochondriac, 193; selfishness of, 194; insists on taking his emotion neat, 196; his self-consciousness finally produces self-deception, 202; always his own ideal, 203; Rousseau the most perfect type, 207; his view of life, 213; exaggerates the importance of his own personality, 214; supposed character of his brain, 217.
Sentimentalists, 4, 181.
Sermons of the New England clergy, 7, 186.
Serravalle, Giovanni da, Latin translation of Dante, 5, 35.
Servants, in Boston, in earlier days, 2, 24; difficulty of obtaining, in early New England, 4, 49, 81; inconveniences of employing Indians, 51; decline in their quality witnessed by Shakespeare, and by Gonzales in 1730, 52, 53; Southey on, in 1824, and Hugh Rhodes on, in 1577, 53.
Seven Years' War, the Prussian national instinct an important factor in, 2, 78; Lessing's feelings toward, 4, 137.
Severn, Mr., friend of Keats, went to Italy with him, 5, 336; his studio in Rome, 338 n.
Seward, W. H., represents the most advanced doctrines of his party, 6, 42; his power as an orator, 43; his office of bear-leader in the President's tour, 357; fears for the safety of the platform at Niagara, 357; his motives, career, and character discussed, 359; his course an exhibition of tumbling, 362; his arguments on the status

of the seceding states, 370; his dealings with the Fenians, 393.
SEWARD-JOHNSON REACTION, 1866, 6, 349–398.
Sewing-machine, its inventor inferior to the great men of old, 2, 13.
Shadows of leaves and boughs, 1, 294.
Shadwell, as poet-laureate, 3, 16; Dryden's quarrel with, 97, 98 n.
Shakespeare, his house, 1, 8; the country-gentleman who travelled up to London with him, 38; never in Italy, 152; quotations from, 167; unmatched in ancient art, 249; his common sense impregnated with imagination, 2, 57; Spenser and Marlowe his teachers in versification, 307; 7, 285; his humor, 307; his creative faculty, 308; his superiority to his contemporaries, 309; power of condensation, 311; action of his imagination, 3, 122; 7, 61; Wieland's translation, 4, 158; reality of, 163; genius of, 186; never wrote deliberate nonsense, 7, 281; perfection of his metre, 281, 282; his style, 284; dramatic passion in his versification, 291; his influence on other poets, 292; three eminent qualities of, 292–296; as a caterer for the public taste, 297; his patriotism, 298; his management of the supernatural, 298, 301; a source of intellectual training, 302; his skill in dramatic construction, 8, 231–234.
SHAKESPEARE ONCE MORE, 3, 215–320; the conditions of his time favorable, 216; essentially an observer and incapable of partisanship, 216; condition of the English language, 220; its strength and freshness, 223; Shakespeare's use of language, 225, 246, 260; obscurities in his writing, 234, 245; the labors of his editors and commentators, 236, 241; the value of the first folio of 1623, 237; the character of the quartos, 238; the universality and exactness of his knowledge and sympathies, 242; compared in this respect with other writers, 242; his probable intention of editing his works, 244; the necessary qualifications of an editor, 245; Shakespeare's style, 255; impossibility of imitating it, 255; its simplicity, 259; quality of his imagination, 260; his charm even in translation, 261; his power of description, 262; his sympathy with his characters, 263; his classical knowledge obtained at second-hand, 266; 5, 344; profited by converse with cultivated men, 3, 268; parallel passages and expressions in Greek dramas noted, 270; criticised as playing with language, 272; this the common fault of his time, 276; his tragedies compared with the Greek as to motive and action, 279, 318; the symbolism of the *Tempest* traced, 281; conscious of his own powers, 283; his permanent supremacy in literature, 287; on the German stage, 289; German commentators, 290; 7, 149; the object and the success of his work, 3, 291; anachronisms considered, 291; the introduction of low characters and comic scenes in tragedy, 296; analysis of *Hamlet*, 299; the teachings to be found in Shakespeare's plays, 314; his plays not written with a didactic purpose, 315; his judgment and poetic instinct, 318; his material, 319; the moral reality always present, 320; the character of the man, 320; Chaucer his forerunner and prototype, 2, 221; his verse, 246; 5, 303; his

epithets, 2, 255; the poet of man as God made him, 442; Dogberry suggested by Gabriel Harvey, 4, 244 n; passage suggested by Spenser, 269 n; his poetic power not disenchanted by his humor, 7, 65; his characters, 153; *also*, 1, 366; 2, 115, 136, 148, 194, 232, 275, 434; 4, 183; 5, 45, 53, 241, 308, 310; 7, 168, 199, 201.
compared with Carlyle in truth to nature, 2, 82; with Chaucer in the action of the imagination, 255; with Milton, 3, 260; with Æschylus in use of language, 272; with Jonson, 280; with Dante as to subject, 5, 169; with Fletcher and Chapman, 7, 290, 291.
on men's judgments, 3, 68; on the decline in the quality of servants, 4, 52; on England, 255; on good qualities unappreciated, 5, 328.
Dryden's gradual appreciation of, 3, 23; Dryden on, 256; Jonson on, 225 n, 232; Matthew Arnold on, 256; Coleridge on, 256 n, 290; Farmer on, 266; Châteaubriand on, 285; Goethe on, 285, 289, 312; 7, 297; Voltaire on, 3, 285, 291, 311; 2, 425, 426; Hugo on, 3, 286; Lessing's criticism of, 290; 4, 158; Schlegel on, 3, 290; Ulrici on, 291 n, Gervinus on, 291; 4, 93.
Antony and Cleopatra, Lepidus tipsy, 2, 82; *Hamlet* compared with the *Electra*, 163; 3, 269; its effect on an unprejudiced mind imagined, 246; parallel passages in the *Andromache*, *Hippolytus*, and *Hercules Furens*, 270; the cloud-scene with Polonius, 276; Garrick's costume in, 292; the rudeness of manners suggested, 295; historical truth sacrificed to the necessities of the play, 295; the grave-diggers' scene, 296; 6, 297; Hamlet's love for Ophelia, 3, 298; character of Hamlet analyzed, 298, 300; the characters of Ophelia and Laertes, 299; the character of Horatio, 299, 304; Hamlet's madness, 309; the teaching of the play, 314, 317; typical of a modern quality of mind, 316; the contrasts of character in the play, 317; the ghost, 319; *also*, 279; 7, 13. *See also*, Hamlet. *Cymbeline*, 7, 292; 8, 216. *Henry VI.*, parallel passage in the Œdipus Coloneus, 3, 270; instance of quibbling quoted from, 275; White on the authorship of second part, 275 n. *Julius Cæsar*, a passage criticised by Jonson, 225 n. *Lear*, 36, 258, 279; his sarcasm, 309; Edgar's pretended madness, 309; teaching of the play, 314. *Macbeth*, 258, 259, 279; the touches of description dependent on the feeling of the speaker, 264; Lady Macbeth, 272; 5, 263; Kemble's costume in, 3, 293; its teaching, 314; gives the metaphysics of apparitions, 319. *Measure for Measure*, defective in parts, 239; Claudio to be compared with Pheres in the Alcestis, 271. *Merchant of Venice*, Shylock formerly considered a character of low comedy, 7, 154. *Merry Wives of Windsor*, 163. *Midsummer Night's Dream*, 293; the verses "I know a bank," etc., 4, 267 n. *Othello*, 3, 279; the irony of Iago, 308; the teaching of the play, 315. *Romeo* and *Juliet*, the nurse, 276. *Sonnets*, quotation, 2, 196. *Tempest*, 7, 288; its symbolism traced, 3, 281; its references to himself, 283. *Timon*, the irony of Timon, 308. *Troilus and Cressida*, speech of Ulysses to be compared with

Jocasta's in the Phœnissæ, 271; quoted, 5, 141 n, 148. *Two Noble Kinsmen*, 7, 294. *Venus and Adonis*, 7, 287.
Shakespeare's Richard III., 7, 281–302; authorship questioned, 281; deficient in Shakespeare's three eminent qualities, 296; thoroughly melodramatic, 297; its almost ludicrous procession of ghosts, 298, 301; an effective acting play, 300; probably an adaptation from an older author, 301.
Shame attending sin, Webster's lines on, 2, 312.
Shams, 2, 88; Anglo-Saxon repugnance for, 213.
Shandy, Walter, 7, 237.
Shaw, Colonel, his negro regiment, 2, 24.
Shays's rebellion, 2, 6; General Pomeroy's attitude toward, 6, 85.
Sheep and the goats, the only line drawn by Christ, 6, 9.
Sheep-shearing in Passawampscot, 1, 219.
Sheffield, Mrs. Deliverance, Hugh Peter's perplexities concerning, 4, 31.
Shelley, on fire, 1, 335; his influence traced on J. G. Percival, 2, 109; compared with Wordsworth, 109; his genius a St. Elmo's fire, 4, 166; Spenser's influence upon, 320; a great corrector of his own verses, 8, 37; *also*, 5, 191, 240.
Shenstone, his verse on taverns, 1, 80.
Shepard, Thomas, letter to Winthrop on drinking, 4, 49.
Shepherds, Italian, 1, 172.
Sherbrooke, Lord, on educating your future rulers, 7, 33; on free schools, 205.
Sheridan, the *Rivals*, 2, 169; Burke on, 3, 32.
Sherman's lozenges, 6, 198.
Shiftiness, American, its advantages, 2, 19.
Ship, Percival's verse compared to a cranky ship, 2, 104.
Ship on fire within, Puritanism compared to, 1, 43.
Ship's poor relation, X, the Chief Mate an instance, 1, 141.
Shipping, American, 7, 225; effect of protection on, 264.
Shirley, James, 8, 178; not the author of the *Tragedy of Chabot*, 264.
Shoddy, 1, 296.
Shooting-stars, 2, 338; and planets, 6, 334.
Shower-baths, 1, 213.
Shows at the Harvard Commencement, 1, 44.
Shrugs, Italian, 1, 170, 195.
Shylock, 1, 323.
Siamese twins, 1, 44.
Sibbald, his *Chronicle of Scottish Poetry*, 4, 225.
Sibilants, Taylor's use of, 3, 33; Milton's use of, 5, 282, 285.
Sibyl, Temple of, at Tivoli, 1, 160.
Sidney, Algernon, 2, 428.
Sidney, Sir Philip, 7, 321; Mathew Roydon's lines on, applied to Emerson, 2, 391, 404; Wotton on, 3, 110 n; compared with Spenser, 4, 233; his influence on English style, 234; his *Arcadia*, 234, 309; his experiments in metre, 235, 263; on Spenser's language, 262 n; a modernizer of English, 8, 198; Drayton on, 199; sonnet by, 200; *also*, 2, 399.
Siegfried, 2, 90.
Sierra Morena of Don Quixote, 1, 137.
Siger, Doctor, Dante's allusion to, 5, 10, 65.
Sign-board on Lewis the brewer's handcart, 1, 23.
Silkworm, a poet compared to, 2, 194.

Simile and metaphor, 2, 430.
Similes, to be drawn from the flying-fish, 1, 124; in Chapman's Homer, 2, 322; in early English narrative poetry, 3, 224; of Dante, 5, 166. *See also*, Metaphors.
Simonides, 2, 174.
Simony of *withholding* the gifts of God for a price, 6, 15.
Simplicity, literary, 2, 58; of Homer, 324; distinguished from vulgarity, 4, 234; the crowning result of the highest culture, 261.
Simpson, Agnes, her confession of witchcraft, 3, 159; the evidence against her, 189.
Simulacra of Lucian, 3, 125 n.
Sin, the hatefulness of, 5, 69; Dante on the punishment of, 70; its nature, 157. *See also*, Evil.
Sin and crime identical with Dante, 5, 135 n.
Sincerity, required in a tourist, 1, 146; the evidence of, 4, 186; demanded of a sentimentalist, 201; necessary for an autobiography, 205; *also*, 2, 426.
Singer, S. W., 8, 101, 102.
Singularity, the conceit of, 7, 9.
Singularity in virtue easily believed, 4, 203.
Sirens, 1, 148; Prof. P. imagined passing their island, 59.
Sisera, 8, 130.
Sixteenth century rich in famous men, 3, 232.
Skeat, W. W., editor of Chaucer, 2, 237.
Skelton, John, Dyce's edition of, 2, 354; character of his verse, 4, 230.
Skelton, *Philip Sparowe* cited, 7, 324.
Sketching near Tivoli, 1, 156.
Slander, the truth in, 1, 305.
Slave Power, its danger to the Union foreseen by Quincy, 2, 38.
Slave trade, extension of, procured by South Carolina and Georgia, 6, 172.
Slaves, Emanuel Downing advocates the introduction of, into New England, 4, 49; excluded from the operation of Providence by the American Tract Society, 6, 9; the sympathy with fugitive slaves at the North, 36; to be regarded as men under the Constitution and on Southern evidence, 37; in the Roman army, 157.
Slavery, Marston's lines on, 2, 297; in New England: John Winthrop's negro, 4, 81; the attitude of the American Tract Society toward, 6, 4; its discussion not feared in the South before 1831, 6; moral duties connected with, proper subjects of discussion, 9; compromise a fatal word with respect to, 11; the inconsistency of Christians in condoning, 14; antiquity no valid plea for, 16; has no claim to immunity from discussion, 17, 38, 171; its abuses to be rooted out even if the institution were righteous, 17; essentially a moral, and not a political question, 18; the question forced upon us by the spirit of Christianity, 19; its influence upon American politics, 26, 52, 174; its degrading effect on the non-slaveholding states, 28, 176; additional privileges demanded for an already privileged property, 35; its discussion dangerous to the slaveholders, not to the Union, 39; its blighting effect on the South, 40, 273, 275, 310; position of the Republican party with regard to, 43, 51; its presence in the Territories keeps out free white settlers, 48; laws to protect it in the Territories demanded, 49; its encroachments compared to the advance of a glacier, 53; will gradually melt away before the influence of Truth,

53; no longer the question before the country in 1861, 86; its violent abolition sure to follow secession, 86; moderation impossible in combination with, 105; a radical change in, to be expected from the Civil War, 111; its history in America traced in Greeley's *American Conflict*, 171; the ebb of anti-slavery sentiment for sixty years, 171; its rise after the annexation of Texas, 172; early opinions of, in the South, 172; the theory of its divine origin an invention of recent date, 173; profit the motive of all its encroachments, 174; the claim that it was conservative, 176; its abolition seen to be the necessary consequence of the War in 1864, 184; to be attacked as a crime against the nation, 185; McClellan's attitude toward, 203; to be rooted out in order to insure a lasting peace, 214; Lincoln's attitude toward, 241; its abolition forced upon us by circumstances, 242; admitted as a reserved right under the Constitution, 247; proclaimed by the South as the corner-stone of free institutions, 247; the slaveholders the best propagandists of anti-slavery, 250; the South's proposal to arm the slaves in 1865, 269; the main arguments for slavery thereby swept away, 270; its influence on the character of the blacks, 275; its security and extension the original motive of the War, 305, 307; the alleged attachment between master and servant, 390. *See also*, Fugitive Slave Law; Property in slaves; Emancipation.

Sleep, 1, 338; in a wongen, after moose-hunting, 112.

Sleeping in church, the American Tract Society's tract on, 6, 9.

Sleepy hostler described, 1, 83.

Small men in Europe and America, the point of view different, 2, 8.

Small-pox, Dryden's lines descriptive of, 3, 17.

Smibert, the painter, 1, 40.

Smith and his Dame cited, 2, 379.

Smith, Adam, 7, 226.

Smith, Goldwin, 1, 316.

Smith, Captain John, 4, 79.

Smith, General Kirby, on the possibility of destroying the Southern army the first winter, 6, 136.

Smith, Sydney, his question, Who reads an American book? 2, 113; on taking short views of life, 7, 261.

Smoke, seen in winter, 1, 370; Thoreau's lines on, 371.

Smoking at sea, 1, 123.

Smollett, Lessing on his *Roderick Random*, 4, 130; copied Cervantes, 7, 164.

Snow brothers, oyster men in Cambridge, 1, 30; anticipatory elegy on, 30; on Commencement days, 46.

Snow, the silence of, 1, 295; Goethe on, 349; poets' references to, 357; the wind's action on, 360; the footprints of animals on, 360; the quietly falling, 362; its beautiful curves, 362; building and moulding in, 365; its colors, 367; in city streets, 368.

Snow-crusts, 1, 368.

Snow fights, 1, 366.

Snow forts, 1, 366.

Snow-storm, walk in, 1, 356; Homer's picture of, 357; the silence and purity of the next morning, 359.

Snuff-box, Dr. Waterhouse's advertisement for, 1, 63.

Socialism, confuted by Spenser, 4, 318; dangerous to the existing order of things, 7, 34; its beneficent possibilities, 35; fatal to certain homespun virtues, 205; a serious factor, 8, 160–162.

Society, its periodic ebbs and floods,

4, 221; its constitution, etc., Dante's views of, 5, 40; the chief end of man formerly and now, 7, 11; men beginning to know their opportunity and their power, 12; social upheaval the result of neglected duties, 13; the disquiet caused by "growing-pains," 14; changes never welcomed, 15; ages of transition, 16; the mastery of new social forces, 17; instinct to admire what is better than one's self the tap-root of civilization, 31; state socialism disastrous, 35; violent changes not to be expected, 35; the germs of its evils to be discovered and extirpated, 36; its strong constitution shown by the quack medicines it has survived, 36; Wordsworth's early belief in the gregarious regeneration of man, 125; the necessity of individual improvement of personal character, 126; the Don Quixotes of, 147; the doctrinaire reformers of, 150; the facts of life bound up with other facts of the present and the past, 151; Don Quixote's struggles against, without result, 151; the motto "Do right though the heavens fall," 152; its recognized authoritative guides, 191; the influence of the few, 213; necessity of cultivating the things of the mind, 277. *See also*, Civilization; Life; Progress; Culture; Politics; Crime.

Society, value of, 1, 87; 7, 202; its code of manners, 2, 419. *See also*, Good society.

Socrates, 2, 83; his grave irony, 3, 308.

Sohrab and Rustem, 2, 205.

Soil, its formation, 2, 193; language compared to, 207.

Soldiers, literary men who have been, 2, 18. *See also*, American soldiers.

Solidity and lightness as elements of character, 6, 301.

Solitude, the supremest sense of, given by full daylight, 1, 127; Cowley on, 145; felt in Rome, 225; verses on, in Dodsley's Collection, 296; needed for the imagination, 3, 45; *also*, 3, 187; 5, 179.

Sonnet, 3, 227; Wordsworth's use of, 7, 135.

Sophocles, 2, 178; *Ajax*, his quibbles, 3, 275; *Antigone*, 5, 134; the first example of character-painting, 3, 279; *Electra*, parallel passage in Hamlet, 269; *Œdipus Coloneus*, parallel passage in King *Henry VI.*, 270.

Soracte, Island of, 1, 172.

Sorrow, secretiveness of real, 8, 311.

Soul, conceived of as a piece of property, 3, 133; Dante on its relation to God, 5, 83; the, in literature, 7, 317. *See also*, Human nature; Man.

Soup, the Irishman's kettle of, 6, 349.

South, the. *See* United States.

Southampton, L. I., Declaration in 1673, 4, 71.

South Carolina, the long-windedness and short-meaningness of her politicians, 6, 63; the secession proceedings, 70; her politicians adroit managers, but not business men, 71; her prosperity dependent on cotton alone, 72; the difficulty of meeting her financial obligations in case of war, 73; opens the War by the attack on Fort Sumter, 88; undervalues the people of the Free States, 88; slavery abhorred by the best men of, in 1786, 172; at the Philadelphia convention of 1866, 352.

Southey, his correspondence, 2, 463; view of religion, 3, 107 n; his communistic dreams, 5, 195 n;

occasional coarseness of his *Doctor*, 7, 69; anecdote of an old woman's remark on the weather, 102.
on domestic servants, 4, 53; on pure English, 234 n; on Wordsworth, 5, 214 n.
Southwell, reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 279; his bad verse, 280; poor style of the editor, 282; ultramontanism and credulity of the editor, 285.
Spain, first glimpse of, from the sea, 1, 137.
Spalding, Captain, his sight of the sea-serpent, 1, 130.
Spanish American republics, their great men ignored by us, 2, 15.
Spanish drama, 2, 169; 7, 142; the Fate element in, 3, 279.
Spanish literature, its national character, 7, 141.
Spanish romances, 7, 142.
Sparrow on the house-top, his life, 4, 125, 131, 140.
Spartacus, 6, 156.
Spasmodic school of poets, 2, 309, 310.
Specialization in education, 7, 211.
Specimen ruin wanted by a Michigan man, 1, 248.
Spectacles of the heroic period, 1, 58, 63.
Speculation, Dante on, 5, 59, 81, 102.
Spedding cited, 3, 239.
Spelling, vagaries of, 4, 71, 73; Milton's, Masson's discussion of, 5, 280.
Spendthrift heirs, 2, 277.
SPENSER, 4, 221–321; the condition of English poetry between Chaucer and Spenser, 221; his contemporaries, 234; his influence on the transformation of English literature, 241; birth and family, 243; education and early life, 243; residence in Ireland, 245; visit to London in 1589, 246; is shocked by the life of the Court, 247; familiar with Dante, 250 n, 298 n; 5, 35; his own success at Court, 4, 250; his allusions to Burleigh, 250; visit to England in 1595 and advancement by the Queen, 256, 257; his children, 256 n; his poverty and misfortunes exaggerated, 257 n; his death, 258; his personal character, 259, 304; his originality, 260; turned to Chaucer as his master, 262; his skill in versification, 263, 267 n, 272, 292; his sense of harmony, 265; his conception of poetry and the poet's office, 268; his diction, 270, 300; 3, 222; his learning, 4, 271; his function "to reign in the air," 276; probably a Puritan, 277; tended to a Platonic mysticism, 279; his purity without coldness, 280, 321; his study of French sources, 280 n; all his senses keenly alive, 280, 290, 302, 311; lacking in sense of humor, 283; his style Venetian, 291; his splendid superfluity, 292; shown in his measurement of time, 296; his dilatation the expansion of natural growth, 297; his verse produces a condition of reverie, 300, 317, 321; his world purely imaginary and unreal, 301, 316; delight in the beauty of nature, 305; his innovations in language, 314; his alliterations, 315; a solid basis of good sense, 318; an Englishman to his inmost fibre, 318; his disciples, 319; his verse, 2, 245, 250; 5, 302; lines on the Rosalind who had rejected him, 2, 465; language, 3, 227 n; reinvented the art of writing well, 255; his view of nature, 2, 257; his allegory, 265; Milton's obligations to, 4, 262, 267 n, 299; Keats's poetic faculty developed by reading, 5,

321, 344; his service in developing the English language, 8, 197; influence of Italian poetry on, 198; *also*, 2, 234, 235, 434; 3, 109, 232; 5, 289, 309:
compared with Sidney, 4, 233; with Ovid in Pontus, 245; with Bunyan as to allegory, 287.
on Chaucer, 2, 268; on hexameter verse, 4, 235; on use of language, 314; on riding, 319; on the world of the imagination, 7, 113.
Dryden's opinion of, 3, 35; 4, 319; Lod. Bryskett's account of, 251; Sidney on his language, 262 n; Henry More on, 277; Hazlitt on, 285; Lamb on, 291; Hughes on his measure, 295 n; Warton on his stanza and his circumlocutions, 294; Wordsworth on, 319; Pope on, 320; Landor on, 320; Milton on, 5, 106 n, 277.
Colin Clout, 4, 245, 247; — *Daphnaida*, 305; — *Epithalamion*, 303; — *Faery Queen* imitates the closing allegory of the *Purgatorio*, 5, 106 n; its success, 247; inspired by Ariosto, 260, 282 n; the sense of taste in, 281 n; its two objects, 281, 288; its characters the leading personages of the day, 282; Mary Queen of Scots as Duessa, 282; the allegory, 283, 284, 291; its merits, 284; its faults as narrative, 285, 287; compared to an illuminated MS., 289; quotations to illustrate the style, 294–301, 307, 311; the sonnets prefixed, 303 n; the character of Una, 306; confutation of socialism, 318; its influence on the world, 319; — *Hymns to Love and Beauty*, 279; — *Mother Hubberd's Tale*, 248, 276, 278 n, 283 n; its date, 249 n; — *Mutability*, 258 n; — *Muiopotmos*, 272, 291 n; — *Prothalamion*, 304; — *Ruins of Time*, 250; — *Shepherd's Calendar*, its publication marks an epoch in English literature, 260; its spirit fresh and original, 261; its style, 262; quoted, 264, 266, 269; — *Tears of the Muses*, 252.
Spenserian stanza. *See* English prosody.
Sphinx-riddle, the childish simplicity of its solution, 6, 244.
Spinoza, 2, 256; 5, 43 n; Coleridge's and Wordsworth's study of, 202; on the strength of laws, 6, 45.
Spire, characteristic of New England religious architecture, 1, 15.
Spirit of the Age, 7, 195; Dryden's recognition of, 3, 11.
Spiritual eye, the imagination, 2, 61.
Spiritualism, 3, 210, 211; 6, 149.
Spontaneousness, 7, 96.
Spread-eagle style, 2, 391.
Spring, 1, 339; 7, 130.
Squatter sovereignty, 6, 32, 48.
Squire of Low Degree, Hazlitt's and Ritson's editions of, 2, 368; cited, 379.
Squirrels, 4, 223; depredations of the red squirrel, 1, 289.
Stage, its morality early defended by Lessing, 4, 117; license of the early English, 8, 297. *See also*, Acting.
Stage-coach ride from Waterville to Newport, Maine, 1, 79; incident of the hot axle, 81. *See also*, Diligence.
Stahr's *Life of Lessing*. *See* Lessing, Stahr's Life of.
Staminate flowers of Literature, 2, 136.
Standard histories, 6, 151.
Standards, those of our companions easily adopted, 1, 97.
Stanley, Dean, speech in the chapter-house of Westminster Ab-

bey, Dec. 13, 1881, 7, 53–56; the character of the mourners at his funeral, 54; the many-sidedness of his sympathies, 54; his pleasantness, 55; the human nature in him, 55; Americans ready to contribute to his memorial, 56.
Stanton, Secretary, McClellan's unfounded charges on, 6, 137.
Starlit night, 2, 392.
Stars, 2, 399; Thoreau's writing compared to, 141; seen in winter, 1, 373.
Stars in the Triennial Catalogue, 1, 48.
State, the, 8, 158.
State rights, 6, 77; in the light of the framers of the Constitution, 179; Jefferson's theory of, 180, 181; confusion of mind with regard to the doctrine, 247.
State socialism disastrous to the commonwealth, 7, 35.
Statesmanship, a complicated art, 1, 310; its necessary qualities, 6, 141, 226; its highest function, 240; the problems and duties of, 7, 240; illustrated in the writings and speeches of Burke, 240; shown by Senators Fessenden, Trumbull, and Grimes, 242; the duty to study tendencies and consequences, 262. *See also*, Government; Politics.
Statesmen, 2, 37; course of a statesman compared to that of a river, 6, 241; the waiters on popular providence humorously so called, 7, 224.
Statesmen and politicians, 5, 73.
Stationers' Hall, 8, 118.
Statistics do not appeal to the Muses, 2, 7. *See also*, Figures.
Statius read to the Earl of Orford when drunk, 2, 168.
Statues, naked, not inappropriate out of doors in Rome, 1, 252.
Steam, 1, 100; its influence on education, 77; fatal to the romance of the sea, 122.
Stedman, champion of the county, 1, 28.
Steele, Sir Richard, on politicians, 1, 368; his compliment to his wife, 2, 462; his loyalty to Addison, 466; and Addison, together made a man of genius, 8, 15.
Steevens, George, cited, 3, 239.
Stephen, Leslie, 1, 319.
Stephens, Alexander H., arguments for slavery, 6, 270; on the cause of secession, 306 n.
Sterne, 2, 65, 134; 3, 129; 4, 211; his humor, 2, 308; 4, 100; influenced by Cervantes, 7, 164; perfection of his style, 320; a subtle humorist, 8, 16.
Tristram Shandy, 2, 66.
Sternhold, 3, 94.
Sternhold and Hopkins quoted, 4, 231.
Stevens, Thaddeus, of Pennsylvania, 6, 326, 374.
Stevenson, Marmaduke, the Quaker, 4, 76.
Steward, the Chief Mate's jokes in regard to, 1, 141.
Still, John, 8, 173.
Stilts, Shelley and Wordsworth on, 2, 109; Percival's appearance on, 110.
Stimulants, use of, Carlyle's increasing extravagance compared to, 2, 73.
Stoicism, genial, advantages of, 1, 6.
Stolberg, Auguste, Goethe's letters to, 4, 195.
Stomach, the, its country-cousinship to the brain, 3, 30 n.
Storg, Edelmann (W. W. Story), memoir on Cambridge thirty years ago addressed to, 1, 3; the author's early life in company with, 13; Moosehead journal addressed to, 71; journey in Italy in company with, 153; not fond of walking, 155.

Storms charged to America, 7, 8.
Story, W. W., 7, 183. *See also*, Storg.
Stoughton, on the planting of New England, 7, 177 n.
Stoves, 1, 371.
Strafford, Masson's description of the death of, 5, 262.
Stratford de Redcliffe, Lord, 7, 42.
Strauss, some Italians familiar with, 1, 185.
Strawberries, Thoreau's works compared to the various kinds of, 2, 139.
Street-cries in Rome, 1, 180.
Stuart, character of his painting, 1, 40.
Stubbs, John, 4, 75.
Study, without application, mere gymnastics, 1, 93.
Style, 2, 254, 429; 3, 249, 253, 256; of small importance to the young, 2, 435; clearness and terseness essentials of, 469; the importance of knowing what to leave in the inkstand, 5, 269; its power in historical composition, 6, 149; the practice of translation a help toward, 7, 112; as a test of authenticity, 284; hard to teach, 320. *See also*, Abundance; Alliteration; Artifice; Assonance; Bourgeois; Choice of words; Composition; Conceits; Correctness; Decorum; Description; Diction; Elegancy; Eloquence; Epithets; Execution; Expression; Force; Form; Images; Individualism; Indirectness; Metaphors; Naturalness; Personification; Similes; Simplicity; Suggestion; Superlatives; Unconventionality; Unexpectedness; Vividness.
of Emerson, 2, 138; of Thoreau, 141; of Shakespeare, 3, 255; of Daniel, 4, 240.
Styles, Elizabeth, her confession of dealings with the Devil, 3, 144.
Stylites, the oldest surviving graduate compared to, 1, 48.
Subiaco, the road to, 1, 156, 180; seen from a distance at night, 213; arrival at the inn, and supper, 214; the scenery about, 215; convent of San Benedetto, 215.
Sublimity, in mountains, how felt, 1, 116; Dryden on, 3, 110 n; audacity of self-reliance an important part of, 5, 311.
Subscription for repairing a convent demanded by a friar, 1, 246.
Success, 4, 21; its requisites, 2, 56; the popular ideal of, 7, 207; the true measure of a nation's success, 209.
Suffering, enjoyed by the sentimentalist, 4, 194; its moral effect, 6, 273.
Suffrage, negro. *See* Negro suffrage.
Suffrage, property qualification abolished in Massachusetts, 7, 7.
Suffrage, universal, its advantages and objections, 6, 283; its failure in large cities, 7, 7; its practical working, 26; danger of denying it, 28; develops the prudence and discretion of the people, 29.
Sufis, their teaching on the three steps to perfection, 5, 158.
Suggestion, value of, in literature, 3, 89; more important than cumulation, 262.
Suicide, Châteaubriand's attempts at, 2, 126; Percival's attempt at, 126; Waller's lines on, 432; Dryden's lines on, 3, 55 n; Lessing's thoughts of, 4, 144.
Suicide by proxy, 4, 194.
Summer, 1, 339.
Sumter, Fort, rumors of its intended bombardment, 6, 76.
Sun, alone with him at sea or on a mountain-top, 1, 126.
Sunfish harpooned at sea, 1, 123.
Sunflowers, 1, 22.
Sunrise, at sea, 1, 127; verses on, 128.

Sunset, on the Penobscot, 1, 108; near Tivoli, 172, 217; at Palestrina, 189; original every evening, 5, 342.
Sunset of life, 2, 41.
Sunshine in Italy, 1, 252.
Superfluous, Voltaire on, 1, 239.
Superlatives in Milton, 5, 287.
Supernatural, origin of the belief in, 3, 123.
Supernatural and natural, a vast border-land between them, 3, 183.
Superstition, Roman Catholicism in Italy only a, 1, 184; the æsthetic variety of, 3, 120; modern superstition the Jacobitism of sentiment, 120; its etymological meaning, 130; its growth from myth, 166; regarded as of one substance with faith, 197; caused by materialism, 210; decay of, 7, 30.
Superstitions often the relics of religious beliefs, 2, 131.
Supper at the inn, in Subiaco, 1, 215.
Surrey, 4, 231, 263; his *Æneid*, 3, 51 n.
Swearing, of the Italian guide, 1, 204; its evangelists, 2, 132.
Swedenborg, 5, 157; some Italians familiar with, 1, 185.
Sweetheart, appreciation of, by other people, 1, 307.
Swift, his humor reappears in Carlyle, 2, 65; his cynicism the result of personal disappointment, 76; his view of religion, 427; affected indifference to the world in his correspondence, 438; correspondence with Pope, 464; his influence on Pope, 471; hatred of the triplet, 3, 5; use of images criticised, 35; his style, 42; his filthy cynicism, 69; compared with Fielding, 7, 76; influenced by Cervantes, 164; *also*, 4, 100. on the influence of women in refining language, 3, 44; on Dryden, 44 n; on his prefaces, 47; on Roman noses, 353.
Dryden on, 3, 45 n.
Swinburne's Tragedies, 2, 157–179; his power of assimilating style, 164; his *Chastelard*, its character, 159; belongs to the physically intense school, 159; his *Atalanta in Calydon*, its verse, 160; its lack of reality, 161; its profusion of imagery, 163; its Greek theme and manner, 164; essay on Wordsworth, 7, 122.
Switzerland, democracy in, 7, 19.
Sword, the gift of Christ, 6, 13.
Sylvester II., Pope, charged with having made a compact with Satan, 3, 136.
Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, Dryden's opinion of, 3, 35; Wordsworth on, 4, 319.
Symbolism of the *Divina Commedia*, 5, 49.
Symmachus, 3, 126.
Symonds's Hill, Cambridge, 1, 15.
Sympathetic powder, Sir K. Digby's, 4, 65.
Sympathy, of kindred pursuits, 1, 142; fostered by simple village life, 5, 179; increased by individualization, 6, 298; between England and America, 7, 56.
Syntax, Dr., 2, 89.

T. G. A. = Thomas Gold Appleton.
T. H. = Thomas Hughes.
Tacitus, the Agricola compared with Maidstone's account of Cromwell, 4, 44; a phrase of Milton's borrowed from, 5, 276; *also*, 4, 262; 5, 40; 6, 149.
Taine, his *History of English Literature*, 6, 154.
Talent, compared with genius, 1, 49; character valued more highly than, 4, 201. *See also*, Genius.
Talleyrand, want of respect for, 2, 48.

Tannhäuser, 1, 129; its allegory, 2, 177.
Tariff, President Cleveland's message on, 7, 224, 262; reduction of the tariff demanded, 262.
Tariff Reform: address Dec. 29, 1887, 7, 219–229.
Tasso, 3, 232; his definite comparisons, 5, 293; his work saved by its diction, 7, 73.
Taste, 3, 37; the Anglo-Saxon want of confidence in matters of, 2, 421; must not exceed its rightful province, 430; controversies of, 436; sense of, in the *Faery Queen*, 4, 281 n.
Taurus, constellation presides over bulls and blunders, 2, 290.
Taverns, their carnal attractions bewailed by Cotton Mather, 1, 43; in Maine, 80; Shenstone's verse on, 80; at Greenville, 83; in Kineo, kept by Squire Barrows, 91; in Passawampscot, 221; kept by persons who have not the genius, 4, 82. *See also*, Inns.
Taverner, the ghost of James Haddock appears to, 3, 126.
Taxation in Austria in 1546, 7, 11 n.
Taylor, Bayard, quoted, 6, 253.
Taylor, Jeremy, 8, 88; his long sentences, 1, 255; his style, 3, 32; one of Keats's last pleasures, 5, 339; *also*, 3, 217; 4, 290 n.
Taylor, John, the water poet, his language, 3, 227 n.
Taylor, Thomas, the Platonist, 7, 176.
Teachers, rarity of great teachers, 7, 180.
Teaching, the aims of, 7, 191; its tendency to decline, 205.
Teaching language, Roger Williams's method, 4, 38.
Tears, genuine and assumed, 4, 195.
Tediousness, 2, 121.
Tehmine, lament of, 2, 205.
Teiresias, 5, 309.
Telegraph, its insidious treachery in multiplying rumors, 6, 222; its impartial brevity and cynicism, 295; its effect on the national thought and character, 299; 7, 210; makes the whole nation one great town-meeting, 6, 301; its effect in a democracy, 7, 21 n; the common nervous system of the world, 46.
Telephone, perhaps cannot carry human speech so far as Homer and Plato have done, 8, 10.
Temperance question, in early New England, Thomas Shepard on, 4, 49; attitude of the American Tract Society toward, 6, 7.
Temptation, Rousseau on the avoidance of, 4, 192.
Teniers, passage in Spenser compared to, 4, 272.
Ten-minute speeches, 7, 271.
Tennyson, character of his verse, 2, 158; his *Idylls of the King*, 171; quoted by a Mississippi boatman, 1, 278; his knights unreal persons, 6, 299; *also*, 5, 191.
Tenure of office, in Cambridge, in old times, 1, 21; the four-year term compared to a nail-cutting machine, 21.
Terni, falls of, Byron on, 1, 154.
Terry, abuse of Keats in *Blackwood*, 5, 324.
Testament, Davenport's "right-aim," 1, 36.
Teutonic poetry before Dante, 5, 130.
Texas, settlers from Free States driven out from, 6, 48.
annexation of, consequent rise of the anti-slavery spirit, 6, 172; encroachments of slavery after, 174.
Thackeray, W. M., at sea, 1, 123, sentiment of, 4, 196; as an historian, 6, 150; on the hands and feet of the Americans, 379; on

Fielding, 7, 72; *also*, 2, 98, 258.
Thales, 4, 98.
Theatre, the Spanish, a growth of the soil, 8, 176. *See* Acting; Drama; Stage.
Theatrical scenery compared to short-lived literary fame, 2, 53.
Theleme, Abbey of, 1, 54.
Theobald, Pope on, 2, 466.
Theocritus, 2, 166, 173; 7, 208; Dryden on, 3, 99.
Theodoric troubled by the death of Symmachus, 3, 126.
Theological discussion, lack of interest in, on the part of the laity, 4, 153; at Geneva, 188.
Theology, Lessing's attitude toward, 4, 150; Dante on, 5, 98.
Theophilus of Adana, 3, 134.
Theory and practice divorced by the sentimentalist, 4, 192, 194.
Theories and facts, 4, 87.
Thermometers, 1, 263.
Thiers, 7, 253.
Thinking, an occupation generally dreaded, 1, 93; the highest result of education, 7, 108.
Thomson, the first descriptive poet, 1, 342; his poetical creed, 2, 409; his *Winter* a protest against the literature of Good Society, 409; a follower of Spenser, 4, 320; his style compared with Milton's, 5, 277; a man of true poetic sensibility, 8, 15 n; *also*, 2, 413; 3, 6.
on winter, 1, 347.
Lessing on, 4, 130.
Thor, traditions of, transferred to the Devil, 3, 154.
Thoreau, 2, 131–153; his posthumous works, edited by Emerson, compared to strawberries, 139; his high conceit of himself, 140; his lack of the faculty of generalization and of active imagination, 140; his critical power limited, 140; his style, 141; less poet than naturalist, 141; his discoveries, 141; his freshness of treatment, 142; his isolation and exclusiveness, 142; his itch of originality, 143, 144; his paradoxes compared to Dr. Winship's dumb-bells, 143; his extravagance of statement, 143; the limitations imposed by his withdrawal from the world, 145; his lack of humor, 146; his egotism, 146; his character not sweetened by communion with Nature, 149; the quality of his mind, 150; monotony of his writings, 150; his writing incomparable at its best, 151; the ideal element, 151; his independency of mankind practically impossible, 152; his aim, 152; his style, 153; lines on smoke from a woodcutter's cabin, 1, 371; on the "whoop" of the freezing lake, 375.
Thought, influenced by the material it works in, 7, 105; plausible substitutes for, 8, 118. *See also*, Thinking.
Thunder, Milton's more elaborate passages compared to, 5, 294.
Thunder-storms, J. F.'s enjoyment of, 1, 57.
Thuroldus, 7, 327.
Ticknor, George, his kindness to young scholars, 2, 126; his lectures on Dante, 5, 36.
Tide in the affairs of men, 4, 11.
Tieck, 2, 169; 7, 290; on Kemble in *Macbeth*, 3, 293.
Tiedge, 2, 110.
Tillotson, Dryden's style formed after, 3, 105; Lessing's father the translator of, 4, 113.
Time, the Roman and the Anglo-Saxon treatment of, 1, 157; measured by the great clock of the firmament, 4, 296; lines of Spenser referring to, 296; God alone has enough, 6, 232; *also*, 5, 235.

Timon of Athens. *See* Shakespeare.
Tinker, John, steward of Winthrop, his use of the word *help* quoted, 4, 52; extracts from his letters, 81; desired to keep an ordinary or tavern, 82.
Tithonus, 2, 55.
Titian's Assumption, the cherubs of, 2, 398.
Titles, the republican ear soon reconciled to, 1, 162.
Titmouse, Emerson's, 1, 268.
Tito, at Tivoli, 1, 162.
Tivoli, visit to, 1, 153; source of the Roman lime supply, 179; drive to, from Subiaco, 217.
Tobacco, 4, 67.
Tobacco chewing, 1, 33.
Toby, Uncle, 6, 132.
Toepffer, his poet, Alberto, who tried to look like his portrait, 5, 235; 6, 122.
Toland, John, 8, 123.
Toledo, the Devil's school of magic in, 3, 178.
Toleration, 4, 22; 7, 54; difficulty of obtaining a perfect conception of, 4, 78; Coleridge on, 152; a partial view of, 8, 116.
Toll, paying, 1, 50.
Tombola, or lottery, 1, 185.
Tombs, John, Anabaptist writer, 4, 45.
Tooke, Horne, on Dryden, 3, 99; on his *Don Sebastian*, 92; etymology of *highth*, 5, 284.
Toombs, Robert, 6, 80.
Tories of Cambridge, 1, 15, 61.
Torneo, 1, 173.
Tortoise, Gilbert White's observations on, 1, 262.
Torture of witches described by Bodin, 3, 190.
Toryism of Scott and Carlyle distinguished, 2, 89.
Torzelo, Cambridgeport marshes compared to, 1, 36.
Toucy, 6, 96.
Town meetings, 6, 301; as a means of training in citizenship, 7, 253.
Tracts confused with actions of trower by the American Tract Society, 6, 11.
Trade distinguished from commerce, 2, 23.
Trade-unions, 7, 15.
Trade-wind, the movement of Milton's verse compared to, 5, 228.
Tradition, the one thing better than, 2, 134; its value in politics, 7, 20.
Traditions, the preciousness of, 1, 296; their power, 2, 92.
Tragedy, English, French, and Spanish, 2, 169. *See also*, Drama.
Training, 1, 327.
Training-days, Harvard Washington Corps on, 1, 54; fight with the college students, 59.
Transcendental, the abuse of the term, 2, 134.
Transcendental movement, 2, 397; its humors, 131; its solid and serious kernel, 133; simply a struggle for fresh air and *life*, 134; its radical difference from the doctrine of Carlyle, 138.
Transformation of men into animals, instances of the belief in, 3, 169.
Translation, the aroma of the original necessarily lost, 2, 320; an adequate impression of force and originality demanded, 321; recent discussions on translating Homer, 322; liberties allowed a translator, 326; Coleridge's excellence in, 7, 86; the practice of, favorable to a good English style, 112, 315, 316; 8, 197; its value as a means of discipline, 1, 199; *also*, 3, 261; 7, 131.
Chapman on, 2, 319, 321; Dryden on, 3, 101; Lieberkühn's theory of, 4, 110; Dante and Cervantes on, 5, 118.
Translations, Dryden's, 3, 24; value of, 7, 111.

Transubstantiation, 5, 162; a slave-dealer's view of, 6, 4.
Travel, how one is thrown upon one's own resources, 1, 92; best time of life for, 3; the mental and spiritual outfit for, commonly unheeded, 5; a cure for self-importance, 6; familiarity with one's own village, at least, a prerequisite, 6; delicate senses and the fine eye of imagination necessary, 6; its object to know *things*, not *men*, 7; verses on travel at home, 8; mere sights need not be visited, 9; its object to discover one's self, 10; folly of visiting Europe if self-absorbed, 10; the wise man stays at home, 11; necessary for the study of æsthetics, but not of history, 14; opinion of Jonathan Wild's father on, 144; Montaigne's and Ulysses's objects, 147; books of travel, 7, 113.
Travellers, their stories no longer proverbial, 1, 131; modern travellers too sceptical and scientific, 132; no longer endowed with imagination, 132; mistaken aims of most, 145; their want of sincerity, 146; on what the value of their journals depends, 152; beset by guides, as oysters are by crabs, 160.
Treason, American notions of, 6, 313.
Tree of knowledge, its apples now nearly all plucked, 1, 132.
Trees, of Cambridge, 1, 16; their anatomy seen in winter, 370; the associations of, called up by the imagination, 5, 222.
Trent, Council of, 4, 27.
Trial, the sources of strength in, 6, 160.
Triennial Catalogue of Harvard College, 1, 47.
Tristàn of Godfrey of Strasburg cited, 2, 379.
Trithemius on the demon-cook of the Bishop of Hildesheim, 3, 175.
Triumph, Roman, 1, 172.
Troubadours, 2, 196; compared with the Trouvères, 207; love of nature, 256. *See also*, Provençal poetry.
Trouvères, 3, 287; 4, 222; 6, 299; freshness and vigor of their poetry, 2, 203; its disproportion and want of art, 205; compared with the Troubadours, 207; acquired an ease and grace in narrative, 208.
Trumbull, John, the painter, 1, 40.
Trumbull, Dr. Hammond, 7, 180.
Trumbull, Senator Lyman, 7, 242.
Truth, sacredness of, 2, 87; Carlyle's passion for, 94; its form and position variable in different generations, 3, 182; in works of art, 294; Lessing's passion for, 4, 132; one for the world, another for the conscience, 215; purity in language dependent on veracity of thought, 215; not to be followed too near the heels, 282 n; 7, 72; of science and of morals compared, 5, 160; courts discussion, 6, 17; its benignant influence, 53; loyalty to, 398; why she is said to lie at the bottom of a well, 7, 26; the difficulty in finding and interpreting, 190; its personal application, 237. *See also*, Fact.
Chaucer on, 2, 189; Langland on, 231; Lessing on searching for, 4, 167; Dante on the pursuit of, 5, 99.
Truth to Nature, 3, 276; how reached, 2, 166.
Tumbling, political, 6, 362.
Tupelo tree, 1, 33.
Tupper, M. F., 1, 337; 2, 228, 281; 6, 147.
Turell, Mr., of Medford, his account of a case of pretended possession in Littleton in 1720, 3,

203 ; exposed a case of pretended witchcraft, 4, 14.
Turenne compared with Frederick the Great, 2, 95.
Turgot on simplicity, 2, 147.
Turnbull, W. B., editor of Southwell's poems, his poor English, 2, 282 ; his ultramontanism and credulity, 285.
Turner, Colonel, 4, 29.
Turner, J. M. W., Wordsworth's descriptive poetry likened to, 5, 194 ; his remark to a lady who did not appreciate his pictures, 7, 149.
Turnips, 1, 22.
Turtle-dove, 1, 284.
Tusser, his lines on his early education, 2, 32.
Twaddle in ancient times, 1, 121.
Tweed, 5, 72.
Twilight, in St. Peter's, Rome, 1, 236 ; its charm described, 293.
Twin-brothers Snow, elegy upon, 1, 30.
Two Noble Kinsmen, authorship of, 8, 288.
Tyler, John, President, 6, 359 ; his lack of popularity, 363.
Tylor on the origin of the supernatural, 3, 123.
Types, 2, 210.
Typographical errors. *See* Misprints.
Tyranny of a democracy, the old fallacy of, 6, 369.
Tyrwhitt, editor of Chaucer, 2, 243.

Ulloa on the conversion of the Mexicans by the Spaniards, 2, 264.
Ulrici on Shakespeare, 3, 291 n.
Ulysses, wreck of, 1, 129 ; his objects in travel, 147 ; the type of long-headedness, 2, 166 ; of Shakespeare, Dante, and Tennyson, 3, 294 ; of Shakespeare, 318.
Unaccountable gifts ascribed to improbable causes, 1, 106.
Unattained, the, its beauty illustrated, 1, 99.
Unbelief. *See* Scepticism.
Uncle Zeb, 1, 88 ; his conversational powers, 89 ; his opinions on water, 98, 101 ; his theory concerning salt pork, 101 ; his frequent potations, and difficulties with his load, 103.
Unconventionality essential to poetry, 2, 430. *See also*, Naturalness.
Underhill, Captain, his character, 4, 66 ; his theological heresies, 67 ; his public confession in Boston, 68 ; extracts from his correspondence, 69 ; beseeches Dudley and Winthrop to use him with Christian plainness, 71 ; defends himself from aspersion, 72 ; example of his grandiloquent style, 73.
Understanding strong in the Saxon character, 2, 213.
Undine. *See* Fouqué.
Unexpectedness a source of pleasure in reading, 2, 60.
Unicorn, 1, 134.
Uniformity, of the present age, 1, 115 ; of ordinary minds, 5, 201.
Unitarianism in England, 7, 16.
United States, the preciousness of the nation seen in the light of the heroes of the Civil War, 1, 294 ; its material greatness, 309 ; the change from the conditions of the Revolutionary period, 316 ; the changes brought about by the Civil War, 326 ; relations with England in 1869, 330 ; immigration into, 7, 23 ; the material prosperity of our early history, 246 ; the Fourth of July period, 246 ; the true birthday of the nation, 272. *See also*, America ; American Civil War ; American Colonies ; American politics ; Congress ; Declaration of Independence.
in 1805–13, 2, 35, 36.
in 1860, 6, 23–53 ; the election awaited with composure, 23 ; its

political significance, 28, 29, 42, 47; Cotton proclaimed King by Mr. Hammond, 28; the interpretation of certain points of the Constitution the question at issue, 30; all four tickets profess equal loyalty to it, 30; the principles of the Democratic candidates, Breckinridge and Douglas, 30; the *aliases* of the pro-slavery party, 31; the Bell and Everett ticket, 32; its prime object defined by Governor Hunt, 34; two parties, a Destructive and a Conservative, in the field, 34; the latter as little likely to abolish human nature as Lincoln to abolish slavery, 37; the rights and institutions of the North also sacred, 38; the multiplication of slave communities the question at issue, 42; the position of the Republican party, 43; the excitement of the time a healthy sign, 44; a question involving the primal principles of government to be decided, 45; the domestic relations of the states not to be interfered with, 46; decided opinions on the subject of slavery discouraged, 46; the fate of the Territories to be determined, 47; the threat of secession not likely to be carried out, 50; the demand of the Free States, 51.

in 1861: the inadequacy of the last months of Buchanan's administration, 6, 57, 221, 305; the credit of the nation shaken, 57; the significance of the crisis, 59; the question of secession, 60; threats of, had not been generally believed, 64; rapid growth of a united public sentiment, 65; the extent of coercion called for, 69, 83, 89; necessity for prompt action, 69, 82, 105; the time for concession past, 70, 78, 105; the demands of the South for special protection of its slave property, 71; the absurd rumors of the day, 76; the army and navy loyal, 77; the prevalent confusion of ideas in regard to state rights, 77; the duty of the hour, 79; interference with the South in its domestic concerns not intended, 79; the Union to be preserved at any cost, 80; civil war to be avoided by prompt action, 82; the antipathy between the North and the South exaggerated, 82; the loyal minority in the Slave States to be supported, 83; the hesitating policy of the government, 84, 93; the President's correspondence with rebel commissioners, 84; the Border States being influenced by Southern emissaries, 85; not slavery, but the reëstablishment of order, the question in hand, 86, 103; South Carolina begins the war, 87; the duty of exerting the power of the government, 89.

disunion for a time supposed to be inevitable, 6, 93; the North staggered for a moment by the claim to a *right* of secession, 94, 104; a Convention of Notables called, 94; compromises freely proposed, 95, 204; time thus gained by the Secessionists, 95, 104, 106; the position of the Border States, 95, 101; the need of a leader, 97; the inauguration of Lincoln, 97; the despondency in the North, 97, 220; the secret and dishonest proceedings of the South, 98, 111; Lincoln's inaugural, 100; the administration's lack of confidence, 100, 108; the proposed abandonment of Fort Pickens, 101; conciliatory measures for the Border States, 101; the disasters of Harper's Ferry and Norfolk, 102; the blunder of discussing slavery and compromise, while the right of secession was the question in hand, 103; the

change of policy effected by the November elections, 104; the slaveholders insist on retaining their supremacy, 105; confidence in the national government diminished by delay, 106; the effect on the North of the attack on Fort Sumter, 107; the aroused earnestness of the nation, 109, 229; the great issues at stake, 109, 221; the present energy and determination of the government, 110; the probable effect of the war on slavery, 111; the wheels of government stalled in the Dismal Swamp of constitutional hermeneutics, 124.

the shock received by the sentiments and ideas at the opening of the war, 6, 219; the reaction following the enthusiasm with which the war was begun, 220; the just grounds of apprehension, 221; the effect of European scepticism or hostility on the spirit of the people, 222; the lack of preparation for a great war, 224; the peculiar difficulty of the President's position, 228, 230; the issues of the day founded on moral principles, 228; the difficulty of restricting sentiment to its proper domain, 230; the cry that the war was an abolition crusade, 248; the time opportune for secession, 305; the position of France and England, 306; the thoughtlessness with which the war was entered upon, 309.

in 1862: popular uneasiness at McClellan's delays, 6, 135; the President's policy with regard to emancipation, 241; the demand for a decided policy, 245; the unsettled state of the public mind with regard to slavery and state rights, 245; caution with respect to the pro-slavery men of the North demanded, 245.

in 1864: McClellan as a candidate for the Presidency, 6, 139; the *manner* of conducting the war not a question for discussion, 140; the kind of statesmanship demanded, 141, 143; the deep purpose of the nation, 142; what does the "Conservative" party intend? 142; the prosecution of the war inevitable, 184, 208; the difficult position of the Democratic party, 189; its candidates, 191, 200; the nomination a political *What-is-it?* 191; the Democratic platform, 193; surrender, their only proposal, 194, 199; the possibilities of a confederacy of slave and free states, 196; free institutions the real stake of the contest, 196; McClellan's interpretation of the Democratic resolutions, 198; the true value of nationality, territory, and power, 199; peace not to be bought by degradation, 199; the policies of Lincoln and McClellan compared, 202, 206; slavery their only essential point of difference, 203; no time for compromise and conciliation, 204, 205; McClellan's policy of conciliation futile, 208, 214; the complete subjugation of the rebellion necessary, 210; Lincoln reproached by both parties, 211; the two parties directly antagonistic in principle, 212; McClellan's election would be an acknowledgment of the right of secession, 213; the abolition of slavery the only guarantee of future peace, 214.

in 1865: the policy of the country on the establishment of peace, 6, 266, the slaveholding class the only obstacle to peace, 268; the favorable elements in the outlook, 271; our duty to repair, not to punish, 273, 276; the questions brought up by the problem of reconstruction, 274, 368

(*see* Reconstruction); the real objects of the war not to be lost sight of in arranging a peace, 276, 277; forbearance and conciliation necessary, 285; public measures to be founded on judgment and convictions, 286; a latent disaffection at the South to be expected, 287; the financial outlook, 287; a sentimental stage-reconciliation to be guarded against, 289; a permanent policy to be preferred to temporary expedients, 280, 290; the cause of the antipathy to be rooted out, 315; our relation to the Southern States, 316; the South to be compelled to accept democracy, 319; no hasty compromises to be adopted, 321; the opportunity for swift decisive action lost, 331.

in 1866: the attitude of Congress encouraging, 6, 326; the general readiness to propose constitutional amendments, 328; the plan of forming a President's party, 330, 344; the public mind clearly made up on questions of policy, 330; Congress slow in deciding on measures of reconstruction, 331; the application of common sense, not of fine-spun theories, needed, 332; the duty of Congress, 335; the danger of magnifying the President's office, 336; New England demands that America shall be American, 337, 341; supposed speech of President Johnson to a Southern delegation, 340; sectionalism to be put aside, 340, 344; the attitude of the American people toward the South, 341; the South not to be admitted to a share in the government till they have given evidence of loyalty, 344; the Philadelphia Convention, 349; its central principle the power of the President, 355; its constituents, 355; the President's tour and speeches, 355, 363; its ostensible object discreditable, 357; Mr. Seward's part in it, 359; the President's tour a national scandal and a wrong done to democracy, 363; the crowds that have followed him no index of popularity, 363; the present status of the seceding states, 365; the question of reconstruction, 368; a Union in fact, not merely in form, to be secured, 368; the President's threat to use force against the Congress, 369; Seward's arguments on the status of the Southern States, 370; negro suffrage demanded by the Radical party, 371; immediate suffrage not necessary, 372; the freedom of the parts must not endanger the safety of the whole, 373; absence of revengeful feeling toward the South, 375; the South to be treated kindly, but with firmness, 376; the possibility of future war to be averted, 377, 386, 397; our duty toward the negro, 384, 392, 395; the Americanization of America the stake at issue, 382; the financial outlook, 383; the hesitation of Congress, 384, 392; a bold policy founded on principle advocated, 385; the position of the Republican party, 387; the Rebel States not to be taken back on trust, 389; the terms imposed not harsh, 393; suffrage to be within the reach of all alike, but its conditions not interfered with, 394; the attitude of Congress toward the Executive, 397; faithfulness to the American ideal demanded, 398.

in 1887: the President's message on the tariff, 7, 223; its effect on political parties, 226; the questions of the War superseded by others of present importance, 227.

in 1888: the Republican appeal to

the passions of the Civil War, 7, 257; the condition of civil service reform, 261; the effects of the protective system, 263; the Treasury surplus, 218.

Border States: Southern emissaries early at work in, 6, 85; undertake to maintain a neutrality, 95; the conspirators encouraged by Lincoln's inaugural, 100; their decision more important to themselves than to the North, 101; the mistake in trying to conciliate them, 102, 108; confusion of ideas in, as to rights and duties, 106.

Constitution: loyalty to, asserted by all parties, 6, 29; slaves not recognized as property by, 35; to be bent back to its original rectitude, 44; to be construed in favor of freedom, 46; acknowledges no unqualified right of property, 49; the doctrine of secession in the light of, 67, 83; discussions of, at the outbreak of the Rebellion, 124; no perpetual balance of power between free and slave states contemplated, 175; not an anti-slavery document, 178; the question of state rights, 179; idle discussions with regard to, 338; the doctrine of a strict or pettifogging interpretation, 366; the Virginia school of interpretation, 367; the men of the constitutional convention, 7, 251; the idea that the machine will work of itself, 252; Dante's system compared to, 5, 42.

Government. See American politics.

Northern States: degrading effect of slavery upon, 6, 28; their rights and institutions to be defended as well as those of the South, 38; increase of population, wealth, and intelligence in, 51; their courage and persistence underestimated by the South, 88; the dirt-eaters of the first months of the war, 98; Pollard's picture of the conditions of life in, 164; their uniform concessions to the slave power, 175, 177; the habit of concession the true cause of the war, 178; their growing determination to resist aggressions, 250; the war entered upon with thoughtless good humor, 309; the theory of the "erring brother" persisted in, 311; the strengthening of purpose and character during the war, 312; absence of revengeful feeling toward the South, 375.

Southern States and Southerners: their concessions in slavery matters, 6, 12; rights in slave property not infringed, 35; ill effect of slavery upon their prosperity, 40; unequal distribution of wealth in, 41; the danger of their condition, 41; boastfulness and loquacity of, 62; their consequent hallucinations, 63; their quarrel not with a party, but with the principles of democracy, 71; the financial difficulties of secession, 73; their misconceptions with regard to the North, 75, 167; the instability of a confederacy which should allow secession, 75; the abolition of state lines proposed, 75; gain time by discussions of compromise, 95; denounce as coercion the exercise of authority by the government, 95; counted on the self-interest of England and the supineness of the North, 96; their sham government and secret proceedings, 98; their open stealing from the general government, 98; conscious of the weakness of their cause, 111; their constitutions intensely democratic, 165; probably only intended a *coup d'état*, and not secession, 166, 195, 249; their social and intellectual supe-

riority in Washington, 167; Greeley on their virtues, 171; expected by the framers of the Constitution to decline in power, 175; their gradually increasing encroachments, 174, 177; their confidence in Northern pusillanimity the cause of the war, 178; the people educated in the belief that secession is their right, 181; the high qualities shown by them in the war, 182; their ideas of the North fundamentally modified, 183; not hopelessly alienated from the North, 183; their condition desperate in 1864, 195; the leaders not afraid of abolitionism, 249; the public spirit called out by the war, 260; the question of their status on returning to the Union, 266; the change in public opinion produced by the war, 269; the proposal to arm the slaves, 269; the South thereby restored to the old position taken by her greatest men, 270; the plan futile as a war measure, 271; shows that the mass of the people are opposed to continuance of war, 271; the spread of Northern ideas, 271; allowances to be made for the evil influence of slavery, 273; the main elements of regeneration to be sought in the South, 272; the effect of slavery on the character of the ruling class, 275, 310; their advantages in war proportionate to their disadvantages in peace, 276; any general confiscation of rebel property unwise, 277; the people must be made landholders, 278; retribution to come upon the rebel leaders from their own sense of folly and sin, 278; the security and extension of slavery the motive for secession, 305, 307; secession expected to be peaceful, 305; enter upon the war in ignorant self-confidence, 309; lose control of their temper, 309; their ferocity in the prosecution of the war, 310; their standards and opinions unchanged by the war, 315; cling to the fragments of their old system, 317; their constitutional position during the war, 338; the attitude of the American people toward, in 1866, 341; their prejudices to be overcome, 345; position in the Philadelphia Convention of 1866, 353; status of the seceding states after the war, 365; to be treated with firmness and decision, 376; have learned nothing from the war, 376; to be made to understand something of American ideas, 377; character of their prosperity and civilization before the war, 378; the South to be made to govern itself, 381; necessarily prejudiced in dealing with the freedmen, 389; the terms of admission not harsh, 393; the system of privileged classes to be discontinued, 394; what the term "the South" should mean to us, 395; the memory of their dead justly cherished, 396; the protection and education of both black and white to be provided for, 397; growth of equality in spite of slavery, 7, 248. *See also*, Reconstruction; Slavery.

Territories: their fate to be decided by the election of 1860, 6, 47; the presence of slavery incompatible with the settlement of free whites, 48, 178; laws demanded to protect Southern property in, 49; the North demands freedom for, 51.

The West, political equality in, 7, 249.

Universal suffrage. *See* Suffrage, universal.

Universe, relative importance of a single life to the, 8, 72.
University defined, 7, 192; its highest office to distribute the Bread of Life, 192.
Universities of Europe, their antiquity, 7, 173.
University towns, 1, 15; preserve certain humors of character, 55.
Unnaturalness, 2, 147.
Upham, C. W., his *Salem Witchcraft*, 3, 200, 208.
Use detracts from beauty, 1, 238.
Utah, the case of her secession supposed, 6, 67.

Vaccination introduced by Dr. Waterhouse, 1, 6.
Vagrancy, the temptation to, 1, 299.
Valera, Juan, on *Don Quixote*, 7, 149.
Valet de chambre, view of great men, 4, 201.
Vallandigham, Mr., 6, 374; at the Philadelphia Convention, 353.
Vampires, 4, 230.
Vanity, 4, 174.
Variety of men, to be found always at home, 1, 7.
Vassalls, of Cambridge, 1, 18.
Vaughan, Henry, 2, 430 n; on the rainbow, 1, 295.
Velino, falls of the, 1, 154.
Venetian art, its spirit in Washington Allston's work, 1, 41.
Venetian painting, Spenser's style compared to, 4, 291.
Venice, 1, 107; the domes of St. Mark's, 242; her mercantile achievements, 1, 308.
Ventadour, Bernard de, 2, 197; a passage of Dante traced to, 351.
Ventoux, Mont, 1, 341.
Venus of Melos, 3, 261.
Vere de Vere, 1, 312.
Véricour, on Dante a member of the apothecaries' guild, 5, 15.
Vernon, Lord, 5, 129 n.
Verona, Dante at, 5, 22, 24.
Veronese, Paul, a stanza of Spenser's compared to, 4, 291 n.
Versailles, 1, 224.
Verse. *See* Blank verse; Couplets; English prosody; Poetry.
Versification, the hop-skip-and-jump theory, 2, 251. *See also*, English prosody.
Vespers heard in St. Peter's, Rome, 1, 236.
Vesuvius, 1, 9; to Naples what St. Peter's is to Rome, 180.
Vetturini, Italian, bargaining with, 1, 174.
Vice, personal element in the hatred of, 4, 177.
Victoria, Queen, her sympathy on occasion of President Garfield's death, 7, 43, 44, 56.
Victory, the love of, 7, 258.
View, from Olevano, 1, 205; enjoyed while eating, 206; from Subiaco, 215.
Viginere, Blaise, *Des Chiffres*, 4, 66.
Vigneul-Marvilliana on literary borrowing, 3, 57 n.
Viking fibre in boys' hearts, 1, 32.
Vikings, their later representatives, 2, 23.
Village life, Cambridge an example of, 1, 16.
Village wit, 1, 20.
Villages, in Northern Maine, 1, 80; American, described, 218.
Villani, Filippo, 5, 31.
Villani, Giovanni, on Brunetto Latini, 5, 9; sketch of Dante, 26.
Villiers, George, *Rehearsal*, Dryden on, 3, 94.
Virgil, 2, 57, 199; 7, 276; in the Middle Ages, 2, 195; 5, 122; Dryden on, 3, 32, 99; Dante on, 5, 94 n.
Æneid, translation by Gawain Douglas, 4, 228; — *Moretum*, 2, 173; a peasant kindling his fire, 1, 371, 372.

Virginia, compared with Massachusetts in its early institutions, 4, 18; her position cowardly and selfish in 1861, 6, 95; honored the peculation of a cabinet officer, 99; joins the Confederacy, 106; on the necessity of coercion in 1787, 180; life of the older families of, 379; devotion and endurance of the people, 396.

Virginia Convention of 1831, the discussion of slavery not feared by its members, 6, 6.

Virtue, in the deed and in the will, not to be separated, 4, 192; the fugitive and cloistered kind, 192; Dante on the delights of, 5, 65 n; power of the examples of, in history, 6, 160.

Virtue sowing, Webster's lines on, 2, 312.

Vischer's *Æsthetik*, 4, 93.

Vividness of expression, 3, 249; 5, 262; Carlyle unexcelled in, 2, 80.

Voice, powerful, its use, 6, 352.

Volcanic disturbances in early times, 1, 168.

Volcanoes, sweeping outline of, 1, 166; the clouds over, compared to Rousseau's writings, 4, 208.

Volition, obscure action of, 3, 203.

Voltaire, the Lucian of the 18th century, 2, 76; Carlyle's account of, in his *Friedrich*, 81; his fame, 412; makes Difficulty a tenth Muse, 415; judged by power of execution, 454; Lessing's relations with, 4, 119; the debt of free thought to, 209; our debt to, 8, 15; did not practice his own maxim, 74; shocked by Milton, 132; *also*, 4, 178; 5, 53.

compared with Pope, 2, 454; with Dryden, 3, 99.

on the superfluous, 1, 239; on Rousseau, 2, 150; on Pope, 413; on French poetry of the 18th century, 414; on Addison's *Cato*, 425; on English tragedy, 425; on Shakespeare, 426; 3, 285, 291; on Corneille, 3, 56; on rhyme in French poetry, 74; on Racine's *Bérénice*, 77; on Dryden's *All for Love*, 80 n; on his *Alexander's Feast*, 106 n; on Hamlet, 311; on his *Discours sur l'Inégalité*, 4, 107; on the date of Dante's birth, 5, 8; on political parties in Florence, 12; on Can Grande della Scala, 22; on Dante, 32, 56; on petty considerations, 6, 240.

Voss, Goethe learned to write hexameters from, 3, 266; his *Luise*, 266.

Voting, Prof. P.'s method, 1, 61.

Voyage, Percival's poetry compared to an aimless voyage, 2, 104; the speculations of men likened to, 3, 182.

Voyage of life, our vessel often unsuited for its dangers, 1, 107.

Voyages, books of, 7, 113.

Vulcan, traditions of, transferred to the Devil, 3, 154.

Vulgar, its original meaning, 3, 223.

Vulgar taste in literature, 2, 257.

Vulgarity, the Americans charged with, 1, 312; an eighth deadly sin, 312.

Vulgarity and simplicity distinguished, 4, 234.

Vulgarity of phrase in Dryden, 3, 21.

W. = Dr. Waterhouse.

W., M. T. = W. M. Thackeray.

W., Judge = Judge Warren.

Wace, his treatment of final and medial *e*, 2, 245.

Wade, General, 2, 293.

Wages, protection has no effect on, 7, 264.

Wagons, white-topped, bringing country wares to Boston, 1, 34.

Walburger, his *De Lamiis* quoted at length, 3, 156–159; on the

bodily transportation of witches, 161, 162; discusses the propriety of lying to a witch, 190.
Wales, Prince of, his motto, 3, 230 n.
Walker, James, President of Harvard University, on President Quincy, 2, 43; *also*, 7, 192.
Walker, W. S., on Shakespearian versification, 5, 301 n.
Walking, the Edelmann Storg not fond of, 1, 155; on a winter morning, 367; in a winter night, 373; in the morning air, 2, 183; a miraculous performance, 8, 149.
Wallachian legend of Bakála, 7, 103.
Walled town, its sense of completeness, 1, 76.
Waller, verses to Cromwell and to Charles II., 3, 26; his servility to Charles, 7; Dryden on, 70; his inferiority, 72; his *Improvement of the Maid's Tragedy*, 2, 422, 431; on care in writing, 422; on rhyme necessary in tragedy, 431; *also*, 3, 58 n, 224.
Walpole, Horace, his letters, 2, 464; foresaw the French Revolution, 4, 208; his quarrel with Gray, 8, 18, 19; *also*, 3, 98; 7, 281.
Walrave, General, 2, 95.
Waltham, Mr. Lyman's place at, 2, 28.
Walton, Henry, of London, 8, 77.
Walton, 8, 71–112; his life a bypath, 74; not an idle man, 75; his books masterpieces, 75; his birth and education, 75, 76; his literary friends, 75; ignorant of Latin, 76; in London, 77, 80, 89; a writer of verse, 77–79; his cultivation of simplicity, 79, 80, 87; twice married, 80, 81; his friendship with Donne, 81; his children, 81, 99; his occupation, 82; a dutiful citizen, 83; his first appearance as an author, 79, 83; his elegy on Donne, 79, 83, 85; not a rhythmist, 85; his lyrics clubfooted, 85; his memory, 92, 93; his genius for rambling, 93; his old age spent in Winchester, 94; incapable of envy, 95; knew nearly the whole Episcopal bench of his day, 97; his habitual recognition of obligation to God, 100; his will, 104, 105; his death, 105; on landlords, 105; personal traits, 106; the innocency of his way of writing, 109; his credulity, 110; his love of Nature, 110; his literary originality, 111; his style, 3, 42; *also*, 1, 259.
Complete Angler, 8, 71 n, 81, 90, 91, 96, 99, 107; Life of Donne, 78, 87, 88; Life of Herbert, 79, 88, 99; Life of Hooker, 97 n, 99; Life of Sanderson, 96, 100; *Reliquiae Wottonianae*, 91; *The Angler's Wish*, 81; *Thealma and Clearchus*, 101–104.
War, source of good fortune in, 2, 95; general sympathy with failure in, 6, 115; national pride of success in, 116; success the only argument for the soldier, 120; exacts the entire devotion of its servants, 125; the power of improvising a campaign, 132; the place of caution, 138; the quality of a great general, 140.
Warburton, his defence of Pope, 2, 450, 453.
Ward, J. H., *Life and Letters of J. G. Percival*, 2, 103–127.
Warner, William, 3, 275; 5, 280; his *Albion's England*, 4, 236.
Warren, Judge, anecdote of, 1, 53.
Warton, Joseph, his classification of poets, 2, 408; on Pope, 467; on Spenser's stanza, 4, 294; *also*, 4, 162 n.
Warton, Thomas, Hazlitt's remarks on, 2, 365; his *History of English Poetry*, 355; *also*, 4, 162 n.
Warwickshire, 1, 8.
Washington, George, in Cambridge,

1, 17; Josiah Quincy's description of, 2, 27; the lesson of his life applied to literature, 7, 273.
Washington corps. See Harvard Washington corps, 1, 54.
Washington's Life-Guard, its survivors, 1, 48.
Washington City, its lack of influence in the country, 2, 9; importance of protecting it from capture by the rebels, 6, 135.
Wasting time, 1, 336.
Water, Uncle Zeb's opinions on, 1, 98, 101; seen between snowdrifts, 363.
Water-coolers, wet legs compared to, 1, 214.
Water-fall, at Tivoli, attempt at a description of, 1, 153.
Waterhouse, Dr. Benjamin, of Cambridge, reminiscences of, 1, 61; his claim to having introduced vaccination, 63.
Water-ice, sentiment compared to, 4, 196.
Watering-place, modern art compared to, 2, 185.
Water-power, genius of President Kirkland compared to, 1, 49.
Waterton's alligator, 1, 165.
Waterville, Maine, described, 1, 75; its college, 77.
Watts, Dr., 5, 174; on the agreement of birds, 1, 273.
Wax figures, 5, 263.
Wayland the smith, traditions of, transferred to the Devil, 3, 154.
Wealth, its value in the development of civilization, 7, 24; its office in society, 36. *See also*, Riches.
Weather, as a topic of conversation, 1, 92; the Chief Mate's indifference to, 139; advantages to be obtained by the regulated observation of, 265; ill temper laid to, 7, 10; the old woman's remark on, to Southey, 102, 103.
Weather prophecies by animals, 1, 266.
Weathercocks, the pleasures of watching, 1, 265.
Webster, Daniel, compared with Fox, 2, 7; seen in company with President Tyler, 6, 363.
Webster, John, writer on witchcraft, story of a merman bishop, 1, 132; on witchcraft, 4, 14.
Webster, John, dramatist, 8, 228–252; his gratuitous miscellaneousness of plot, 233; the special weakness of his plays, 235; his sense of humor, 244; abounds in metaphysical apothegms, 244; compared with Chapman, 244; his simple pathos, 248; suggestive of Victor Hugo, 252; his genius characterized, 2, 306; compared with his contemporaries, 307; his imagination untamed, 310; lack of any large conception of nature, 310; examples of poetic phrases, 311; quaintness and terseness, 311; reminiscences of Shakespeare in his plays, 313; Hazlitt's edition, 313; examples of blunders, 314; all the plays not by the same person, 318; *also*, 309; 4, 160.
Appius and Virginia, 8, 245; *Duchess of Malfi*, 245, 246, 252; *The Devil's Law Case*, his best play, 2, 309; analyzed, 8, 233, 235–245; *The White Devil*, analyzed, 246–252.
Wegele on Dante in Paris, 5, 123 n.
Weimar, 7, 208.
Weimar, Grand Duke of, 4, 99.
Wellington, 2, 95; compared with Wordsworth, 5, 197 n.
Welsh pride of ancestry, 4, 24.
Werner, 3, 289.
Werwolves, origin of the belief in, 3, 168; the evidence of the existence of, 171.
Wesley, his reform of the church compared with Wordsworth's reform of poetry, 3, 6.

West Indies, Cromwell's plans with regard to, 4, 39.
Westminster Abbey, 7, 82.
Whales, 1, 122, 123.
Whigs, Wordsworth on, 5, 188.
Whimsey, the nucleus of a sect, 8, 115.
Whipping. *See* Flogging.
Whippoorwill, 1, 285.
Whist in winter, 1, 356.
White, Gilbert, his weakness for the thermometer and the weather-cock, 1, 263, 264; unconcerned seclusion of, 8, 12; his *Natural History of Selborne*, its charm, 1, 259; its absolute leisure, 260; its inadvertent humor, 261; the refreshment it brings, 262; compared with Thoreau's journals, 2, 153; immortality of, 8, 107.
White, Richard Grant, on the authorship of *Henry VI.* 2d part, 3, 275 n.
White Hills, 1, 269.
White-washer Newman in Cambridge, 1, 21.
Whitfield controversy in New England, 7, 183.
Whittier on winter, 1, 355.
Wieland, 4, 119, 155; his translation of Shakespeare, 158.
Wierus, on the Faust legend, 3, 162 n; refutes the story that Luther was the son of a demon, 172 n; his refutation of the facts on which witchcraft prosecutions were commonly based, 193; evidently means more than he says, 193; on witchcraft, 4, 14.
Wigs, Cibber on the fashion, 3, 76.
Wild, Jonathan, his father's opinion of travel, 1, 144; impartiality of his ancestor, 301.
Wild huntsman, 3, 167.
Wilderness, Châteaubriand's description of, 1, 282.
Wilhelmina, character of her affection for her brother Friedrich, 2, 93.
Wilkins, Bishop, 1, 209.
Will, confounded by Carlyle with wilfulness, 2, 71; its place in life shown in *Hamlet*, 3, 317.
Willard, Prof. Sidney, 8, 306 n.
Willard's punch, 1, 54.
William and the Werwolf cited, 2, 364.
Williams, Roger, his character, 4, 28; letter to Winthrop on Hugh Peters, 34; references in his letters to English affairs, 36; opinion of the Indians, 80; refuses to sell the Indians coats and breeches, 80; prophesies the decline of Puritan austerity, 84; in doubt, 8, 116; *also*, 4, 51.
Willow-herb as a substitute for heather, 1, 84.
Willson, Forceythe, *The Old Sergeant*, 6, 304 n.
Wilson, Billy, 6, 156.
Winckelmann on Italy, 1, 151.
Wind, observation of, an innocent and healthful employment, 1, 265; its tricks on the snow, 360.
Wine, Aleatico, 1, 206; effect on an Italian guide at Olevano, 207.
Wine-shops in Genezzano, 1, 202.
Winship, Dr., his dumb-bells, 1, 143.
Winter, A Good Word for, 1, 335–375; compared to old age or death, 338; compared with the other seasons, 338; its discomforts, 343; opinions of the poets, 345; its gloom in cloudy northern climates, 348; Cowper the first to recognize its amiability, 349; indoor pleasures in winter, 355; a walk in a snowstorm, 356; the preludings of winter, 358; the morning after a snow-storm, 359; the wind's action on the snow, 360; footprints of animals on it, 360; beauties of the quietly falling, damp snow, 362; the ice-coated trees, 363; snow forts and snow statuary,

365; the colors of snow-fields, 367; the winter morning walk, 367; the city in winter, 368; snow-crusts, 368; the Frost's exquisite handiwork, 370; trees and smoke seen in winter, 370; the birds, 372; a walk at nightfall, 373; the moon, 374; the "whoop" of the freezing lake, 375; in New England, 1, 127; *also*, 4, 21.

Winthrop, Fitz-John, letters describing the necessities of a "royal" Indian, 4, 79.

Winthrop, Governor John, the elder, compared to Romulus, 4, 17; his character, 27; steady courage of character, 35; *also*, 2, 45; 7, 177.

Winthrop, John, Jr., Peter's advice to, 4, 35; Edward Howes's correspondence with, on alchemy and mysticism, 54; Jonathan Brewster's correspondence with, on alchemy, 60; Sir Kenelm Digby sends him curious prescriptions, 65; Coddington's tiresome correspondence with, 74; owned a negro, 81; on two Indians in Harvard College, 7, 179.

Winthrop, R. C., on Josiah Quincy, 2, 44.

Winthrop, Samuel, 4, 75.

Winthrop, Stephen, 4, 35; Roger Williams on, 34.

Winthrop Papers, 4, 26; absence of sentiment in, 83.

Wisdom, her quiet booth unheeded, 1, 46; Dante on the love of, 5, 11; Dante on, 75, 78, 109; generally outstays Error, 8, 160.

Wisdom and learning, Dante distinguishes between, 5, 97.

Wisdom of Solomon, Dante familiar with, 5, 111 n; quoted, 111 n, 115 n, 118 n.

Wise, Governor, 6, 50.

Wistar, Dr., 1, 157.

Wit, of Dryden and Pope compared, 3, 24; Pope's line on, criticised, 36.

Witchcraft, 3, 115–211; modern superstition compared with ancient, 120; imagination the great mythologizer, 121; origin of a belief in the supernatural, 123; survival of the heathen gods in Christian superstitions, 131; belief in the power of Satan, 131; the idea of a compact with him developed under Christianity, 133; the earliest legend of this kind, 134; instances of the contract, 136; influence of feudal allegiance upon its details, 139; various confessions of witches quoted, 139–153; the particulars of these confessions summed up, 153; vestiges of paganism in, 154, 160 n; Satan's kingdom the reverse of the Divine, 156; English act against witchcraft, 160; witches' gatherings and their journeys through the air considered, 160; connection with earlier legends, 165; degeneration of myth into legend and superstition, 168; werwolves and other instances of transformation into animals, 168; concubinage of witches with their familiars, 171, 184; stories of the Devil's appearing on various occasions, 175; grounds of the belief in witchcraft, 179; the natural attractiveness of demoniac possession, 180; the nervous element in it, 181; character of the philosophy and science of the day, 183; the knowledge of the present time not absolute truth, 182; causes of the cruelty displayed, 184; the belief in witchcraft flourishes in early New England, 186; 4, 14; systematic hunting out of witches in England, 3, 189; character of the evidence and of the trials, 189; the danger of scepticism and the first

doubters, 192, 193; beneficent effect of Wierus's work, 194; Reginald Scot's work, 195; the belief continues in spite of scepticism, 197; the Salem witchcraft, 200–208 (see particulars under Salem); cases of deception exposed, 204, 206, 207; the lesson to be drawn, 208; a higher mode of belief the best exorciser of superstition, 210; also, 4, 14.
special cases described, Theophilus (6th century), 3, 134; Sylvester II., 136; Grandier at Loudun (1634), 137, 175, 181; Thomas Browne (1644), 137n; Maréchal de Luxembourg (1695), 138; Abel de la Rue (1584), 139, 172; Elizabeth Styles (1664), 144; Alice Duke, 146, 174; Anne Bishop, 145; Christian Green, 146; Julian Cox, 146; Janet Douglas (1677), 147; Mrs. Campbell, 148; Mrs. Barton, 148; witches of Mohra, Sweden (1670), 148; Agnes Simpson, 159, 189; Chris. Monig, 172; cases under Hopkins, 173; a girl in Italy, 175 n; nuns of Loudun (1634), 181; Jeanne Harvillier, 191; Guillaume de Lure (1453), 192; cases in Tourelle and Beauvais (1610–12), 198; cases in Bordeaux (1718) and Scotland (1722), 200; a girl near Amiens (1816), 200; the Salem cases (1692), 200–208; Anne Putnam, 203; girls in Littleton (1720), 204; a reading parson, 205; Martha Brossier (1598), 206; case in Brightling, Sussex (1659), 207.
authors cited on the subject: Alciato, 3, 195; Aubrey, 162; St. Austin, 169; Baxter, 188, 205; Bekker, 197; Bodin, 116 n, 140, 143, 154, 161, 169, 170, 185, 190, 191, 192, 202, 206; Sir Thomas Browne, 199; Chaucer, 193; De Foe, 126; Sir K. Digby, 199; Garinet, 200; Glanvil, 117 n, 144, 162, 188; Grimm, 131, 154 n, 164, 166 n; Homer, 169; La Bruyère, 199; Lucian, 125 n, 166, 168; Lucretius, 125 n; Luther, 171, 177; Mather, 118 n; Maury, 119 n, 154, 200; Melancthon, 175 n; Montaigne, 199; Henry More, 144, 153, 173, 188; Perraud, 117 n; Peter of Abano, 193; Gaspar Peucerus, 170; Pliny the Younger, 127; Jacobus Savagius, 195; Schoolcraft, 171; Scot, 115 n, 195; Sinclair, 119 n; Trithemius, 175; Turell, 204; Tylor, 123; Upham, 115 n, 201; Walburger, 118 n, 159 n, 161, 162, 191; John Webster, 117 n; Wierus, 115 n, 157, 162 n, 193, 195.
Witches, use of salves and powders, 3, 142, 143, 145, 157, 160; their journeys through the air, 142, 145, 147, 149, 157, 165; their gatherings, 142, 144, 145, 149, 151, 154, 159; their contracts described, 144, 147, 151, 192; their familiars, 144, 146, 152, 155, 174; their prayers, 147, 148; their carrying off children, 148; their baptism, 151, 155, 159; their manner of milking, 152; their opening graves, 159; their night journeys, opinions of various authors on, 161, 166; use of broomsticks, and the like, 164; their powers according to popular belief, 179; the charge of sexual uncleanness with devils, 184; the wholesale destruction of, 185; tested by being thrown into the water, 190; Scot's charitable judgment of, 195.
Witches' Sabbath compared to the excavations in the Roman Forum, 1, 246.

Withdrawal from society, how far it should be carried, 2, 145.
Wither, George, his works reprinted in the "Library of Old Authors," 2, 278; faults of the editor, 286; inaccuracy of the editor's quotations, 288; Farr on the character of his language, 288; in Pope's *Dunciad*, 462; his influence seen in Milton's early poems, 5, 264.
Witte, Karl, on the date of the *Vita Nuova*, 5, 38; on Dante's *De Monarchia*, 39, 75 n; on the date of the *Divina Commedia*, 75; on Dante's amours, 86 n.
Wittenberg, 3, 295.
Woden, 3, 167, 174; horse sacred to, 155.
Woe, Rousseau's father's fondness for, 4, 191.
Wolfenbüttel, Lessing librarian at, 4, 142.
Wolfram von Eschenbach, 5, 49; his *Parzival*, 133.
Wolsey, Cardinal, founder of Christ Church, 7, 202.
Woman, in the Provençal poetry and in Dante, 2, 197; Pope's low ideal of, 459; Jeremy Taylor's description of an ideal, 459; Chapman's description of a virtuous wife, 460; Steele's compliment to his wife, 462; Spenser's lines to the Rosalind who had rejected him, 465; Dryden and Swift on her influence in refining language, 3, 44; her friendship a safeguard, her homage fatal, 4, 191; the *Divina Commedia* an apotheosis of woman, 5, 50. *See also*, Italian women.
Woman taken in adultery, Petrarch imagined at, 4, 199.
Woman's last love, Webster's lines on, 1, 312.
Wonder, the faculty of, not extinct, 3, 210.
Wonders, told by the elder navigators, 1, 133; diminish with every recent traveller, 134.
Wongen, night spent in one, 1, 111.
Wood, Antony à, 8, 89.
Wood, Fernando, 6, 193.
Woodmen, absence of extravagance of expression, 1, 106; fineness of character attained by, 113; hospitality of, 113; their satisfactions, 3, 365. *See also*, Loggers; Lumbermen.
Woods in winter, Shakespeare on, 4, 278.
Worcester's Geography, 1, 135.
Words and phrases: —
again-bite, 3, 228.
again-rising, 3, 228.
ambassadors, 3, 44 n.
ancient, 2, 317.
arra, 1, 209.
astire, 2, 363.
ave, 2, 316.
battalions, 3, 44 n.
bays, 2, 342.
bead = offer, 2, 381.
bearth, 5, 284.
bid, 2, 329.
birch = canoe, 1, 97.
blasphémous, 5, 304.
bonny, 2, 244 n.
borrow = pledge, 2, 380.
bravo, 1, 315.
buxom, 3, 229.
can, in old English, 2, 367.
canny, 2, 94.
chaise debased into *shay*, 2, 6.
chapëlain, 2, 244 n.
circumvallation, 3, 44 n.
citizen, as a title, 1, 162.
columbine, 2, 226 n.
comepleasants, or St. Elmo's fires, 1, 142.
commandëment, 2, 244 n.
communication, 3, 44 n.
corps, 5, 282.
creatures, 4, 81.
death a sense, exclamation, 2, 303.
descant, 2, 316.

deuse, 3, 154.
Dichtung, its comprehensive meaning, 7, 143.
driving the river, 1, 109.
elves, 5, 16.
'em for *them*, 3, 44 n.
evicke = chamois, 2, 331.
excellency, 1, 161.
fearful, New England pronunciation of, 4, 81.
feuter = lance-rest, 2, 364.
flunkies, 1, 208.
flute = tall glass, 2, 344.
for to, 3, 43 n.
fry = burn, 2, 346.
fulmined, 3, 231.
gallowses, 1, 33.
genteel, 2, 421
goblins, 5, 16.
gramary = enchantment, 3, 136.
grimoire, 3, 136.
hair, 2, 347.
head, etymology of, 3, 229 n.
hearse, 5, 297 n.
hele, 2, 369.
help = servants, 4, 52; 7, 250.
heróës, 5, 281.
highth, 5, 284.
horse, 5, 282 n.
houmout = hochmuth, 3, 230 n.
income, 2, 333.
inhabitant, 2, 330.
inwit, 3, 228.
its, 5, 295.
jumping-off place, 3, 60.
kindly, 7, 144.
knave, 3, 230 n.
laid out, 4, 66.
lede = people, 2, 379.
lengthy, 2, 228.
lordship, 1, 160.
lucern, from *leucerve*, 2, 333.
magnetism, 3, 105.
make it nice = play the fool, 2, 383.
mariner and sailor, 3, 229.
mob, 3, 44 n.
naumachia, 1, 162.
navvie, 3, 230 n.
neat, 2, 339.
nice, connected with Fr. *niais*, 2, 383.
noise, 5, 282.
old Harry, 3, 154.
old Nick, 3, 155.
old Scratch, 3, 154.
operations, 3, 44 n.
osyll = blackbird, 2, 362.
out of judgments, 2, 330.
out-ray, from *oultréer*, 2, 331.
pallisadoes, 3, 44 n.
parle, 5, 297 n.
pench, 2, 315.
point-device, Hazlitt on, 2, 376.
preliminaries, 3, 44 n.
prime, 2, 375.
proff = proof, 2, 383.
pult, 5, 282 n.
quarrels, 2, 343.
quick, 3, 230 n.
rave, 2, 345.
recreant, 5, 297 n.
reliable, 2, 393.
scoff away, X.'s story of the Dutch captain, 1, 143.
sentre, 2, 364.
Serapeion, 1, 162.
serenate, 5, 297 n.
servant, use of the word in early New England, 4, 51.
shay, 5, 282 n.
sicker = sure, 2, 381.
so few, 3, 43 n.
so-so, 2, 345.
speculations, 3, 44 n; 5, 102.
spirit, 5, 303.
splits, 1, 112.
sterve, 2, 334.
strook, 5, 285 n.
surëty, 2, 244 n.
thing, defined, 1, 8.
't is, 3, 44 n.
treen broches = wooden spits, 2, 334.
troop-meal, 2, 333.
ure, from *en œuvre*, 2, 333.
vote-killing mandrake, 2, 304.
voutsafe, 5, 285.

way-goose, Hazlitt's blunder in regard to, 2, 385.
weltschmerz, 7, 145.
wicked, 3, 230 n.
wild, 2, 358.
wilfully = wishfully, 2, 332.
wis, 2, 316.
without = unless, 2, 378.
wrotherheyle, 2, 369.
wynke = shut, 2, 382.
words in *-sake* and *-side*, 5, 282.
words in *sh*, in Milton, 5, 287.
Wordsworth, Dorothy, influence on her brother, 5, 184; her brother's regard for her, 195 n; her *Journal*, 188 n.
Wordsworth, John, death at sea, 5, 211.
Wordsworth, William, 5, 173–242; the war of the critics over his claims as a poet, 173; the Wordsworthians a sect, 173; the elements of a sound judgment, 174; the limitations of his experience, 175, 241; considered himself a "dedicated spirit," 175; his birth and family, 177; childhood and early education, 178; effect of the simple life of Hawkshead on his character, 178, 185; his earliest poems, 180; 3, 4; his father's death, 5, 181; life at college, 181, 183; his reading, 181, 183; his character as a child, 182; relations with his sister, 184, 195 n; his visit to France, 185; its effect on his development, 185; his politics, 186, 187, 195; his faith in man and his destiny, 186; a defender of the Church establishment, 188; his first consciousness of the variety of nature, 189; early influenced by Goldsmith, Cowper, and Burns, 190; his sense of melody dull, 190, 235 n; a certain blunt realism, 191; his sensitive purity, 192 n; his power in descriptive poetry, 194; his poverty, 196; his doubts on choosing a profession, 197 n; life in Dorsetshire, 198; friendship with Coleridge, 198, 202, 235 n; removes to Allfoxden, 199; his confidence in himself, 201, 205, 208, 212, 229; his stay in Germany, 201; influenced but slightly by German literature, 203; life at Grasmere, 203, 209, 213; his theory of poetry as announced in the preface to *Lyrical Ballads*, 204; modified in later editions, 205; his choice of subjects, 207; his over-minute detail, 208, 225, 227; his commonplaces, 209, 225; friendship with Lamb, 209; marriage, 210; journey in Scotland, 210; friendship with Sir George Beaumont, 210; grief at his brother's death, 211; pillaged and scoffed at by the reviewers, 211; his children, 214; appointed Distributor of Stamps, 215; later life and publications, 216; the honors of his old age, 217; his life compared to that of an oak, 218; personal characteristics, 219; a partisan in his theories of poetry, 220; his theories interfere with the appreciation of his later poetry, 221; instances of artificiality in the later poems, 221 n; his determination to produce an epic, 223; his quality as a critic of poetry, 223; the splendors to be found in the midst of prosiness, 226; his deficiencies, 226; his particular excellence, 227; fond of the sonnet, 227; his appropriate instrument the pastoral reed, 228; a certain dulness of perception, 229; incapable of sustained inspiration, 230, 235; the high quality of his best verses, 231, 233; lack of form and proportion, 232, 237; slight con-

ception of other character than his own, 232, 240; the double personality in his poems, 234; his long-windedness, 236; defects of his narrative poetry, 237; his value to the world, 239; the grounds of his immortality, 242.

Wordsworth: address 10 May, 1884, 7, 121–137; earlier essays upon, 122; the Wordsworth Society's edition of his works, 123; the light shed upon the development and character of his mind, 123; upon his political opinions, 124; his views of society and the means of its regeneration change, 125; his attitude toward religion, 126, and the church, 128; his poems retain their freshness, 130; the variety and rare quality of the minds that he appeals to, 131; yet he remains insular, 131; his greatness lies in single passages, not in sustained power, 132; his quality and method as a teacher, 133; treatment of nature in his poems, 134; his lack of discrimination, 135; his use of the sonnet, 135; local in choice of subject and tone of thought, 135; the permanent qualities in his work, 136; his abiding charm for innocent and quiet minds, 137; his impatience when any one spoke of mountains, 1, 337; 2, 142; his wholesome fellowship with nature, 1, 342; 4, 212; his description of nature, 1, 353; his lines on old age applied to Quincy, 2, 44; his estimate of the value of public favor, 54; his work compared to a heap of gold-bearing quartz, 54; Carlyle a continuator of his moral teaching, 100; his influence traced on J. G. Percival, 109; his genius, 112; his debt to Gray, 411 n; ready to find merit in obscurity, 411 n; his relation to Pope, 436; his prefaces, 468 n; his reform of poetry compared with Wesley's reform of the church, 3, 5; the modification of his early opinions, 6; translation of Virgil, 6; Landor's remark to, on mingling prose with poetry, 59; view of religion, 107 n; his diction, 221; 5, 345; wanting in constructive imagination, 3, 254; Spenser's influence upon, 4, 320; the beginnings of his poems, 5, 294; his calm treatment of criticism, 331; *also*, 1, 342, 351, 371; 2, 85, 120, 134, 148, 158, 233, 235; 4, 234; 7, 196.

compared with Shelley, 2, 109; with Wellington, 5, 197 n; with Cowper, 225; with Goethe, 240; with Keats in character and manner of working, 330; with Keats and Byron, 342; with Dryden, 7, 137.

on winter, 1, 353; on midnight storms, 355; on the sounds of the freezing lake, 375; on Whigs and Chartists, 5, 188; on the infinite variety of nature, 189; on the owl, 193; on the province of a great poet, 202; on the destiny of his poems, 212 n; on biography of literary men, 216; on his own deficiencies as a critic, 224; on poetry as an art, 232; on books, 7, 97.

on Chatterton, 2, 411 n; on Burke, 3, 13; 5, 187; on Daniel, 4, 238 n; on Spenser's *Faery Queen*, 319; on Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, 319; on Goethe's *Wilhelm Meister*, 5, 203; on Scott, 224 n; on Coleridge's *Ancient Mariner*, 230 n; on a line of Shakespeare's, 235 n; on Gray, 8, 42–45.

Sir George Beaumont on his politics, 5, 188; Coleridge on, 195 n; Fox on, 204; Byron on, 211;

Lamb on, 214; Southey on, 214 n; De Quincey on, 219; Leigh Hunt on his eyes, 219; Miss Martineau on his conversation, 225 n; Crabb Robinson on, 225 n; Landor on, 226; Ellis Yarnall on, 234 n; Haydon on his lofty purpose, 323; Landor on, 8, 66.

Blind Highland Boy quoted, 5, 207; *The Borderers*, 198; rejected for the stage, 199; *Character of a Happy Warrior*, 3, 6 n; *Descriptive Sketches*, published in 1793, 5, 189; character, 191; changes in revision, 192; *Ecclesiastical Sonnets*, the ocean swell compared to, 1, 122; *Eclipse of the Sun* quoted, 5, 221 n; *Epistle to Sir G. Beaumont*, 3, 6 n; *Evening Walk*, published in 1793, 5, 189; character, 191; changes in revision, 192; *Excursion*, 216, 225, 228, 232, 238, 241; quoted, 221 n; its heaviness, 223; *Helen of Kirconnel* compared with the original ballad, 229 n; *Idiot Boy* quoted, 180 n; *Italian Itinerant* quoted, 221 n; *Laodamia*, 232; *Letter to a Friend of Burns*, 216; *Lines written at Tintern Abbey*, 2, 410; 5, 200 n, 202; *Lyrical Ballads*, the plan suggested, 198; published in 1798, 200; notices in the reviews, 200 n; its unpopularity, 201; the second volume published, 203; the preface to the second edition, 204; reprinted in Philadelphia, 203 n; *Memoirs by Rev. Dr. Wordsworth*, 212 n; *Ode to Duty*, 7, 129; *Ode on Immortality*, 1, 154; 2, 411 n; *Peter Bell*, 5, 217, 236, 237; *The Philanthropist* proposed, but not established, 196; *Prelude*, 64, 225; quoted, 175 n, 187, 224, 232 n; *Simon Lee* quoted, 208; *Thanksgiving Ode* quoted, 220 n; *The Thorn*, 203; *The Waggoner*, 237; *The White Doe*, 237.

Wordsworth Society, the president's duty, 7, 122; the society's edition of the poet's works, 123; usefulness of the society, 129.

Work, apotheosis of, in New England history, 4, 5.

World compared to a medal stamped with Joy and Care, 1, 65; a passenger on board the earth, 8, 137, 138.

World's Progress, The, 8, 137 n.

Worship, completeness of, in all its elements in the Roman Church, 1, 229.

Wortley Montagu, Lady Mary. *See* Montagu.

Wotton, Sir Henry, 8, 87; on Sidney, 3, 110 n.

Wren, Sir Christopher, and Michael Angelo, 1, 234.

Wright, Thomas, editor of Chaucer, 2, 243; Hazlitt's censures of, 365.

Wrong, antiquity gives it no claim, 6, 16.

Wyatt, 3, 53 n; 4, 231.

Wycherley, Pope's correspondence with, 2, 441.

Yancey, W. L., his threats of secession, 6, 50, 51.

Yankee. *See also*, American; New England.

Yankee humor, displayed in the Cornwallis, 1, 42; usually checked by the presence of Public Opinion, 42.

Yankees, popularity of Emerson, 2, 391.

Yarnall, Ellis, on Wordsworth, 5, 234 n.

Yeast, 5, 261.

Ygdrasil, the tree, 2, 131.

Yorkshire Tragedy, 4, 108.

Young, Dr. Alexander, his series of old English prose-writers, 2, 273.
Young, Edward, a grandiose image in his *Last Day* suggested by Dryden, 3, 38 n.
Young ladies' letters, 2, 60.
Youth, conductors for the natural electricity of, 1, 55; Francis Sales always young, 65; Mr. Emerson's perennial youth, 2, 395; *also*, 1, 326; 7, 169.

Zeb, Uncle. *See* Uncle Zeb.
Zisca, 4, 10.
Zodiac, Prof. P.'s succession of hats compared to, 1, 61.
Zürich, its eight hundred authors in 18th century, 4, 154.

END OF LOWELL'S PROSE WORKS

The Riverside Press
Electrotyped and printed by H. O. Houghton & Co.
Cambridge, Mass, U. S. A.

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 10030 657 8